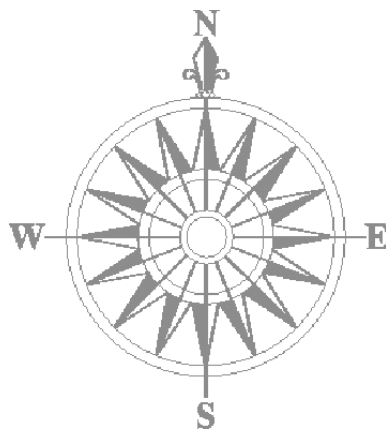


SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS PART 2

By Jill Kemp

Edited by Dion Tilley and Silvana WiRepa
ŌPŌTIKI



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2

Kia Ora.

To all the Whanau of Matarena
of Ōpōtiki descent from the hapu of Whanau-a-Muriwai.
Ko Muriwai te Tipuna (ancestor)
Ko Opape te Marae (meeting house)
Ko **Ngai Tamahaua** te Hapu (family group)
Ko Te Whakatohea Te iwi (tribe)
Ko Mataatua te waka (canoe)

You may ask why a Pakeha grandmother would spend more than 22 years researching and recording events around the lives of the descendants of Matarena and take such an interest in her ancestors? Somehow, an irreplaceable photograph of my son in law's half Maori great, great Grandmother, "a beautiful Maori Princess with a moko," was reputedly lost at school. It seemed sad that the family would never know who she was, or what she looked like and important that my grand children and great grand children, knew about their Maori heritage. I made inquiries amongst his elderly aunts and an epic journey began! This is my family's heritage one the whole whanau (and historians) can share. My job was simply to join the threads of oral history and other material together, as accurately as possible. The loss of Ngāhiraka's photo was a blessing after all!

Thanks to my husband Bob for undertaking three days of nonstop photocopying of hundreds of pages of H.M.S. Buffalo Ship's Logs at Mercury Bay Museum, which incidentally took me 8 years to transcribe, while trying to find a link between Ngāhiraka's father, Commander James Wood and Matarena; the writing was extremely difficult to decipher. Thank you for the miles you travelled looking for elusive ancestors and enduring the sleepless nights they gave me; and for patiently attending to myriads of computer glitches. Much credit goes to Avery Tilley, Silvana WiRepa, and Dion Tilley for their editing skills!

Touching moments for me, personally, were seeing my first photo of Ngāhiraka in a precious heirloom locket belonging to Betty Schroder and learning her name; visiting the cave of Muriwai; finding the negative of Ngāhiraka's photo in Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne where it had been for more than 130 years; owning Alexander Kennedy's and Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson's history books; standing on Kennedy's Bay in the footsteps of ancients and ancestors; standing on Opape beach foreshore and visiting the Urupā at Waiaua with Manny Mokomoko; visiting Ngāhiraka's grave, a woman who had become so much part of my own life and having a commendation from Dr. Ranganui Walker, the eminent Maori historian wrote to me, "a nice piece of work."

Sincere thanks to all who have contributed precious photographs and shared information about their ancestors. The family owe a huge debt of gratitude to the years of painstaking research into family history, by Carmarita Hartog, John, George and Mary Hovell of Kennedy's Bay, Lyn Chappell, Bradley Walker, Esther Wilson, Kath Riri, Silvana WiRepa, Colin Wilson; the Sterndale-Bennet family, who have all generously shared their archives. Chris Metcalfe, Verity Baylis and Sydney Wood and others for providing DNA samples. Thank you to Roger Morris for allowing me to include a copy of his ship painting; Don Armitage for his contribution to things nautical, Great Barrier and Raoul Islands and Dion Tilley for the Whakapapa and family tree charts and his editing skills. My sincere appreciation is extended to all those who helped, encouraged me, or contributed to this book: Bob Kemp, Tuiringa (Manny) Mokomoko, Heteraka Biddle, Bella Harris, Jon Tilley, Warwick Tilley, Mike and Samantha Barrington, Chris and Maree Barrington, Sue and Shane Brownlie, Lyn and Robert Stevenson, Paul and Jan Smith, Jim Peapell, Clive and Hazel Peapell, Leone Metcalfe, Hazel McDonald, June Smith, Olive Hartog, Ken and Dawn Read, Rosemary Orr, Robyn Morrisby, Jean Reeves, Kevin Learmonth, the Apanui whanau,

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2

Chris and Tami Metcalfe, Buster Hastie, Sid Wood, Jo Claude, Barry Smith, Debra Smith, Kotiro August, Wendy Webster, Wade Doak, Chippy Apanui, Tommy Apanui and Margaret Harris, for the Tui story, Chris and Tami Metcalfe, James Muir, Alistair M. Isadale, Lois Hannah, Liz Kohi for finding "the lost son of Matarena" (Thomas Henry McGregor) and to Leonie Leete Smith, Lynda Hale, Allan Prestidge, Jackie Biddle, Ian Squire, Hone Kaneri, Nelda Elder, the Fletcher Trust and the helpful staff at Auckland City Library, National Archives Auckland, Museum Library, Auckland and Alexander Turnbull Libraries, Whitianga Library, Mercury Bay Museum, Tauranga Library, Gisborne Library, Ōpōtiki Museum, Ōpōtiki Library, Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne, especially Dudley Meadows, Whakatane Council; the Royal British Navy and Archives department and Liz Koh for her hours of research into DNA links to trace the Scottish origins of John Kennedy of Kennedy's Bay - related to Sir John Kennedy, born 1446 in Cassillis Castle, Ayrshire, Scotland. From you all I have learnt so much and had many unforgettable experiences. I apologise for any omissions.

The most frustrating times for me were when the pages flipped out of sequence (more than 40 times over the years) as the manuscript outgrew the capability of my computer and I felt like throwing the whole project away, but I painstakingly corrected it, compressing the photographs and then managed to persuade my husband to purchase three more powerful computers, over the years, with much larger capacity! That is how important I felt this project to be! I honour the memory of many dear people who generously shared their knowledge and memories and have since passed. Their aroha and encouragement spurred me on.

Very special thanks to Dion Tilley for his gift and knowledge of Maori language and Whakapapa.

Ngāhiraka being the central figure in this book, she and her 3rd husband Joseph Bond Kennedy's names and relevant lineage are underlined at the beginning of each chapter for the benefit of my family. It may be helpful for others to underline their own ancestors for their respective family. The book begins with Ngāhiraka's Maori ancestry (Whakapapa) back 9 generations BEFORE Muriwai (female) in the Mataatua Canoe, arrived at Whakatane. There are more extensive and even earlier whakapapa in the last chapter. Included in this book are many other families who are related to Ngāhiraka's siblings, or who have married into this line and their children. What began as Ngāhiraka's story has become her mother, Matarena's descendants' story.

Much of this history relates to Kennedy's Bay, Coromandel, Ōpōtiki and Gisborne, Raoul Island, Hokianga, Cloudy Bay, early Auckland, England, Ireland, Scotland and France. It records power, position and wealth; pioneering ancestor's sea faring adventures and battles; exploration, shipwreck; love and loss; craftsmanship, hard work, integrity and ingenuity; hardship, endurance, tragedy, murder, great injustice and severe poverty; heroism, entrepreneurial endeavours, life, death, faith and love for family. It is a heritage of which descendants can be proud. In many instances the material could have been more condensed, but I chose to include it in full to preserve the names of many people, some long forgotten, or for people to draw their own conclusion on certain historic events and Court proceedings. I didn't want to put my spin on them. I apologise for the lack of references on each page. This book was only ever intended to be a history for my immediate family. Not being a professional, or academic, I simply did not know that such a protocol was preferable, but endeavoured to include them once it was brought to my attention. However, all references are recorded in the Bibliography at the back. I take no responsibility for errors resulting from information given to me, or that which I have read in other publications and recorded here. I have devoted more than 22 years to this project, in good faith.

Jill Kemp.
southvenus@xtra.co.nz

Previous additions are out of date because of new information.
This edition is the most accurate,
at this present time.
2023

I am grateful for the expertise of Dion Tilley
in collating Whakapapa, both Maori and European.

BE PROUD OF WHO YOU ARE!

Respectfully,
Jill Kemp
southvenus@xtra.co.nz



Jill Kemp
Courtesy of the Kemp family.

Explaining the results of DNA testing done to verify if
Commander James Wood R.N.
was the father of
Ngāhiraka.

Note DNA is measured in centiMorgans (cM for short).

In 2016, four purported descendants of Simon Starr (1687-1755) and Susannah Hoyle (1693-1763) took DNA tests to prove their lines. The DNA donors' tests showed strong overlaps on multiple chromosomes for the four donors. The strongest overlaps were on the X-chromosome where the three female donors matched the other three at five identical points. These overlaps ranged in size from 4.2 cM to 7 cM, with the average size being 5.1 cM. This verifies that all three women are descended from the same person.

Each of the four donors has a well documented family tree leading to Simon Starr and Susannah Hoyle.

One of the donors is Verity Baylis a direct descendant of Ngāhiraka Wood, daughter of Commander James Wood (b.1783) son of Captain Starr Wood (b. 1760).

With the following she shares:

53.2cM over 17 segments with 'Anon' Wood - direct descendant of Captain Starr Wood (b. 1760) and his second wife Elizabeth Travers (b. 1766/77).

46.1cM over 16 segments with Amanda Wood - direct descendant of Simon Starr (1687-1755) and Susannah Starr (1718-1795)

7.2 cM over 2 segments with Sidney Wood - direct descendant of William Wood (1718-1794) and Susannah Hoyle (1693-1763)

This DNA evidence strongly suggest that Ngāhiraka Wood is the daughter of Commander James Wood, son of Captain Starr Wood (1760) and Jane Nankivell, grandson of William Wood and Susannah (Hoyle) Starr (b. 1693-1763) and great grandson of Simon Starr (1687-1755) and Susannah Hoyle (1693-1763).

Courtesy of
Simone Tynan VCE Biology and ICT

Legacy

As you write upon the pages of life
Take care
The marks you leave upon the way
Will forever be imprinted there
You are here now
You'll soon be gone
But what you do does history make
Leave a legacy that carries on
For in our genes
Each ancestor has left
Some of themselves that makes us theirs
And the stars that shine in our night sky
Are just the same as when
They raised their eyes
To find the path
That led them South
To the left of Venus

Jill Kemp

On Saturday 27th May 2023,
Te Whakatōhea signed their
Deed of Settlement
exactly 183 years to the day
from when their rangatira
signed the Treaty of Waitangi, at Ōpōtiki.
MATARENA WAITANGI RANGIWHIUWHIU
told her children she had been present
on that occasion (on the 27th May, 1840).

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2

From **Havaiiki** during the 14th Century

Muriwai (female) is the Eponymous ancestor of the
WHAKATOHEA Tribe of Ōpōtiki.

(m) male

(f) female

***Ngāhiraka** (f) is a direct descendant of **Muriwai** (f)

The ancestral canoe to which the WHAKATOHEA Tribe relates is the
MATAATUA Canoe.

Your earliest known ancestors are more than 23 generations **before** the arrival of the
Mataatua Canoe. Recorded here are 9 generations BEFORE the canoe, but Dion Tilley
has recorded more generations in the last chapter:

Toi-kai-rakau

Rauru

Whatonga + Tara

Taha-titi

Rau-tapu

Rakei-ora

Tama-ki-te-ra

(f) Pae-rere-i-waho

+

Toi-Te-Huatahi = Te Kura i Monoa

Awanuiarangi

Awaroa

Awatamakiterangi

Parinuitera

Awa-morehurehu (Visited Havaiiki)

***Irekewa (Hikoroa) + Waiakewa/Wekanui** (f) (of **Havaiiki**)

Muriwai

Early traditions say that having migrated to Whakatane, **Irekewa** (Hikoroa) returned to Havaiiki and
married **Wekanui**. Their children: Toroa (m) **Muriwai** (f) Puhikaiariki (m) and half brother Taneatua. Toroa,
the Araki superior Chief of the **Mataatua** Canoe, with his other siblings migrated to Aotearoa, but more recent
thought is that they went north about four generations before returning to Whakatane on the Mataatua Canoe.

Whakatohea Tribe descends from **Muriwai**.

Ngati Awa Tribe descends from Toroa

Nga Puhi Tribe descends from Puhi

Tuhoe Tribe descends from half brother, Taneatua

Hikoroa (Irakewa) + Wekanui (f) (of Havaiiki/Hawaii)

Muriwai (f) + **Tamatea Matangi** (m)

Rangikurukuru

Whaka Ue-Riri (Whakauerehe)

Waikura

Amaite-Uru

Tamatea Hunaro

Maiwakite Nukuroa

Hinewai

Kuraawhe Rangi + Tamahaua

Pakakura

Wheao + Kahopu - descended from Takatimu Waka (canoe)

Tutepaoa + Kawaiho

Te Ururehe

Tapuaronga

Te Maunga + Rarahi

Kawatu

Huirohotu b abt. 1759 at Te Kaha + Tauare (f.) b.1758

Hotu Manawanui (m) +Unknown

brother:* Tuterangi Kawha b. 1778+Puata (f)

*Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu (f) only child.

*Hohipaea Ngapuhi (f.) only child

* Note: Hotu Manawanui had two brothers, but only one is known to me.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2

***Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu** (f) born in Ōpōtiki circa 1817 and died circa 1906.
She had **four** relationships. (Commander Wood was her 2nd brief liaison). She returned to 1st husband.

1. Chief **TAKOTO Waimua** – Te Whanau a Apanui.

Child 1. * Kateruri TAKOTO. (f) born circa 1834

2. **Commander James WOOD** of H.M.S. Buffalo (comfort wife). **He first arrived in New Zealand, at the Bay of Islands, from Adelaide, on the 20th Sept 1837.**

Child 2: Ngāhiraka WOOD (f) born 1838, in Ōpōtiki, from this brief liaison.

Child 3: Maupunarua Erihapeti (Elizabeth) TAKOTO (f) born circa 1846 died 1892 M.L.C.

3. Captain John (Jock) McGregor Coastal Trader. (Scottish)

Child 4: Thomas Henry McGregor b.1852 and raised by Capt. Abraham Bennett White.

4. Wi Paki -

Child 5:- Kawaiho PAKI. (f) born 1856

* Note Matarena and Hohipaea Ngapuhi were cousins. Their fathers were blood brothers. DNA confirmed.
Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu + 1. Commander **James Wood** of H.M.S. Buffalo

1

1. f. **Ngāhiraka** born circa 1838 – date estimated from father's service records.

She 'married' three times, 'widowed' twice:

+ 1. Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson. 58th Reg. Surgeon Major died China 1860

Liaison – three children: Thomas, Margaret and Mary (died young)

+ 2. John Reed - Half Maori. Boatman. Died 1 Jan 1864 Scarlet Fever.

Child: (Eliza) Mary Reed born 4 months after father died.

+ 3. **Joseph Bond Kennedy** born 1841 - died 1913 (2nd marriage and other children recorded later).

1

Harriet Bond Kennedy + George Smith

1

Eric Trevor Bond Smith + (Violet) June Peapell

1

Leone Rosa Smith + John Metcalfe

1

***Christopher Stephen Metcalfe** + (Andrea) Tami Kemp

1

Teegan Natalie Metcalfe **Jayden Christopher Metcalfe**

2. f. **Kateruri Takoto.** Born circa 1834. Died 26/12/1940 aged 106. Father: Chief Takoto Waimua

+ 1st husband William James (called John) Gundry English + Ngaitupoto hapu.

***Kateruri/ Katerina and signed her name Katarina. Researchers look for all three names.**

+ 2nd husband George Phillip Matchitt - English

Descendants: Gundry family, formerly of Ōpōtiki

Matchitt family of Te Kaha

Selwyn family

Warren family of Ōpōtiki

3. f. **Maupunarua Erihapeti (Elizabeth) Takoto** born circa 1846 d. 1892. M.L.C.

+ 1st husband- Mikaere Pihipihi Apanui. Died circa 1864.

Children: Hemi and Whareki

+ 2nd liaison - Charles Daykin Litchfield born 21 Nov. 1843 Radford, Nottingham
England. Died 20 December 1889 at Ōpōtiki.

Child: Charles Tangatamua Litchfield born 1867 Ōpōtiki. d.1 Feb. 1884 Ōpōtiki.

+ 3rd liaison - Capt. George Popplewell Walker 1st Waikato Militia.

Child: Matewiki Wiremu Paki Walker born 1869

+ 4th husband - Edwards.

4. m. Thomas Henry McGregor b. 1853. d. 1928 75 yrs. m Augustine Selina Te Rangitai White. 15 children.

5. f. **Kawaiho Paki.** (f) born 1856 died 1931 aged 75 years. Father: Wi Paki of Ngati Patu hapu.

1st husband Warena Mokomoko. They had seven children.

CORRECTION TO BIRTH ORDER OF MATARENA WAITANGI RANGIWHIUWHIU'S CHILDREN.

In a meeting with Heteraka Biddle, he gave me the birth order of Matarena Rangiwhiuwhiu Waitangi's children, as he knew it from Whakatohea, as:

Ngāhiraka
Maupunarua
Kateruri
Kawaiho

I re-wrote the whole book accordingly, but during my research it became clear that the descendants of Kawaiho (who was about 22 years younger than her oldest sibling) initially recorded their Whakapapa, were familiar with their own Tipuna, but were mistaken with order of her older siblings and included *Tamihana as a sibling, when he was actually Ngāhiraka's eldest son, Thomas Thomson (Tamihana). But the birth order of Matarena's older daughters didn't equate to known facts and dates.

For example:

* Ngāhiraka's father's Naval records show he wasn't in New Zealand prior to 1837.

*Ngāhiraka had 3 children to Dr. Thomson between 1852 - 1858.

* Olive Hartog who met her great aunt Ka personally, is adamant that Kateruri/Katerina/Katarina Takoto was older than Ngāhiraka, whose birth date is definitely correct. After previously rewriting this book and changing birth order to comply with Whakatohea, I have respectfully re-written it in this edition in line with my extensive research. No disrespect is intended.

*Kateruri / Katerina / Katarina Takoto always said that she was 30 when Volkner died in 1865. This was before calendars were commonly used and dates were associated more with events. I suggest that she was born circa 1834 making her about 30+ in 1865 and that she was a few years older than Ngāhiraka. She was 106 years old when she died in 1940.

Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu had four daughters to three different fathers,
And a son with Jock McGregor who was whāngai. (Found by DNA).

1. f. Kateruri / Katerina / Katarina b. circa 1834 - father Takoto
2. f. Ngāhiraka b. 1838 - father Commander James Wood
3. f. Maupunarua Erehapeti (Elizabeth) b. circa 1846 - father Takoto
4. m. Thomas Henry McGregor b. 1852 - father Jock McGregor, trader, Whanganui.
5. f. Kawaiho Paki b. 1856 - father Wi Paki

* Note:- Kawaiho was about 22 years younger than her oldest sibling and it was her descendants who submitted, what I believe to be an incorrect birth order, simply because they were mistaken.

*Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu is a direct descendant of the Tainui waka, through the marriage of Rongomai and his second wife *Tunamu. She is also descended from Tainui waka through Taritoronga down to Tutepaoa (husband of Kawaiho) son of Tamahaua whom Ngai-Tamahaua get their Hapu name from. See Dion Tilley's extensive Whakapapa in the last chapter.



Ngāhiraka Kennedy

1838 - 1890

By the American Photo Company circa 1889.

Courtesy Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne.

South To The Left Of Venus

PART ONE

- Chapter 1. Hither from the realm of Rigel
- Chapter 2. Kennedy Scottish Connection
- Chapter 3. Kennedy's Bay - John Bond Kennedy
- Chapter 4. Rangirauwaka/Kateraina Taurangi & John Kennedy
- Chapter 5. Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu
- Chapter 6. Maori The First Missionaries in Ōpōtiki
- Chapter 7. English Ancestors Commander Wood - Ngāhiraka
- Chapter 8. In Search Of Spar - Commander James Wood
- Chapter 9. Maupunarua Erehapeti Takoto - Apanui & Walker
- Chapter 10. Matarena's Unknown Son - Thomas Henry McGregor
- Chapter 11. Kateruri/Katarina Takoto - Tiwai - Gundry & Matchitt
- Chapter 22. Whakapapa - Maori and European lineage
- Chapter 23. Illustrations
- Chapter 24. Bibliography

South To The Left Of Venus

PART TWO

Chapter 12. Ngāhiraka & Dr. A. S. Thomson - first liaison	Page 13
Chapter 13. Ngāhiraka & John Reed 2nd husband. Also Gundry	Page 50
Chapter 14. Ngāhiraka and Joseph Bond Kennedy 3rd husband	Page 73
Chapter 15 Ngāhiraka and Joseph Bond Kennedy's Children	Page 96
Chapter 16. Irish Ancestors Begorrah - Smith	Page 161
Chapter 17. Harriet Kennedy & George Smith	Page 189
Chapter 18. Trevor Smith and (Violet) June Peapell	Page 209
Chapter 19. Metcalfe's From Yorkshire	Page 243
Chapter 20. Oram's from Wiltshire - Rich and Beaverstock	Page 272
Chapter 21. Joseph Kennedy's 2nd wife Alice Palmer	Page 285
Whakapapa - Maori and European lineage	Page 313
Illustrations	Page 357
Bibliography	Page 367

Chapter 12

NGĀHIRAKA

and

Dr. ARTHUR SAUNDERS THOMSON

and

He was the Principal Medical Officer of the 5th Division of the British Expeditionary Force with the 58th Regiment.

He had a liaison with Ngāhiraka while stationed in Auckland.

Children:

*Thomas Thomson

*Margaret Thomson +1. Dr. John Harkness Macaffer
+ 2. Mr. Simson

*Mary (died young).

Ngāhiraka's half sister, Kateruri/Katerina/Katarina Takoto is also mentioned in this chapter.

ARTHUR SAUNDERS THOMSON

1816 - 1860 Surgeon Major 58th Regiment.

He arrived in New Zealand on the Clifton on 23rd January 1848

He was the son of James Thomson, Paymaster of the Forfar & Kincardine Militia and a landowner, who had met his wife Margaret Thomson in Belfast whilst on duty there and they married in 1814. His father James had a monument to his family erected at St John's Church in Edinburgh.

The couple had four children:

James born 1st August 1815 and died in Edinburgh 1833 aged 18 years.

* Arthur Saunders Thomson born 29.12.1816. - Died in China 4th November 1860

William John Born 1819 and died in 1825, aged 6 years.

Maria Margaret born 1823.

Married George Middleton in Edinburgh. She died in 1905.

Arthur Thomson studied to be a Medical doctor at Edinburgh University, where he received a Gold Medal for his Thesis in 1837. It was a tragedy for the family losing two of his siblings so young and his parents must have been very proud of Arthur's academic achievements. He became an army doctor and was promoted to Principal Medical Officer of the 5th Division of the British Expeditionary Forces and served in India. While he was there, he contracted an Amoeba parasite in his blood, which was later to kill him. He was deployed to New Zealand as Surgeon Major 58th Regiment, as a result of unrest in the Bay of Islands, after the Treaty of Waitangi and arrived in Auckland, onboard the Clifton on 23rd January 1848 and the troops were stationed at Albert Barracks, on the present day Albert Park, in central Auckland, the very young Capital in the remote British colony of New Zealand. When his regiment was not engaged in fighting Maori, there was little for him to do, except help the poor needing medical treatment, Maori and European alike. There were no books about New Zealand and he set about collecting information about the fledgling colony, the climate and the Maori people.

It seems appropriate to quote a reference to Dr Thomson's character and personality, as written in an article in The New Zealander, 4th May, 1861. Pages 6 & 7, after news of his death, in 1860.

'Dr. Thomson had, in great measure, the qualities which win general esteem, and secure lasting friendship. A retiring but genial temperament, a modest disposition and a kindness of heart, ever regardless of self and full of consideration for others, however humble, endeared him to all who knew him. Skilful in his profession, and gentle in his attention to the sick, he was loved by his patients; and while he scrupulously avoided as much as possible private practice, with or without fee, lest he should interfere with local practitioners, he frequently, in his medical capacity, charitably administered to the wants of those who had no claim except their illness and destitution.

His general abilities were of a high and rare order. His mind was observant, and his memory tenacious. Methodical in the arrangements of ample stores thus accumulated, he was also cool and logical in his conclusions. His practical common sense and his instinctive appreciation of truth were no more remarkable than his quick discernment of the motives, and his correct judgement of the characters of others. His power of description in writing was great, and his style was nervous, simple and graphic. Without the slightest ostentation, his study and knowledge of books were considerable. There is scarcely a book on New Zealand, or bearing the remotest reference to it, as his own book testifies, which he had not diligently and carefully perused.'

It is thought that Dr. Thomson may have been one of the men who accompanied the Banker Alexander Kennedy on his tour into the interior, to Taupo, in 1852. See an account of this historic journey in the chapter on Alexander Kennedy Banker.

Between 1852 and 1859 Dr. Thomson had a liaison with a young 14 year old Maori girl, Ngāhiraka, the daughter of Matarena Waitangi, from the Whakatohea tribe from Ōpōtiki and Commander Wood of the late H.M.S Buffalo. We do not know the circumstances of their meeting, but she and her half sister Kateruri/Katerina/Katarina Takoto, were sent from the mission school at Hikutaia in Ōpōtiki, to Mission school in Auckland. There the girls would have become proficient at European house keeping practices, gardening, cooking and other household skills. From about 14 years of age Mission girls were sort after to work in many European homes; trusted for their Christian principals, they were probably engaged to keep house for the doctor at his Stoke's Point, Northcote property. Kateruri/Katarina could read and write and was always known to be a good housekeeper, but it was the beautiful half - cast Ngāhiraka, who captured the doctor's heart. Their liaison would have been discreet, to protect his reputation. Kateruri/Katarina Takoto would have run errands for the doctor to Auckland's first chemist, William Richardson Gundry, who was also their neighbour. She later married his son (William) John Gundry, when his Regiment was stationed at Ōpōtiki. Kateruri/Katarina Takoto is said to have lived in Auckland for 7 years, before returning to home about 1862. She would have helped her sister take care of the children when the doctor was absent. Her being half Maori, the doctor could not marry Ngāhiraka because of 'Army rules.' He only had to serve two more years before retiring on full pay, when he would have been free to marry, but sadly he died in China on 3rd November 1860, from a burst abscess in his liver, caused by an Amoeba parasite he had contracted while serving in India.

While he was in Auckland, Dr. Thomson bought land in various locations. He purchased 15 acres at Stokes Point (adjacent to James Reed) from Major Cooper, and for the extra sum of 5/- Major Cooper gave Dr. Thomson 'the right to use the Maori track either on foot, or with horses, for cattle, carts and other carriages, at all times of the day or night.' (Northcote Golden Jubilee). It was an idyllic location on the edge of the beautiful Waitamata harbour and they resided there between 1847 and 1858. At this beautiful property, on the Northcote peninsular, he raised his family and would have spent many hours writing his book. It was only a short ferry ride from the Army barracks. From 1854 - 1857. He also had a residence close by at Shortland and Fort Streets and was often required to attend parades and commemoration services, such as celebrating Queen Victoria's birthday, with the army.

Isaac Cooper, James Reed and Dr. Thomson had adjoining properties and William Richardson Gundry and his Maori wife lived nearby, at what is now Chelsea Sugar refinery. Dr. Thomson was away from home often, on Army business or exploring the country as part of his research for the book he was writing. He would have learnt much about Maori from these girls and theirs would have been a happy home, with much laughter, singing and traditionally Maori dancing and poi. Colonel Balneavis was from the same regiment as Dr. Thomson and the Colonel's wife, Meri Makarina Hineahua, was from the Whakatohea tribe and related to Ngāhiraka's mother. Dr. Thomson had an interest in Maori, their language and customs, especially as he was researching for a book he was writing about the history and people of New Zealand. The beautiful young, bi-lingual half-caste Maori girl, would have intrigued him, having spent many years with missionaries and living very much as a European. Dr. Thomson overtly refers to Ngāhiraka in his book: 'Whole sentences are expressed in the large, brilliant, restless eyes and a slight squeeze of the hands, difficult to detect, is the secret token of regard... marriage among the Maori was a purely civil act. .. permission of both nations was required, and neglecting this observance has led to war .. should a young girl have a preference for one of her suitors, and particularly on becoming enceinte

(pregnant) she went home with him and they lived as man and wife.' The couple had three children:

*Thomas Thomson born circa 1852 Auckland

*Margaret born 4th October, 1855 in Auckland

*Mary born August/September 1858 (referred to in Dr Thomson's Will written Nov. 1858)

Margaret was named after Arthur's mother, Margaret Saunders, who was born in Belfast in 1792. She was a granddaughter of a Mayor of Belfast. We have no record of Mary, apart from a mention in the doctor's Army Will. It is assumed she died as a baby. No record of this child having been registered or baptised has been found and therefore she wouldn't have been buried in consecrated churchyard. There is a reference to two small graves on the cliff top at Stokes point and one of these may well have been baby Mary Thomson. The cliff has now eroded and the graves have gone.

Some historians suggest Ngāhiraka was an Auckland socialite, but I have found no evidence that she accompanied the doctor to any of the many social events, reported in detail, in the newspapers of the day. Stoke's Point was only accessible to Auckland by boat and the relationship which developed between the doctor and Ngāhiraka was discreet, to protect the doctor's reputation. It was only when the doctor left a Will, prior his re-deployment overseas, that he named Ngāhiraka and his three children, leaving them well provided for. It is obvious that he loved her dearly and had expressed his intention to return to his 'beloved Waitamata' (harbour) after his final two years service, when he would be entitled to retire on full pension. He would then be free to marry her.

Wiremu Maihi te Rangikaheke, the son of a Maori Chief, born in the Rotorua district circa 1815 and educated by the Church Missionary Society mission, at Te Koutu, in 1835 where he learned to read and write. As he was an adherent of the Anglican church at this time. He worked closely with Governor George Grey and was living with the governor in order to teach him about Maori customs. For a time Grey paid Te Rangikaheke £36 a year, and provided living quarters for him and his family, attached to his own house in Auckland. After Governor Grey's departure, in 1853, Te Rangikaheke remained in Auckland for most of the decade, moving frequently from one address to another. He produced a very large body of written work - 21 manuscripts, of which he was the sole author, and 17 more to which he contributed, in all nearly 800 pages. Almost all are in the Grey Collection in Auckland Public Library. They were written, in a neat, clear hand, before 1854.

Excerpts from 'Dictionary Of New Zealand Biography.'

* Dr Thomson writes that he also lived with him at Stokes Point for several years.

COMMISSIONED OFFICERS OF THE MEDICAL SERVICES OF THE BRITISH ARMY

1660 -1960 Volume 1. DREW'S ROLL

Welcome Historical Medical Journal London 1868.

4525. Arthur Saunders Thomson.

A.S. Staff, 19 oct.1838;

17 F. 23 Nov. 1838;

14 Dns, 15 April 1842;

S. 58 F. 6 Aug. 1847.

S.M. 58 F. 19 Oct 1858;

Staff, 15 Nov. 1859.

Died at Pekin when P.M.O. Of 5 Div. Of Expeditionary Force, 4 Nov. 1860.

Born 29 December 1816.

M.D. Edinburgh 1837.

As a military surgeon, medical scientist, writer and historian, Arthur Thomson wrote **The Story Of New Zealand; Past And Present Savage And Civilised**, in Two Volumes. First Published in London in 1859, being the first comprehensive history book written about New Zealand, it was re-published Capper Press Christchurch in 1974. Several members of the family are fortunate enough to have copies.

Quoting from the inside cover:

'One of the best written histories and fascinating,' were Hocken's comments on 'The Story Of New Zealand, remains the definitive book on New Zealand history to 1859.

Thomson could find no book containing a general history of the colony and this work, in a clear narrative style, attempts to sketch the natural history of its peopleand to show how a few Anglo Saxons planted and managed a colony in the midst of cannibals. As a background for his monumental task, Thomson spent 11 years in New Zealand living with the Maori people [*including Ngāhiraka, with whom he had three children*] and gaining original insights into their mythology, customs, language and history. He also made an intensive study of early settlement and the evolution of government, and the circumstances of Hone Heke's war. Thomson's contribution to New Zealand literature is immense. His list of published works included references to almost 500 titles, and was the first New Zealand bibliography (in Vol 2.) An indispensable yet readable basic reference work - the cornerstone of any New Zealand collection.'

The Story Of New Zealand; Past And Present Savage And Civilised.

By Arthur S. Thomson

Preface: In Arthur S. Thomson's own words:

'My reason for writing about a country concerning which, as may be seen in the bibliography appended, ninety volumes, two hundred pamphlets, and nearly a hundred-weight of parliamentary papers have already printed this. On embarking to join the 58th Regiment, of which corps I have been surgeon for 13 years, I could find no book containing a general history of the colony; and at present, several professing to be accounts of New Zealand limit their information to one settlement and one race, while others are evidently written for political, colonising, or religious purposes, and not a few are flattering mercantile advertisements. In the hope of filling up this literary gap, I occasionally amused my leisure hours in collecting materials for the present work, and my means for doing so were considerable. During eleven years residence I saw much of the country; held intercourse with representative men; sojourned for months among the aborigines in the interior; was permitted by Dr. Sinclair, the late Colonial Secretary, to consult many unpublished official documents; and enjoyed the rare privilege of hearing the true manner in which New Zealanders talk over passing events among themselves, from my enlighten friend, *Wiremu Maihi te Rangikaheke. This man, who lived for several years in my house /Stokes Point/ was chief among the turbulent warriors of Rotorua, and a valuable contributor to Governor Grey's 'Traditions and Chants of the New Zealanders.' From personal observation and material culled from these sources, I have endeavoured to sketch the natural history of the country; to narrate the story of its people, their spiritual conquest, and the dawn of civilisation amongst them; to show how a few Anglo-Saxons planted and managed a colony in the midst of cannibals; and to describe their bygone dangers and difficulties; their present efforts to render a theoretical constitution practically useful, and the progress they have made in developing the resources of England's most distant colony.'

Aldershot Camp [*England*]

November 1859

A REVIEW OF ARTHUR THOMSON'S
TWO VOLUME TWO VOLUMES.

By Michael Belgrave.

Born on 29 December 1816, and was baptised on 2 January 1817 at Arbroath, Angus, Scotland. He was the son of Margaret Saunders and her husband, James Thomson; he appears not to have married. Thomson studied at the University of Edinburgh, where he developed an interest in the relationship between climate, environment and disease. Graduating with an M.D. in 1837, he won a gold medal from the Edinburgh medical faculty for his thesis on the worldwide influence of climate on health and morbidity. A year later he published a statistical paper on fever in Great Britain. Using vital and hospital statistics, a method of analysis which was still relatively new, Thomson argued that the incidence of fever had been declining throughout the eighteenth century. However, a suggestion that the medical treatment of the day was successful in reducing the intensity and mortality of fever was less tenable. October 1838 Thomson joined the British Army as an assistant surgeon. On the army staff he was stationed at Bombay, India and Aden, with the 17th (Leicestershire) Regiment of Foot, until 1842 and then with the 14th King's Light Dragoons in India. While there Thomson wrote about a serious epidemic of fever among the 17th Regiment in the Colabah barracks during the 1841 monsoon. In August 1847, while on leave in England, Thomson was appointed Surgeon to the 58th Rutlandshire Regiment of Foot and posted to Auckland, New Zealand.

*Clifton arrived 23rd January 1848; Captain Kettlewell, 79 pensioners, 72 women, 161 children; Lieutenant Owen Wynne Gray; Surgeon Dr Arthur Thomson.

The transfer was fortunate. New Zealand's northern war was over, and the unsettling influence of Te Rauparaha had been undermined. For the following decade the British Army played a deterrent role only, while settlement increased and British sovereignty was extended over the whole of the South Island and much of the North. Untroubled by the medical duties which accompanied both war and pestilence, Thomson was free to observe and to write. In the 1850s he published a number of scientific and medical papers which applied his interest in statistics and climatology to New Zealand conditions. The contrast between fever-ridden India and the antipodes was dramatic for an observer already committed to exploring comparative rates of illness. In an article published in the *Edinburgh Medical and Surgical Journal* in 1850, Thomson demonstrated that the rates of morbidity and mortality among British soldiers in New Zealand were dramatically lower than in India, and were even a significant improvement on British statistics. Without a satisfactory knowledge of the aetiology of disease, however, his explanation for this situation was based on a series of proto-evolutionary and environmental assumptions. That troops lived longer in New Zealand than elsewhere, he argued, demonstrated that the New Zealand climate and environment were more conducive to good health. Thomson's reports on New Zealand climatic conditions were also tabled in Parliament in Auckland, and published in the Wellington provincial government gazette. His papers gave scientific credibility to an already prevalent belief that New Zealand was one of the healthiest places on earth.

Thomson's research was most significant when he turned his attention to the Maori. He travelled from Auckland to the Rotorua and Taupo districts, as far south as the Mokau River, observing and recording Maori health and customs. Arthur Saunders Thomson is reputed to have been the first European explorer of limestone caves in New Zealand. In 1849 and 1852 he collected Moa bones from caves near Waitomo, in the King Country.

He compiled statistics of the incidence of disease among the Maori population and made the first anthropometric measurements of the Maori. A three-part article, 'On the peculiarities in figure, the disfigurations, and the customs of the New Zealanders', published in

the British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review in 1854--55, discussed the incidence of scrofula (which Thomson attributed to promiscuous sexual habits); rheumatic conditions; and Ngerengere, thought to be a form of leprosy, although the aetiology is still uncertain.

The statistical method, which Thomson employed, flourished among the British statistical societies from the 1830s. The counting and comparing of morbidity and mortality of poverty and human physiology, inspired confidence that the previously unknowable would be revealed by thorough, systematic, quantitative investigation. Soon after Thomson's death, medical research would become focused on the microscopic, with the investigative frontiers firmly contained within the operating theatre and laboratory. Thomson's world was uncontaminated by germs. There was room for the grand scheme, for an attempt to resolve the macro-equation of environment, climate, diet and culture. Once the statistics had revealed their patterns, the relationships were, to Thomson, obvious. Through comparative study of Maori and European conditions, the rise of civilisation could be reduced to a table, clearly demonstrating the falling away of the indicators of barbarism, as warfare, infanticide and Maori communalism gave way to the habits of Europeans, as Thomson identified as 'civilised'.

Many of the assumptions about social change which would accompany the nineteenth century debate on evolution were already fully formed in Thomson's major work, *The story of New Zealand: past and present - savage and civilized*, which was published in two volumes in 1859, the same year as Charles Darwin's *The origin of species*. There was nothing prescient in this; Darwin and Alfred Wallace's evolutionary theory provided the mechanism that was missing from writings such as Thomson's. Thomson had observed a striking contrast between the Maori and European situations: whereas Europeans were thriving in New Zealand compared with elsewhere in the world, the Maori appeared to be faced with possible extinction. Thomson attempted to explain this situation in environmental or racial terms, but was unable to give a prognosis for Maori survival. A growing awareness of the importance of social conditions and processes consequently led him to an increasing interest in history. By the mid 1850s he was working on bringing all his earlier material together in a larger scheme.

The Story of New Zealand, the country's first major written history, appears to have been largely completed when Thomson left for England in 1858. The book was based on the already voluminous literature on the colony, archival material, and discussions with many of the actors involved. For Maori material, Thomson called on the assistance of the colonial secretary, Andrew Sinclair; the commissioner of Crown lands, Walter Mantell; and chief land purchase commissioner, Donald McLean.

Like most Europeans of his time, Thomson dismissed pre-contact Maori society as almost bestial. An adequate food supply quickly provided for most wants; chiefs were served by slaves and lives were divided between eating, sleeping and indolence. In Thomson's vision, capitalism, not Christianity, was transforming the Maori world. The desire for European goods, which saw competition among chiefs for fine coats, schooners, mills, horses and cattle, was portrayed as the sole mechanism of social change.

Thomson interpreted the increasing rejection of Christianity, evident in the 1850s, not as a turning away from European culture, but as the secular world of trade replacing that of theology. His rejection of the old culture, however, was not absolute. Thomson never adequately resolved the tension between his anthropological dismissal of traditional Maori society, and his deep admiration for Maori military prowess and for Renaissance men such as Hone Heke and Te Rauparaha. The warrior chief as tactician and entrepreneur was ennobled by his poetic vision; Thomson quotes liberally and appreciatively from translated waiata.

Thomson believed his history benefited the Maori. He saw himself castigating European administrators and politicians for their failure to recognise Maori rights and for the settler determination to push Maori interests aside. However, he did not question the logic of continued and increasing settlement. A benevolent colonial regime could still assist the Maori towards equality and advancement. Thus Governor Robert Fitzroy was attacked for his failure to deal decisively with Maori intransigence, despite an acknowledgement that right was often on the Maori side. Governor George Grey was criticised for his resistance to self-government, but praised for overwhelming Heke and Kawiti and undermining Te Rau-paraha. These somewhat grand themes of the 1840s gave way to the petty politics of the 1850s. Although applauding the principle of self-government, Thomson found its practice venal and unflattering to democracy. He had little good to say of administrations formed by the politicians during this decade.

Occasionally Thomson recognised that the settler demand for land augured poorly for the immediate future. However, in juxtaposing the barbarism of the pre-European world with the civilisation of the 1850s, he ignored the extent to which the economic and cultural interests of the two peoples were, in reality, opposed. Like most Europeans who rejected tribalism, his need to generalise Maori experience blinded him to the limited nature of the agricultural boom of the 1840s and 1850s. Thomson was unable to predict that further settlement would lead to an inevitable conflict with those still powerful tribes who saw each new pressure to sell land as weakening their mana.

Despite this failing, however, Thomson's enthusiasm for statistical and environmental medicine, and his keen observation of politics and race relations, were the basis of a history which has been a model for many of those which have followed. His scientific papers, meanwhile, remain the most important medical publications on New Zealand in the early colonial period.

In October 1858 Thomson was promoted to surgeon major. In November 1859 he reluctantly returned to England with his regiment and was transferred to active service and placed in charge of the *Mauritius*, a hospital steamship which provided medical support for British forces in China. Thomson was with the army when Peking (Beijing) fell and was selected to remain as senior medical officer in command of the force wintering at Tientsin (Tianjin) China. Unwell for some time, he died there, probably on 4 November 1860, and was buried in the Russian cemetery. (Now built over.)

DR. THOMSON'S RARE FIND OF A FROG:

THE AUCKLAND GOLD FIELDS
Daily Southern Cross 23rd November 1852

Dr. Thomson of the 58th Regiment, has acquired an interesting addition to the Fauna of New Zealand, which he obtained at the diggings. It is a **frog**, which was found alive on removing a large quartz boulder from its original bed.

'The animal was carefully examined by several intelligent natives at Coromandel, but only one man had ever seen a similar creature before, and this occurred several years ago, at the digging of a saw pit; but I am told there have been others seen at Waiheki. (sic). They have no name for it in the Maori language, and they exhibited much astonishment on beholding the animal. They said it must be the Atua, the spirit or god of the gold, which had appeared on the earth, and the 'croakers' among the assembled tribes were inclined to draw unfavourable omens from the discovery of this strange animal in New Zealand at such a peculiar time,' he said.

REMARKS ON THE INFLUENCE OF THE CLIMATE
OF AUCKLAND
IN THE PRODUCTION OF DISEASE

In a small community, all the deaths which occur are generally well known, and from this cause, an erroneous opinion is frequently formed regarding the salubrity of the place. For the sake of truth, I have made the following observations, which are drawn from the Military Population, a source not only of good accuracy, but highly advantageous for such enquiries, from the circumstances, that an easy means of comparison is afforded, with men, similarly situated, in other countries.

I may observe, that the slightest ailment obliges a soldier to report himself sick, as he must either be fit for every active duty, or in hospital. TABLE, showing the Annual Number of Admissions into Hospital from Different Classes of Disease, out of a thousand Soldiers stationed in Britain and the Ratio of admissions among the Troops quartered in Auckland during the year 1848 affection of the lungs one third less among the Military in Auckland, than in Great Britain, are: Rheumatic affections, disease of the brain and eyes.

During the year ending April 1849, the average strength of Garrison of Auckland was 615 men, and the number of deaths in Auckland, during the year, of eleven men per thousand, whereas in Great Britain, the average mortality among troops is fifteen per thousand.

A.S. Thomson, MD,
Surgeon of the 58th Regiment of Foot.
Auckland

RESIDENT MAGISTRATE'S COURT
Auckland Medical and Surgical Society.

At a meeting of the above Society, held at the Hon. Secretary's house on the 6th instant, it was unanimously resolved that, 'pending legislation in this colony for the government of the Medical Profession, the Society do notify, for the information and guidance of the public, that they have examined the qualifications of the undermentioned Medical Practitioners, who have been admitted Members of the Society; that they have found them in accordance with the requirements of the 'Medical Act,' passed in the last session of the British Parliament, for the regulation of the profession ; and that they have granted them Certificates to that effect.'

Thos. Francis McGauran
Thomas Moore Philson
Richard Matthews
Thomas Wildridge Shiell
Samuel John Stratford
Robert Douglass
Arthur S. Thomson
John Thos. Matson Bacot
Benjamin Tydd
Thomas Esmonde White
Andrew Buchanan
Henry Bowles Franklyn

Eugene MacShane
Charles Knight
Samuel Hodgkinson
Richard Day
Andrew Sinclair
Hugh Rae
T. Brutton Kenderdine
J.J. Robert Dalliston
Samuel Heyward Ford
William Dyer
John de Courcy Young

T.F. Mc GAURAN President
Auckland 7th April 1859

THE AUCKLAND GOLD FIELD
23rd November 1852 Daily Southern Cross

Considerable interest has been excited by the exhibition of a remarkably fine specimen of auriferous quartz sent by Lieut. Governor Wynyard from Coromandel, and conveyed to Auckland, by **Dr. Thomson of the 58th Regiment**. This specimen differs most materially in appearance from any of the gold bearing quartz of Australia or California which we have ever beheld. It is much darker in colour; and, instead of showing the gold in specks or crystals, the precious metal is completely disseminated throughout the mass. So rich is this specimen that they who are sceptical of New Zealand proving an available gold field are exceedingly suspicious of deception, many feeling disposed to pronounce this specimen a foreign importation.....

His Excellency, the Lieutenant-Governor, is represented as having laid the foundation of a very excellent arrangement with the Natives, for permission to dig on their auriferous lands. It has been proposed, to pay a sum of £300 for every 500 licensed diggers, and at the rate of £600 for every thousand diggers that may be licensed, and so on in proportion. To this arrangement the natives are reported to be favourable....This specimen weighs about 752 grains troy weight, or about an ounce and a half. .. About half an ounce of it is gold. This is decidedly the best specimen I have yet seen ... The finders were Owen and Williams, two sawyers who have been resident at Kikowhakerere for many years... there is no difficulty getting to the place and the numerous large trees which grow on both sides of the rivulets, give to the workers a protection from the burning rays of the sun, and the inclemency of the weather, which no other diggings afford....

This shows the integrity of Dr. Thomson, to be entrusted with the responsibility of taking this valuable find to Auckland, on the Lieutenant Governor's behalf.

* On this trip Dr Thomson discovered a rare frog. (See previous page).

PRESENTED TO PARLIAMENT BY HER MAJESTY'S COMMAND.

Enclosure in Nos 60. Auckland, June 22, 1852.

I will feel obliged by your submitting this letter to the Lieutenant-Governor,
with request that it may be forwarded to the Governor-in-Chief.

In the New Zealand papers laid before Parliament on the 7th August 1851, there is a letter from Pene Tani, stating that the celebrated chief Heke was killed by his wife, and although the Governor-in-Chief justly discredits the report, and states that he died from consumption, still the statement of Pene Tani, if un-contradicted by an eyewitness of Heke's death, must ever carry with it considerable weight.

The Reverend W.R. Davis, of Kaikohe, attended Heke several months before he died, as a clergyman and physician. On my showing him Pene Tani's letter in the blue book, he said it was a mistake, and he authorised me to contradict it. He saw Heke naked after the quarrel he had with his wife, and he did not observe any injury to his side. Mr. Davis applied with his own hands, a blister to the back part of Heke's chest. This will account for the purulent discharge which was seen after his death, when the body was washed on the side and which Pene Tani adduces as an evidence of the injuries he received from his wife.

Heke died from consumption [*Tuberculosis*] a malady from which he had suffered for a considerable time. I dined with him at Mr. Davis's house, at Kaikohe, eighteen months before his death; he was then suffering slightly from disease of the lungs and severely from a scrofulous swelling of the glands in the neck. My object in writing this letter is to do an act of justice to Heke's wife, a woman of considerable New Zealand celebrity, from her connection with Heke, and from being the daughter of the late Chief Hongi, one of New Zealand's most celebrated warriors. Mr. Davis told me that she attended her husband with kindness on his death-bed, and that she now lives, respected by the tribe. Heke died a Christian.

The honourable, The Colonial Secretary
Auckland

I have &c. (signed) A.S. Thomson. M.D.
Surgeon 58th regiment.



The Moa's Cave In New Zealand. A. Thomson MD. 58th Regt.
Scheuck & Mc Farlane Lithographers, Edinburgh.
Plate II Vol. LVI Page 267.
Courtesy of The Auckland Institute Museum. CN 346

* Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson, top centre, indicates with a stick, where he discovered the Moa bones. October 1852. Major Hulme and Captain Rhodes Cooper of the 58th Reg. and Maori guide.

Description of Two Caves in the North Island of New Zealand in which were found bones of the large extinct Wingless Bird called by the Natives, Moa, and by Naturalists the Dinornis, with some general observations on this Genus of Birds.

By Arthur S. Thomson M.D. Surgeon of the 58th Regiment.

From the Edinburgh Philosophical Journal April 1854. Edinburgh.

Printed by Neill & Company MDCCCLIV.

Narrative: 'In the month of February, 1849, I accompanied Lieutenant Servantes of the 6th Regiment, and Lieutenant Clark, Royal Engineers, in search of a cave said to contain the bones of a Moa. Almost 50 years had elapsed since our guide, an old woman, had seen these bones. The place of the cave and the bones were perfectly familiar to her mind, as she had seen them when a girl, but the face of the country had evidently changed considerably since that period; trees had grown up where ferns had formerly grown, and fern was now growing where trees had stood; so that after searching about for a whole day, the old lady was obliged to acknowledge that she could not find the cave and we returned to Auckland without accomplishing the object of our journey. In September 1849, I accompanied Captain Henderson and Lieutenant Servantes on another trip for similar objects; on this occasion we were successful in finding a cave and a quantity of Moa bones, among which were several almost entire skulls and beaks, some of the largest birds had a bone like a humerus.

These specimens were given to his Excellency Sir George Grey, Governor of New Zealand, who transmitted them, I believe, to Professor Owen. I have been several times asked for a description of the cave, but as our visit was a hasty one and all my fellow-travellers to whom I might have asked for assistance in this matter had left the country, I was obliged to acknowledge my inability to give satisfactory account of the cave.

This I regretted very much, because the New Zealanders are exceedingly jealous of showing, or allowing, any place to become known, which they have an idea is curious without payment, and when I recollected the difficulty and delay that we had experienced in finding the cave before, I knew that I could not find the place again without assistance and a native of Auckland had refused to conduct me to the cave, because the bones that were in it had been sold to a European and I was aware that several bones from that cave had been sold at an extravagant price at Taranaki, consequently the place was to the few who could know it, a species of gold mine.

I was anxious however, to try to find the cave again, so partly with the object in view and also to visit Taupo, I set out with Major Hume and Captain Cooper of the 58th Regiment, in October 1852. We directed our steps to Parianiwaniwa a village upward of a hundred miles from Auckland, near to which the Moa cave is situated. When passing through the forest between Raraoraro and Rotomarama, we were overtaken by a native driving a pig. We knew him to be partial to Europeans because he had a gun-swivel hung from a hole in his right ear, as an ornament, and he had on his feet a pair of blucher boots, which from their dilapidated condition, were evidently worn more for ornament than use. After keeping up with him for some time, chiefly to admire how he got his pig through a most intricate path in the wood, the animal appearing to understand perfectly what he said, we entered to a conversation about the price of his pig; we asked him if he knew any caves near his village, which contained Moa bones. This question made him stop and turn around and look at us all. It would be something like asking a pig driver near a quarry in Tilgate Forest in Sussex if he had ever heard of the *Iguanodon Hylaeosaurus*, and other stupendous creature known to us chiefly by the industry of Dr. Mantell. The English pig-driver would likely infer that the querist had escaped from the madhouse, because he was asking things which he had never heard of, but not so with the New Zealander, acquainted with every tree in the forest and every insect on the ground: he at once comprehended the question and replied, of the largest birds had a bone like a humerus. I will show you a cave which contains Moa bones for two sticks of tobacco.

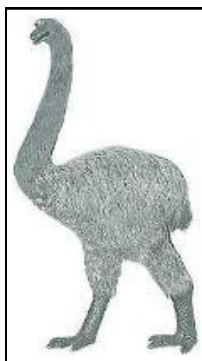
The day after our arrival at the village of Rotomarama was Sunday and one of our party went to prayers with the natives. In the evening our tent party was filled with visitors, and early on Monday morning we started for Manea, where we breakfasted.

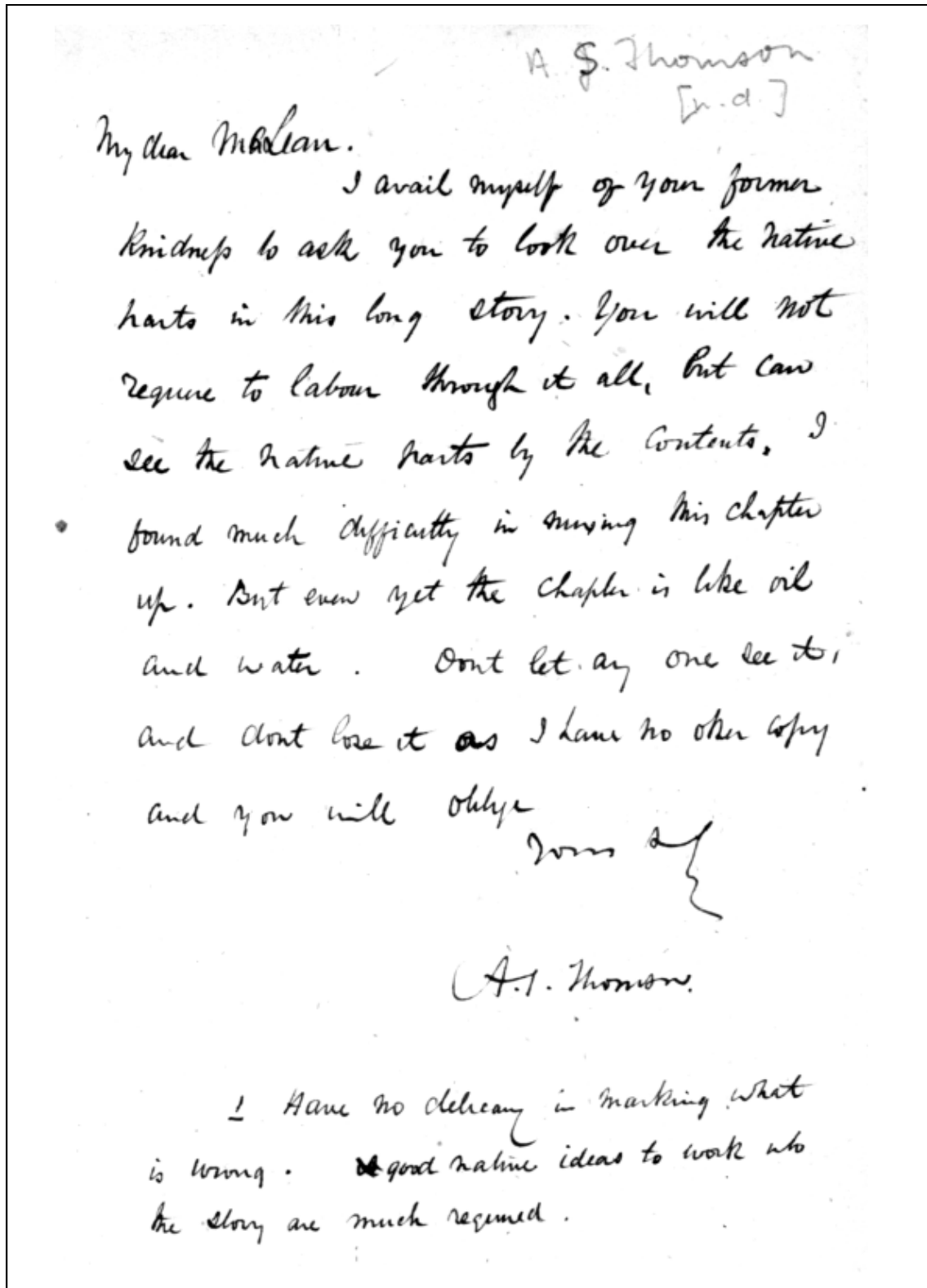
General description of the Country where the Caves are found. Description of the cave called by the New Zealanders, 'Te Anaotemoa,' or the Cave of the Moa: This cave is situated near the summit of a small hill, about a mile and a half in a south-westerly direction from the village of Parianiwaniwa. The settlement is seventeen miles from Honi-Paka, a place on the Waipa River. The country in the neighbourhood of Parianiwaniwa is about a thousand feet above the level of the sea. Parianiwaniwa signifies, in the Maori language, 'the precipice above the rainbow.' The cave of the Moa is in a limestone hill, with two openings, one towards the North-East, and the other towards the South-West. The North-East opening has evidently resulted from the falling in of the roof, and is apparently of a recent occurrence; the South-West entrance is fourteen feet high, and ten feet broad, and covered over with trees and bushes, which we had to break down before we got an entrance. The cave is 165 feet long, the greatest breadth 28 feet, and the height 60 feet.

The roof is oval and numerous stalactites drop gracefully from it, giving a cathedral-like effect to the whole. The cave is something in the form of a crescent; one part of the floor is covered over with calcareous spar; another part with a large deposit of soft stalagmites; and that part of the floor farthest distance from the South-West opening, is covered with earth, limestone's and mud, which appear to have fallen down when the roof of the cave gave way, which now forms the North-West opening.

It is under the earth, and the soft deposit of carbonate of lime, that the Moa's bones are found. At the South-West entrance there is a mound of earth which has either fallen down from the roof, or been washed in. The air of the cave is colder than the atmosphere, and the bottom of the floor descends as you proceed from this entrance. There was not much dropping of water from the roof when we were there, but this must have produced the large deposit of soft limestone which we saw in some places. The limestone in the cave is of a dark colour, and there is a shallow pool of water in one of the side galleries. All the bones we got were obtained from under the earth, which had fallen down and partially imbedded them in the soft limestone; but it would requires several days' labour of a number of men to clear out the bottom of this cave properly, in order to see what bones it contains, but so far as we saw there were no bones of men, or other animals (except Moa's) in it; nor any marks of fire, sculpture, nor any figures of any description on the walls of the cave.

It is evident that this cave has long been known to the New Zealanders; the very name 'the cave of the Moa,' suggests to the mind the question, was that the name given to it because Moa lived in it, or because it contained large quantities of Moa's bones? My own opinion is that it derived its name from the latter circumstances; for we were told on our first visit that the Maoris were in the habit of resorting to this cave to procure the skulls of the Moas, to keep the powder for tattooing. We only got four skulls in this cave, and the scarcity of them was accounted for by their use in former days as powder-holders. There was nothing to lead us to think that these bones had been deposited by water for we found a remnant of almost every bone in the body, from the spine and the rings of the trachea down to the last bones of the toes; the bones belonged both to the largest and also the smaller species of Moa's. The animals evidently came into this cave to die. The cave, in the first instance was probably a fissure in the stone, but from the appearance of the walls, and from there being numerous small cavities communicating with each other, I think its formation may have been assisted by the erosion of water. The bones we got in this cave had the appearance of having been exposed to air; some of them were encrusted with limestone, and in some of them the cancellated structure was filled with earth and carbonate of lime; some of the bones had a more recent-like appearance than others, and the perfect edges of some of the delicate processes showed that they had been exposed to little rolling: there were a few long bones in the cave; and on asking what had become of them, we were told that they had been taken away to be made into fish-hooks of, such being the practice in former times, before the introduction of iron. A sketch of this cave accompanies this paper (Plate11)





My dear McLean,

I avail myself of your former kindness to ask you to look over the Native parts in this long story. You will not require to labour through it all, but can see the Native parts by the contents. I found much difficulty in mixing this chapter up, but even yet the chapter is like oil and water. Don't let any one see it, and don't lose it as I have no other copy and you will oblige. Have no delicacy in marking what is wrong. Good native ideas to work into the story are much required.

Yours etc,

A. S. Thomson. [His own hand writing.]

Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library.

Object #1022499 from MS-Papers-0032-0603

'So far as I can learn, smallpox has never made its appearance in this island; and to prevent its ravages amongst the natives, should we ever be visited by this disease, I have at various times vaccinated many of them, and within the last two months have vaccinated 464; and my good friend Dr. Thomson, surgeon of the 58th reg., quartered here, informs me that during his late visit to the interior of the island he has vaccinated many of them.'

William Davis. Colonial Surgeon. Provincial Govt. Papers page 30 1848.

Daily incidents in the life of Dr. Arthur Thomson.

Daily Southern Cross 12th May 1857

Daniel Davis sworn, saith: - I am Corporal of the band of 58th Regt. I saw deceased last alive last night about twelve o'clock. He was then in a state of intoxication. I went into the band room this morning about four o'clock. I then thought the deceased was asleep, when Private Kearns told me he was stiff. I got out of bed, and finding he was dead, I gave the alarm. Dr. Thomson was sent for, and came immediately. He was turned partly on his right side. His handkerchief was quite tightly round his neck, and we removed it; his face and head were on the pillow. He was more on his face than on his back.

Deceased was Band Sergeant of 58th Reg.

Arthur S. Thomson; M.D., sworn, saith-

I am surgeon 58th Regt. Deceased has been in hospital twice during the course of the last year, labouring under delirium tremens, the effect of drink. I have made a post mortem examination of the body, and found about 4 ounces of blood and water effused on the base of the brain, which was the immediate cause of death - and therefore I am certain he died from apoplexy. There are no external marks of injury about the body.

Verdict - Died of Apoplexy [*Stroke.*]

Daily Southern Cross

12th March 1850.

Yesterday morning, Captain Winter, of the schooner 'Eagle', charged with stabbing Alexander White, able seaman of that vessel, was brought up for final examination, and committed to take his trial at the next sessions of our Supreme Court. White is still a patient at the Military Hospital, where he has experienced the unremitting attention of doctors Thomson, Philson, and Mahon. We are happy to understand that his wounds may now be considered as beyond danger.

Daily Southern Cross 25th October 1851,

Sir,- 'Scylurus' seems very anxious to prevent Dr. Thomson having a vote at the Municipal Election, and is very angry with me because I regard that gentleman as equally qualified as myself (who am no officer of any kind) to be on the Burgess Roll. The principal on which the military gentleman, residing out of garrison, have that right is simple and clear. They live in houses which are liable to taxation, and there is no just reason why the tyrannical infliction of 'taxation without representation' should be imposed upon them. If there could be any doubt as to the intention of the Charter on the point, it would be removed by the 29th clause, which distinctly recognises Officers of the Army of Navy as eligible to hold seats in the Common Council, the only difference being, that they, with some other classes are exempt from obligation to serve, unless they are willing. The following is the clause to which I refer, which I regard as conclusive on the subject:-

'29. Provided always, that no Member of the General or Provincial Legislature, no Officer in Her Majesty's Army of Navy, or Marine Forces on full pay, and no Judge, Clergyman, Priest or regular Minister of Religion, shall be liable to serve the office of Common Councillor without his own consent.'

I am, Sir, yours, etc,

A BURGESS OF THE MIDDLE WARD

Friday, Oct. 24, 1851

Dear Mr. McLean,

I had walked home before I perceived the full beauty of the speech the Native delivered when he threw at your feet the greenstone on the completion of your purchasing the middle island. Perhaps you will kindly make Master Fulloon copy the speech out for me as I have a place for it.

Yours truly,
A.S. Thomson.

Alexander Turnbull Library Object #1009971 from MS-Papers-0032-06032-0603
2 pages written by Arthur Saunders Thomson to Sir Donald McLean

GENERAL ORDER 148

13th August 1858.

Instructions having been received from the Home Authorities for the 58th Regiment to proceed to England without relief, the Officer commanding the troops in New Zealand will take the necessary steps for procuring tonnage for the Conveyance of the Regiment to such port as may be intimidated in the orders transmitted to him from home.

The 58th has been stationed in this command for the lengthened term of 15 years during which it has been associated to some extent with almost every one of the Australian Colonies. The longest period of its service here has, however, been in New Zealand, in which Colony it has borne a most important and conspicuous part. The fidelity with which it performed its arduous duties in that country during an eventful period and the benefits which accrued to the Colonies, in consequence, are matters of history and have been rendered the connection of the 58th Regiment with New Zealand one which will be recorded to its honour in the annals of the Corps. The high state of discipline for which it has always and so deservedly been celebrated, calls for the Major General commanding the expression of his best thanks to all ranks. While bidding them farewell and expressing his heart felt conviction that they will continue to perform their duties as British Soldiers should, Major General Macarthur gladly avails himself of the opportunity now afforded him of congratulating Colonel Wynyard, the Officers, Non-Commission-Officers and men of the 58th Regiment on the testimony borne by all classes of the community in New Zealand to their uniform good conduct and their constant desire by every means to contribute to the general interests of their Civil brethren.

The Major General feels it is unnecessary for him to do more than to record his appreciation of the able and efficient manner in which Colonel Wynyard, C.B. has administered the command of the troops in New Zealand, for his valuable services in this position have already been frequently recognized by the highest authorities in England.

By Command,
Signed (Sgd.) J. M. B. Neill
Lt. Colonel, S.A.G.

DEPARTURE OF THE 58th

Southern Cross Friday November 19th 1858

The 58th embarked on board the Mary Ann on Wednesday for Portsmouth. We spoke of them some days back as the Regiment which for steadiness and respectability was not surpassed in the Service; and the men of the 58th though leaving old friends and old comrades behind them, kept up their characters in this respects, to the last. We wish them a good voyage.

WILL
OF
DR ARTHUR SAUNDERS THOMSON

A.

This is the last Will and Testament of Arthur Saunders Thomson M.D. Surgeon 58th Rgt. at present stationed in New Zealand. I give, devise and bequeath unto my executors and trustees herein after named all 'my real and personal estate,' of what nature or kind so ever, within the territory of New Zealand or elsewhere upon trust to sell and absolutely to dispose of my real property within the territory of New Zealand, and also to convert into money such of my personal property as shall not consist of money, and from and out of the proceeds of my said real and personal; estate to invest such sum or sums of money as they think right and for the maintenance education or advancement in the world of my children (by native woman of New Zealand, called Ngāhiraka) called Tommy, Margaret and Mary, to be paid to them, or her, at such times and in such manner as my said executors and trustees may think expedient. The boy Tommy is merely to have his maintenance, education and advancement promoted until he reaches the age of 21 twenty one years, after which he is to have no claim on my real and personal estate.

The sum of thirty pounds I leave to my executors and trustees for the trouble they may have to take, and I in administering my will and testament, and I here express a wish that they will be the guardians of my *half Maori* children and hope they will see that they are properly educated as a Christian duty to orphans. Intended always as I hereby declare it shall be lawful for my said executors and trustees to select such articles of my personal estate for the purpose of remitting the same to my sister Mrs. Middleton of Norwich England.

I hereby appoint Henry Colin Balneavis, Isaac Rhodes Cooper and Donald McLean Executors and Trustees of this my Will and Testament. In testimony whereof I have here unto subscribed my name and affixed my seal.

A.S. Thomson *[signed]*

Signed sealed published and declared by the said Arthur Saunders Thomson as for his last will and testament in the presence of and the presence of each other here present subscribed our names as witnesses to the words of 'my real and personal estate,' having been previously been written between the third and fifth lines this 10th November 1858.

A.S. Thomson *[signed]*

Witnesses }	B. Sydd Staff Surgeon 2 Class
	E. Marshall Asst. Surgeon 58 th Regt.
	David Parkes Hosp. Srgt. 58 th Regt.

A.

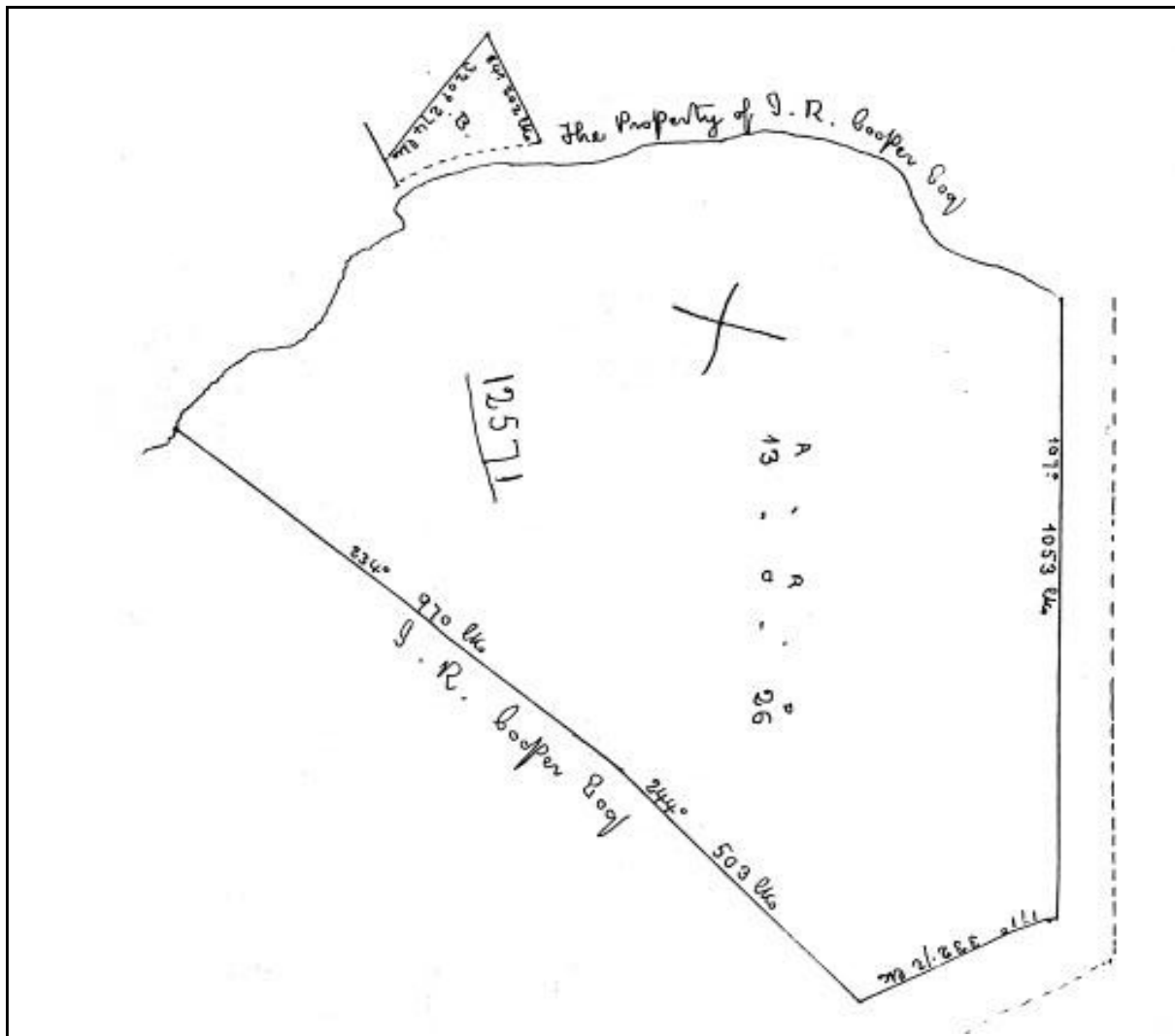
This is the last will and Testament of Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r at present Residing in New Zealand.
I Give, devise and bequeath unto my Executors and Trustees hereinafter named all "my real and personal estate" of what nature or kind soever, within the territory of New Zealand ^{a decree} before trusts to sell and absolutely to dispose of my real property within the territory of New Zealand, and also to convert into money such of my personal property as shall not consist of money, and from and out of the proceeds of my said real and personal estate to invest such sum or sums of money as they think right for the maintenance, Education and advancement in the world of my children (by a half caste Native woman of New Zealand called Ngahinika) called Tommy, Margaret and Mary to be paid to them or her at such times and in such manner as my said Executors and Trustees may think expedient. The boy Tommy is merely to have his maintenance, education and advancement provided until he reaches the age of ~~20~~ twenty one years, after which he is to have no claim on my real and personal estate
The sum of thirty pounds I leave to my Executors and Trustees for the trouble they may have to take in administering my will and Testament, and I here express a wish that they will be the guardians of my half caste children and hope they will see that they are properly educated as a Christian duty to orphans
Witnessed always and I hereby declare it shall be lawful for my said Executors and Trustees to select such articles of my personal estate for the purpose of sending the same to my sister Mrs Middleton at Newcastle England
I hereby appoint Henry Colin Balcanquhall Isaac Rhodes Cooper and Donald MacLean Executors and Trustees of this my will and Testament. In testimony whereof I have hereunto subscribed my name and affixed my seal
A.S. Thomson
Signed sealed published and declared by the said Arthur Saunders Thomson as per his last will and Testament in the presence of us who in his presence and in the presence of each other have hereunto subscribed our names as witnesses to the words of "my real and personal estate" having been previously written between the points as third and fifth lines this 10th November 1858
A.S. Thomson Witnesses { B. Jephson Esq^r, J. C. Jephson Esq^r, E. J. Macdonald Esq^r, D. J. Macdonald Esq^r

This is the paper containing the will of the deceased of the said Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r and the same was read and approved by the said witnesses and the said executor and trustee of the said will and testament of the said Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r on the 10th day of Novr 1858.

This is the paper containing the will of the deceased of the said Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r and the same was read and approved by the said witnesses and the said executor and trustee of the said will and testament of the said Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r on the 10th day of Novr 1858.

This is the paper containing the will of the deceased of the said Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r and the same was read and approved by the said witnesses and the said executor and trustee of the said will and testament of the said Arthur Saunders Thomson Esq^r on the 10th day of Novr 1858.

Arthur Saunders Thomson's Will.
Courtesy of Stue Wylds.



Doctor Thomson's property at Stokes Point Northcote, near where the harbour bridge ends on the north shore of the Waitamata harbour in Auckland. His neighbour Major Isaac Rhodes Cooper (one of the Executors) first lived on the adjoining property, until he moved to Orewa with his Maori wife. He and Dr. Thomson purchased all of Orewa beach between them.

From the list of properties Dr. Thomson left to Ngāhiraka in his Will and the advertised here, one can see that Ngāhiraka was left a wealthy woman, but much would have been used by her Executors to raise her children. The doctor and his family probably lived in the comfortable four roomed cottage at Stokes Point, near present day Church Street, Northcote, on the North Shore of Waitamata Harbour in Auckland. The grounds were laid out with ornamental shrubberies and fruit trees. It was a short steamer trip to the city.

Their neighbour, Major Isaac Rhodes Cooper (one of the Executors) first lived on an adjoining property, until he moved to Orewa. Another neighbour was James Reed and family. Ngāhiraka married their son John Reed, 2nd December 1862, also of Stokes Point, after the death of Dr. Thomson. They probably remained to take care of the property until it was sold, they moved into a whare on the Reed property, until John died. Other of the doctor's properties were put on the market two weeks after their marriage.

The Southern Cross 15th Dec 1862 Real Estate
£2,100 WORTH OF REAL ESTATE WITHOUT RESERVE.
 Executors of the late Dr. Thomson, to sell in ONE LOT.

THURSDAY Oct 26 1865
BY ORDER OF THE EXECUTORS OF THE LATE DR.THOMSON

STOKES POINT, HOT SPRINGS, HUNUA, MAUNGATAWHIRI, WAIUKU,
PAPAKURA, COROMANDEL

The subscriber has been instructed to sell, at the Land Mart, Fort-street, on Thursday next,
26th instant, at 12 o'clock.

15 VALUABLE BUILDING LOTS, belonging to the estate of the late Dr. THOMSON,
adjoining Mr Callan's, Township of North Auckland and **Stokes Point**,
to which the steamer runs daily.

On one allotment is a Comfortable Four-roomed COTTAGE, and the whole of the grounds
are well laid out with ornamental shrubbery and fruit trees.

Also,

Lots Nos. 9 and 12, Spring Street, Ponsonby Road.

Lot No. 63 Parish of Waiwera; containing 88 Acres (adjoining Mr. Anderson's property),
And 395 Acres in the same Parish, of valuable Kauri and Bush Land.

Lots Nos. 200 and 202, Parish of Hunua; containing 206 acres.

Lot No. 42, Parish of Mangatawhiri; containing 143 ACRES.

An Allotment containing 7 acres 1 rood and 4 perches in the Parish of Waiuku.

Lots 18 and 30, Village of Papakura

WYNYARDTON, COROMANDEL.

Lots Nos. 5 and 6, of Section 1.

Lots Nos. 11, 12, and 13, of Section 40.

Lots Nos. 3, 4 and 5 of Section 44.

SAMUEL COCHRANE, AUCTIONEER

* A Rood is an English unit of area equal to one quarter of an acre or 10,890 square feet.

The Customs receipts, during last week, amounted to £835 17s 11d.

Yesterday Mr. S. Cochrane, under instructions received from the executors of the late
Dr. Thomson, disposed of the interest - one half - in the properties mentioned below:
No.1. -39 acres in section 23, Orewa, Puriri and bush land, bounded by Nukunuea
Creek;

No.2. - 100 acres, section 20, Orewa, good level land, cultivated and in grass, with a
good bush; divided into three paddocks and fenced; house, garden, cowshed, stockyards;

No.3. -100 acres, section 21, Orewa, half under cultivation; two paddocks fenced and in
grass;

No.4. - 139 acres, section 66 Orewa, partly in grass and clover; bounded by the river
Orewa, and a creek;

No.5. - 84 acres, section 109, Orewa, partly hill land;

No.6. -88 acres, section 66, Orewa, partly hill land;

No.7. -108 acres, section 21 Takapuna, one mile and a half from Stokes Point, bush land,
well watered: sold in one lot for £450.

The private property of the late Dr. Thomson was then offered, but the first two lots
were not sold;

No. 3. 21 acres, section 12, Takapuna, half a mile from ferry at Stokes Point, fetched £4
10s per acre;

Nos. 4-6 acres, 2 roods, 30 perches,

No. 11, section 9, Howick, bounded on two sides by a road, £5 10s per acre.

Daily Southern Cross. 24th October 1865. Paperspast

THE LATE DR. THOMSON
The New Zealander,
4th May, 1861. Pages 6 & 7.

The news of the sudden death, in China, of Dr. Thomson, formerly of the 58th Regiment, and lately among us, will strike a sorrowful chord in the breasts of many in New Zealand. Friends who fondly anticipated his return, those who knew him as a kindly-hearted and estimable man, and those who only regarded him in a more public capacity, as one who felt and practically showed his deep interest in the welfare of the colony- whose talents and researches were devoted to the development of its resources, will all, though in different degrees, regret his premature loss. Perhaps it may be permitted to one, who shared during many years his friendship, and who passed many happy, and, it is hoped, useful hours in his society, to write a short tribute to his memory.

Dr. Thomson, during his twelve years residence in this colony, employed all his available leisure in frequent excursions into the interior, and to the different settlements, and in constant observation of the natural, aboriginal, and colonial conditions of the country. He occasionally wrote papers, which have been published in the Parliamentary Blue Books in England, relating to the climate of these islands, and to the state of the native race. These papers are universally acknowledged to be interesting and valuable contributions to science. His paper on the climate of New Zealand, written more than ten years ago, has excited notice far and wide, and has induced many emigrants from England and India to find comfort, and often restored health in this colony. Scarcely a book of review has been written in the last ten years, about New Zealand, which does not refer to, and largely quote from, the contents of that paper.

Dr. Thomson's wish ever since his departure has been to return and take up his permanent abode in the Province of Auckland. Two years more, and he would have been able, by his retirement from the army on full pay, to gratify his wish.

*A brief extract from a private letter written by him, '50 miles from Peking,' in September last, only a month or so before his death, to a friend in Auckland [*Ngāhiraka*] show, with almost a prophetic apprehension on his part, of the disappointment and earnest longing of his desire. He writes, 'Don't you go out of Auckland. I have not lost a bit of my wish to die in New Zealand, although many new names are in the papers and I have been nearly two years away. Give my regards to anyone I know. What I would give for an hour on the Waitamata!'

Deo aliter visum est. [*It seemed the gods have different plans.*] He who penned these last words to his Auckland friends, died far, far away from their sight, and his form mingles with a strange dust in a strange land, but his memory will long be cherished near that Waitamata, which he loved so well and fondly wished to see again.

* This private letter was most likely to Ngāhiraka, a Maori girl he discreetly had a liaison with and explains her reluctance to later move to Gisborne with Joseph Kennedy.

Far away from his home and those he loved, Surgeon Major Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson was buried with honour and respect by his Regiment. There was much sadness amongst his army colleagues and his friends in the colony. His death was a great loss to this country and his family, but he left an historical legacy his descendants can be proud of. There is no sign of his resting place, which is now a large apartment building. His family in England were heartbroken at the loss of their beloved son. They erected a headstone as a memorial in Edinburgh.

LET THIS STONE BE HELD FOR EVER SACRED
IN MEMORY OF
MARGARET SAUNDERS
THE AFFECTIONATE AND BELOVED
WIFE OF
JAMES THOMSON OF GLENDOURAN
LANARKSHIRE
WHO DIED 31st JANUARY 1844
Aged 56.

AND JAMES THEIR SON
BORN 1st AUG. 1815 DIED DEC. 1853

JAMES THOMSON OF GLENDOURAN
LANARKSHIRE
DIED 5th MARCH 1872

AND
CATHERINE BAILLIE MACKINTOSH
HIS WIFE

ARTHUR SAUNDERS THOMSON M.D.
SURGEON MAJOR IN H.M. ARMY
HAVING SERVED TWENTY TWO YEARS IN INDIA NEW ZEALAND AND
CHINA,
WITH THE HIGHEST APPROPRIATION OF ALL THE MILITARY AUTHORITIES,
AND HAVING GAINED

A DISTINGUISHED LITERARY NAME BY HIS STORY OF NEW ZEALAND

Ngāhiraka's 1st 'husband' was Scottish born Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson. He had served as Principal Medical Officer of the 5th Division of the British Expeditionary Forces in India, where he had contracted an Amoebic parasite, from which he would eventually die. Soon after returning to England from India, he was sent to New Zealand, as Surgeon Major of the 58th Regiment and arrived in Auckland on 23rd January 1848. His Regiment was stationed at Albert Barracks, on the present day Albert Park. Unrest in the Colony had settled and the regiment were not required to be engaged in fighting Maori at that time. His regiment returned to England and then were deployed to Peking, in China, where he died.



Gravestone at St John's Episcopalian Church,
Princess Street, Edinburgh.
Courtesy of Verity Baylis.



Margaret Thomson circa 1878.

1858 - 1892

Courtesy of Verity Baylis

This photograph was possibly taken circa 1878, at about the time of her marriage, aged 22, to John Macaffer, of Gore, on 22nd April 1878. Compare her face shape with that of the young girl sitting on the knee of her Maori aunt (Kateruri/Katarina Takoto) earlier in the book and it is obvious that Margaret is that child.

Arthur Saunders Thomson wrote a Will before he left the Colony, leaving provision for his three young children under the Guardianship of Donald McLean, Isaac Rhodes Cooper and **Colonel Henry Colin Balneavis**. After the untimely death of their father, it appears that she was raised, and educated, by Colonel Balneavis and his wife and judging from the photograph of beautiful Margaret Thomson they did a great job! Col. Balneavis was a highly educated man, as his following bibliography shows and to have been raised in such an environment, with his own four daughters would have given Margaret a good education, a full social life and have a good Christian influence, values important to Dr. Thomson.

COLONEL HENRY COLIN BALNEAVIS.

Circa 1817/1819 - 1876

Soldier, public servant

Photograph by Permission of Alexander Turnbull Library

Ref. BK 34282



After the death of her father, young Margaret was raised in the home of Henry Colin Balneavis. He was born at Ghent, Belgium, probably some time between 1817 and 1819. His birthplace is not altogether surprising, since his father, Lieutenant General Henry Balneavis, a career officer, Peninsular War veteran and colonel commandant of the 65th Regiment, moved his family throughout Europe prior to settling down as governor and commandant of Malta. As a reward for his father's service to the Crown, Henry Colin Balneavis was, on 7 July 1838, granted a commission as ensign in the 58th Regiment, without purchase. It was while serving as adjutant and officer commanding the Light Company of the 58th Regiment that Balneavis came to New Zealand in April 1845 on board the *North Star*. His company had been sent to reinforce New Zealand's meagre Imperial Garrison in its campaign against Hone Heke and Kawiti.

With the exception of Kororareka (Russell), which was sacked before he arrived, Balneavis served in all the engagements of the northern war. At Ohaeawai he led the assault by the 58th Regiment's No 9 Company. At Ruapekapeka he commanded the advance picket and was the first officer to realise that the pa had been abandoned. With the cessation of hostilities in the north, Balneavis was, for a short time, posted to Wellington and then transferred to Wanganui in December 1846. Here he was again employed on active service, scouring the region for the murderers of the Gilfillan family. From Wanganui Balneavis was sent to Riverhead, north-west of Auckland, in command of a small cadre detachment of the 58th Regiment. While at Riverhead Balneavis was noted less for his military prowess than for his intense study of Maori military engineering and his assistance to the civil power. When the 36 gun French corvette *Alcmène* was wrecked on 3 June 1851, at Kaipara, with the loss of 12 lives, Balneavis organised the dispatch and distribution of clothing, food and blankets from the barrack store to the beach, for the survivors. In the same year Balneavis completed construction of a small scale model of Ruapekapeka pa that was exhibited in London at the Great Exhibition and then presented to the United Service Institution Museum.

By 1855 Balneavis was posted to Auckland where his military skills were overshadowed yet again, this time by his musical abilities. He became noted as one of the truly skilled violinists in the sprawling capital. He also became a founding member of the organising committee of the Auckland Choral Society. Around this time Balneavis became involved with the Colonial forces. In October 1856 he was appointed captain and adjutant in the Auckland Militia, and in April 1859 was appointed deputy adjutant general of militia and volunteers in New Zealand, a post he held until 1865. In April 1860 he also became lieutenant colonel in the Auckland Rifle Volunteers, and in February 1862 he became their commander, until his resignation at the end of the year. There is some doubt as to Balneavis's capacity and efficiency in this position. To his admirers he was a genius who helped to turn raw levies into disciplined troops. To his detractors he was a bumbling administrator who spent too much time worrying over unimportant details, rather than organising an effective defence force.

After his retirement from military service in 1865, he continued to be involved in the colony's affairs, becoming sheriff for the district of Auckland in March 1865 and principal returning officer for the province in 1875, filling both posts capably. He was awarded the New Zealand War Medal in 1876. Balneavis was appointed consular agent for the government of Italy; although largely ceremonial, it was a post he filled successfully. The appointment was probably due to his linguistic skills. Balneavis was regarded as one of the most accomplished linguists in Australasia. He was fluent in English, Arabic, Maltese, French, Italian and Maori. He could also converse in Greek, German and Spanish. Balneavis was an active Mason of the Irish Constitution, and an active parishioner of St. Stephen's Anglican Chapel in Parnell; he was buried in its graveyard after his death on 26 August 1876.

GARRY JAMES CLAYTON

From the Dictionary Of New Zealand Biography.

Choral Society.

Patron Governor Browne

Vice - Judge Arney

Conductor - Joseph Brown

* Leader of the orchestra - Col. Balneavis

Pianist - J. Fleetwood

Secretary - G.K. Turton

Treasurer - J.M. Clark

Librarian - C. Sanderson (Charles my great, great grandfather. Jill Kemp)

Chapman's Almanac 1861

'Joseph Brown, Colonel Balneavis, Mr Davis and Judge Fenton can truly be called 'the fathers of music in Auckland.' Concerts were for honorary members of the Society only - not public concerts. They always gave a free repeat performance of the Messiah.' Auckland Choral Society Centennial publication.

Band Fund

His Honor

No. 225 . Colonial Forces.

The Superintendent Deputy Adjutant General's Office
Auckland.

9th April 1862

Sir,

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your Honor's letter, of the 4th April, enclosing copies of two Resolutions passed by the Auckland Provincial Council, recording their sense of the patriotism of the Volunteers for having performed the Garrison Duties to enable the Military to make Roads, and requesting your Honor to place £100 on the Estimates for discharging the liabilities of the Band Fund, to which your Honor has been good enough to express your concurrence. I have on behalf of the Auckland Rifle Volunteers, and the Auckland Naval Volunteers, to return their thanks to yourself and the Provincial Council for their kind consideration of their Services, and assistance to the Band Fund.

I have etc.

(Sd) H.C. BALNEAVIS

Deputy Adjutant General of Militia & Volunteers.

Session 14. (Box 13)

TE WHĀNAU A MATARENA Mau

Matarena Waitangi = 2. Com. James Wood	1. Takoto	3. Jock McGregor	4. Paki
1	1 1	1	1
Birth order: *2. Ngāhiraka	1. Kateruri 3. Maupunarua	4. Thomas Henry McGregor	5. Kāwaiho

Explanation as far as can be estimated from death records etc:

Matarena Rangiwhiuiu Waitangi and Chief Takoto, had their 1st child: Kateruri/Katerina.

Matarena and Commander Wood's child: *Ngāhiraka.

Matarena returned to Takoto and had their 2nd child: Maupunarua.

Matarena and Jock McGregor: a son Thomas Henry McGregor. Whangai by Bennett White.

Matarena and Paki's child: Kawaiho.

*Ngāhiraka was related to Rangiharepō of Ngai Tamahaua and her husband Joseph Kennedy, was blood related to Te Kaha.

TE WHĀNAU Ā BALNEAVIS

Meri Makarina Hineiahua = Colonel Henry Colin Balneavis

1	1	1	1	1
Jemima	Louisa	Georgia	Mary	John

The Balneavis family inherited land through Hineīāhua, but did not reside in Whakatōhea.

HINEĪĀHUA'S PARENTS

*Rangihaerepō (Ngai Tamahaua) = Te Kaha (Upokorehe)
1
Meri Makarina Hineāhūa

*Rangihaerepō was one of five Whakatōhea signatories to the treaty of Waitangi
He is also connected to Ngāti Patumoana

Ngāti Patumoana was originally Ngāti Ngahere. But when one of our ancestors, named Hineāhūa, was killed at sea by a marauding war party from Ngāpuhi in the 1820s, our section of the hapū took the name Ngāti Patumoana to commemorate the incident. Meri Makarina Hineāhūa was also named after Hineāhūa, to commemorate that ancestor.

The Maupunaru and Rangiharepō connection to Hineāhua would be a reason for Ngāhiraka's daughter, Margaret Thomson, to be brought up in the Balneavis household after her father's death. Also, Balneavis was an executor of Dr Thomson's Will. The actual relationship of her mother Matarena Waitangi to Meri Makarina Hineāhua is not known to me.

Whakapapa courtesy of Dion Tilley.

In 1858 Balneavis had taken up land at Maraetai, on a section granted him in recognition of his active service in the 58th Regiment. He had married Meri Makarina Hineiahua (related to Ngāhiraka's mother, Matarena) on 8 February 1859 at Auckland; they were to have four daughters and one son.

GARRY JAMES CLAYTON

From the Dictionary Of New Zealand Biography.

After the death of her father, Dr. A.S. Thomson, Margaret Thomson was brought up in the home of Colonel Balneavis (one of the Executors of her father's Will) and his wife, Meri Hineiahau. Margaret's every necessity; board and living expenses, education, music lessons, ball gowns, tutors etc; all generously appointed under the terms of her father, Dr. Thomson's Will and they would have had servants and tutors. The family attended St. Stephen's church on Sunday mornings, the four girls and beautiful young Margaret, primping and giggling in their Sunday best; with a coy look at the eligible young men, no doubt! It must have been a wonderful time, with many evenings gathered around the piano singing, accompanied by Col. Balneavis on his violin, or gathered around the fireside reading and doing needlework; the Charades, games, parties, concerts and family celebrations together, but there was a wistful sadness about Margaret - she missed her mother.

The Colonel and his daughters were in attendance at many elaborate Balls. One such occasion, recorded in the

Daily Southern Cross 25th May 1867,
excerpts of which are recorded here:

'On the anniversary of Her Majesty's birthday, a grand invitation ball was given by His Excellency the Governor, Sir George Grey, K.C.B. at Government House, the arrangements for which were on a scale of munificence befitting the occasion.

It passed off with much éclat and success ...we believe that never before was such a magnificent fete witnessed in Auckland.... the terrace of whole front of the building was covered by a wooden frame 145 feet by 14 feet enclosed in sails...decorated in flags .. the supper room was more richly and profusely decorated amply lighted gas brackets being laced at equidistance along the walls which were hung with rich coloured papering ...luxurious couches, covered with crimson cloth.....a promenade...tea and coffee room...candelabra... suite rooms as retiring rooms.. Quadrille band... ballroom...floral and rustic decorations...the supper room was even more richly and profusely decorated .. vases of flowers.

Almost every ornamentation within the range of culinary art... shortly after eight the carriages (including the Balneavis's) began to enter the grounds in continuous succession and in little more than an hour, nearly all the one thousand persons were assembled, including naval and Military Officers and the elite of the city and out districts.

When the company were assembled, the ballroom presented a coup d'ceil, at once magnificent and imposing. The ladies were richly and elegantly attired and the brilliant uniforms of the naval and military officers heightened the general effect... the gay and animated scene caused the memory to revert to the splendid luxury and elegant hospitality of festivities which take place in the stately homes of England.'

Louisa Balneavis married Miles Reginald Bree, in Dunedin, the son of Rev. Bree from Auckland. They would have all been acquainted and moving in the same social circles, in Auckland, particularly as Reginald Bree was a singer and conductor and the Balneavis family, including Margaret Thomson, who played the organ, were all musical.

MARRIAGE: BREE - BALNEAVIS.

On the 5th November, 1873 at St. Peter's Church, Caversham, Dunedin, by the Rev. Archdeacon Edwards, Miles Reginald, only son of Rev. E.N. Bree of All Saints, Auckland, to Louisa, second daughter of Lieutenant Colonel. H.C. Balneavis, Sheriff of Auckland. And granddaughter of the late Lieutenant General Henry Balneavis, C.M.G. And K.H., Colonel of the 65th Regiment. Papers Past Otago Daily Times. Issue 3668.

Margaret Thomson appears to have accompanied the Colonel's daughter, Louisa, to Dunedin and Gore, as chaperone and companion, when she married, which explains the mystery of how Margaret Thomson ended up marrying a doctor in Gore. Mr. Bree set himself up in business.

S H A N K S A N D B A R R

AUCTIONEERS,

Stock, Wool, Grain, and General
Commission Agents.

Agents for the New Zealand Loan and Mer-
cantile Agency Company, Maitauro, and New
Zealand Insurance Company.

Attend at Wyndham every Wednesday.

Loans negotiated, and liberal
C A S H A D V A N C E S
Made upon Stock, Wool, &c.

R. Bree, Agent, Gore.

The death of Louisa Bree's little baby, recorded below, would have affected Margaret too. Mr. Bree had been influential in promoting Dr. Macaffer, whom he had known in Invercargill, to become the doctor in Gore. Dr. Macaffer also had an interest in music and was a Lay reader in the local Anglican church. It was in the Bree's home that Margaret married Dr. Macaffer. There is no doubt that the talented doctor was the love of her life.

MACAFFER—THOMSON—At Gore, on the 22nd inst., by the Rev. Francis Knowles, John Macaffer, M.B.C.M., Bowmore, Maitauro, to Margaret, daughter of the late Arthur Stanley Thomson, M.D., Staff Surgeon H.M. 58th Regiment.

OBITUARY

Southland Times, 2nd May, 1899

BREE MILES REGINALD

Mr Bree entered on a commercial career early in life, was a member of the Bank of New Zealand staff, then an **accountant** for Murray, Dalgliesh and Co of Invercargill. He moved to Gore to manage the business of Joseph Stock and after two years opened a general store in Main and Mersey Street, then he managed a retail store for McPherson and Co. until 1880. He became a commission agent and land valuer and secured an appointment under the Stock department. But he was most well known for his career as a Mason, at the Southern Cross Lodge, **Invercargill** with **Dr. Macaffer** in 1877. He began the Lodge Harvey in Gore and another in Wyndham and rose to the second highest rank in New Zealand, that of Deputy Grand Master. He was one of the first members of the Southland Hussars; a member of the Cemetery Trust and Domain Board and to him we owe the tasteful way they are both laid out and planted in trees and shrubs. He was a lay reader at Holy Trinity church; was a tenor singer of great talent, until becoming partially deaf. An enthusiastic cricketer, a devoted philatelist and possessed one of the finest stamp collections in the Province. Mr. Bree held many offices of trust as auditor to many of the districts trading companies and public institutions. Esteemed by all for his amiable personal qualities, joviality and good spirits, generous of spirit. He was twice married, his first wife being a daughter of the late Col. Balneavis, with two surviving children, and his second wife, with whom he had 5 young children, was a ward of the late Judge Mansford. He resided in Gore for almost 20 years, a valued member of the district Stock department. He suffered a stroke while giving evidence in the Dunedin Court and died the following week at his home in Milton.

JUSTICE OF THE PEACE:- Dr Macaffer,

of Maitaia Bridge, has been gazetted as a Justice of the Peace for the colony.

30th April 1877 Southland Times Paperspast.

EPISCOPAL CHURCH, GORE

Southland Times 9 Aug 1881 Paperspast.

A parish meeting was held on Friday evening, 5th inst. At the Gore Episcopalian church; ... The church here is very neat, well finished structure and capable of seating 100 persons. Great praise is due to the members, especially the ladies, for the very energetic manner in which they have worked to supply the want which for a long time has been felt in our town. A bell has been promised by a friend in Dunedin, and will shortly be erected out of the proceeds of a concert given for that project.

Through the exertions of Messrs. **Bree [married to Miss Balneavis]** and Peller, who have held a series of concerts for the purpose of defraying the cost of an instrument, a very handsome and powerful **organ** - that is presided over by **Mrs. Macaffer (Ngāhiraka and Dr. A.S. Thomson's daughter.)**.

The framework of a commodious residence for Dr. Macaffer has been erected.

It is fronting the street which leads from the flour mill to the bridge.

Southland Times. Paperspast 1st June 1882

Dr. Macaffer is very ill indeed.

24th Oct 1885 Southland Times

Dr. Macaffer has gone to his long home - peace be with him.

His latter days were not happy.

Southland Times 7th November 1885.

Dr. JOHN HARKNESS MACAFFER

Born 1850 at Island, Scotland.

Died 1885 at Gore, New Zealand.

John Macaffer came from the Western Highlands of Scotland, and after taking his (Medical) Degree in Glasgow, came out in the 'Nelson', as Ship's Surgeon, on her first voyage and arrived in Dunedin on 31st December, 1874. He remained in practice in Mataura for a few years and then, when Gore was surveyed and came into prominence as a junction of the new railway route, he moved there and speedily made a good name for himself. He was the first doctor in that town. He began his practice in Mataura and was the Government Vaccination Officer at one stage; liked and respected, being well educated, a cultured Highland gentleman and a good scholar of Gaelic; musical and popular.

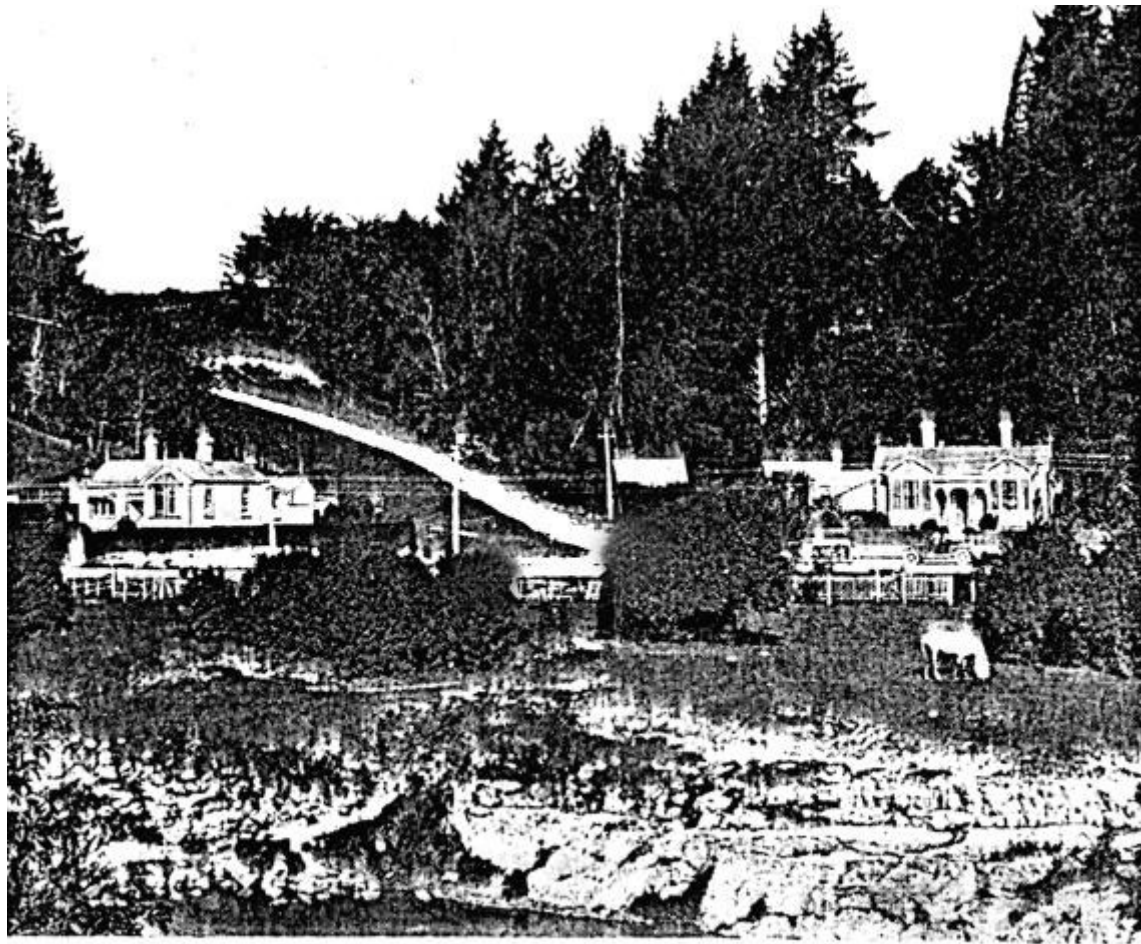
He married, MARGARET THOMSON, daughter of the late Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson, at the home of Mr. Bree, in Gore on 22nd April, 1878. They had four children. After a few years residence there, he died rather suddenly of a painful illness, leaving a widow and four children, one unborn.

John Macaffer's father, Charles, was born in Antwerp in June 1815, while his father, also John, was at Waterloo with the Royal Engineers. Charles eventually went back to Islay in the Western Isles of Scotland and was a Merchant Grocer for 40 years on the island. Charles married Mary Harkness in about 1849/50, which is where the Harkness name came from. The Harkness family have been traced back to the late 1600's.

Medical Practice In Otago And Southland In The Early Years. By R.V. Fulton.



Dr. John Harkness Macaffer.
Courtesy of Verity Baylis.

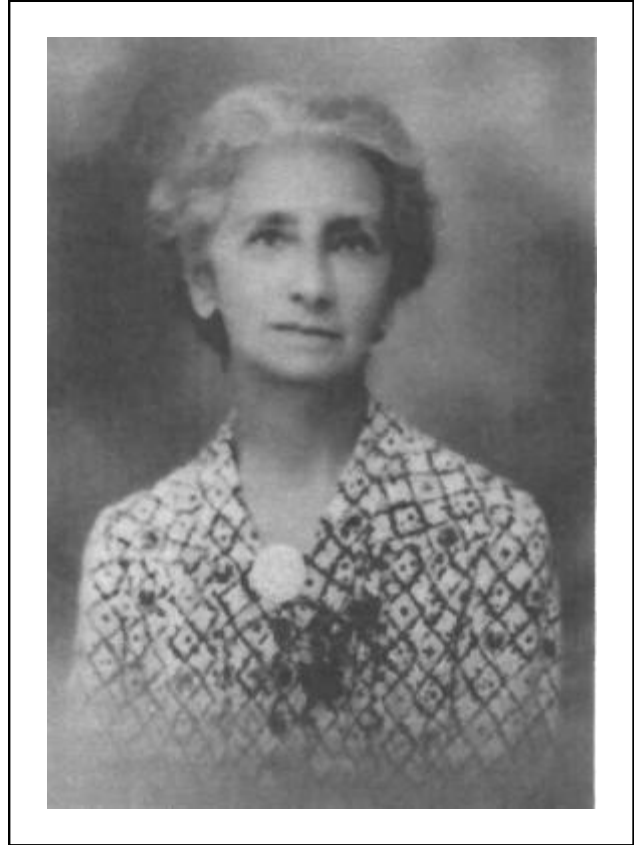


DOCTOR'S HILL, MATAURA.

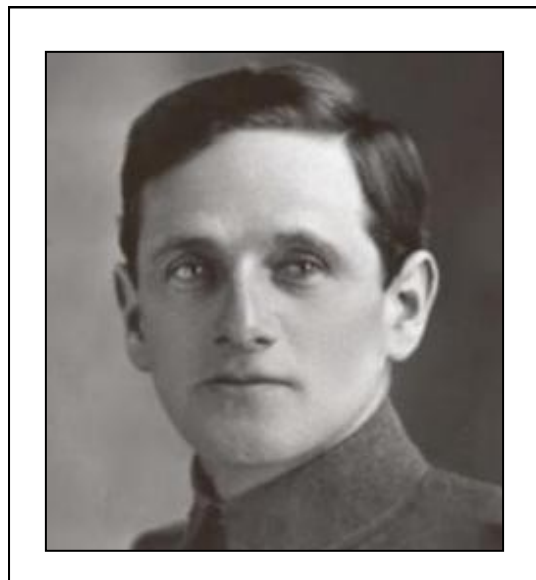
To Arthur C. Henderson,
Registrar of Births, Deaths, and Marriages
for the District of Invercargill, Province Of Otago, New Zealand.

I, JOHN MACAFFER, Bachelor of Medicine,
and Master in Surgery, of the University of Glasgow,
late Resident Medical Officer, City and County Infirmary, Perth.
Assistant in the Dispensary for Diseases of the Ear &c.,
now residing at Mātaura Bridge,
do hereby give notice that I intend to apply to you,
on the 13th day of August 1875,
to have my name placed on the
Register of Medical Practitioners in the Colony of New Zealand;
and I have deposited my diplomas along with this in your office for
public inspection, in terms of The Medical Practitioners Act, 1869.

J. MACAFFER.
Mātaura Bridge,
12th August, 1875.
Southland Times.
Paperspast.



Mary Harkness Macaffer, known as Molly.
Born 1879 in Gore, Died in 1945 at Sydney, Australia.
Courtesy of Verity Baylis.



Charles Thomson Macaffer
Born 22 February, 1883.

Charles Thomson Macaffer. He sustained severe injuries in France in W.W.1 and was transferred to a hospital in London in 1917, but died as a result and is buried in the Military cemetery at Brookwood, in Surrey.

Katrina Ile Macaffer was born on the 14th July, 1884. She took the name Simson and married as Katrina Ile Macaffer Simson in 1908 to Wilfred Beaumont Orr. They had 5 children. Arthur John Macaffer was born on 22 April, 1886, six months after the death of his father. Arthur too was raised as a Simson. Neither brother married.



Ian Simson Simson, Widower.
(2nd husband of Margaret Thomson – Macaffer – Simson)

When Harold was only one year old, his mother Margaret developed a chronic breast infection, which she endured for more than a year. This extremely painful, inflammatory condition, which also affects the lymph nodes under the arm. The patient is unable to lift their arm; sleeping is difficult and if left untreated an abscess forms, with high temperatures and the patient becomes extremely unwell. This is easily treatable with antibiotics today. Sadly, Margaret (Thomson/Mcaffer) Simson died on 26th January 1892, at St Clair, Dunedin, as a result of the infection, leaving a young family without their beautiful mother. Mary was only 13 years old and the other children were very young.

Ngāhiraka's great, great, grand daughter, Joan Julian, recalls sitting on her Grandmother Valentine's knee, as she twirled poi and sang in Maori, just as Ngāhiraka would have done with Margaret.

Verity Baylis writes of the family:

"My mother knew her aunt Valentine Petrie Simson, and called her 'Auntie Valla.' My grandmother was very fond of her sisters, Valla (Simson) and Ile (Macaffer). I have three folders of research notes and records on the family and ancestors of Arthur Saunders Thomson (Surgeon Major 58th Regiment). In his Will he names Ngāhiraka as the mother of his three children, Margaret, Tommy and Mary. She (Ngāhiraka) was also known as "Ngahi."

Ngāhiraka was the daughter of Commander James Wood and Matarena Waitangi, the daughter of a Chief of the Whakatohea tribe. She is said to have been born in 1842, but I believe she was born a couple of years earlier than that, in 1838. James Wood and Matarena are documented in Land records for the Kennedy family. Ngāhiraka married (third marriage) Joseph Bond Kennedy and they had six children. The birthdays of the Kennedy children are recorded in my grandmother's Birthday Book, so she must have known them all and been in regular contact.

Thomas Thomson probably was sent to a church run boarding school in Auckland [St. John's College] after the death of his father. He became a Customs Officer and lived in Fiji many years. After he retired, he came to Sydney and lived in the Darlinghurst area. He died in Kirketon Hospital, 22nd June 1916 and is buried at South Head cemetery in Vacluse. I went there with my brother some time ago. We cleaned the grave which was very overgrown, but his headstone was still quite clear to read when we found it."

NOTES by Verity Baylis, on Valentine Simson.

BIRTH: N.Z. Civil Registration, 18 August, 1888, Gore, New Zealand.
Valentine Petrie Simson was known as 'Valla' to her sisters and family.

MARRIAGE: N.Z. Civil Registration.

15th February, 1911, Gisborne, N.Z.

Valentine Petrie Simson married Frank Bradfield Wylds on the 15th February, 1911 in the Church of the Holy Trinity, Gisborne, New Zealand. She was a spinster, aged 22 years, occupation - Domestic Duties. Birthplace was given as Gore, Southland and her present and usual residence was Gisborne. Her father was named as Ian Simson Simson, Commission Agent and her mother Margaret Simson, maiden surname -Thomson.

Frank Bradfield Wylds was aged 28, a bachelor, occupation - Bank Clerk; birthplace - Palmerston North. Present residence - Gisborne; usual residence - Hawera. Father Alfred Henry Wylds, a Timber Merchant; mother Jeanette Wylds - maiden surname Dorreen.

Witnesses: Ernest Chrisp, Solicitor, Gisborne and Ian Simson Simson, Land Agent, Gisborne. Officiating Minister: L. Dawson Thomas.

DEATH: New Zealand Civil Registration Entry No.88/76.

Details of death certificate as follows:- Valentine Petrie Wylds, Widow, of 229 Pohutukawa Avenue, Ohope, aged 87 years and born on the 18th August, 1888, died on 21st May, 1976 at the Public Hospital Whakatane. She was born in Gore and had lived in New Zealand for 87 years. Her father was Ian Simson and her mother Margaret Simson, maiden surname Thomson. Father's occupation was Commission Agent. Valentine's place of marriage was Gisborne. At the age of 22 years and she married Frank Bradfield Wylds. At the time of her death Valentine had six children living. Males aged 62: 58: 51: and Females 64: 59: 53. She was buried on 25th May, 1976 at Hillcrest, Whakatane.

Margaret died on the 26th January, 1892 in Gore, three days before my grandmother' Mary Harkness Macaffer's 13th birthday, leaving six very young children with Ian Simson Simson. I'm not sure who cared for the children, but I know my grandmother was very unhappy. He moved to the Poverty Bay area and eventually married E. Parker in 1897. They had at least one daughter, Tui Norma Simson - my mother called her 'Auntie Tui' and Valentine Petrie Simson was known as 'Valla.'

My grandmother married (second) Sydney Edgar Martin in 1913 and they moved to Suva, Fiji, where my mother was born in 1914 and her two brothers were born on the other island Vanua Levu, where Grandad was the manager of a Tea Estate at Wainunu. My grandmother died in Sydney in 1945, whilst on a visit to my mother.

MARRIAGES

SIMSON – MACAFFER. On the 18th September 1886, by special licence, by Rev. W. Ronaldson at St. Mary's Church, Mornington, Ian Simson Simson, Auctioneer, Gore, to Margaret relict of the late John Macaffer, M.B. C.M.

Margaret Macaffer married Ian Simson Simson at Dunedin, 18th September 1886

They had two children:

* Valentine Petrie Simson born 18th August 1888

* Harold Ian Simson born 1892



Left: Valentine Petrie
Simson
Courtesy of Verity
Baylis.



Right: Harold Simson.
Barrister and Solicitor,
Auckland.
Courtesy of
Verity Baylis.

MARGARET THOMSON'S WILL.

MARGARET SIMSON - 9th February, 1892 - Will - Court, Invercargill
Probate No.450.

'THIS IS THE LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT OF ME MARGARET SIMSON, Wife of Ian Simson Simson of Gore in the County of Southland, New Zealand, Auctioneer. After payment of all my just debts, funeral and testamentary expenses, I give and bequeath my gold Watch and chain to my Daughter, Mary Macaffer and the gold Watch with the initials C.H.M. thereon and the chain therewith to my Son Charles Thomson Macaffer and all the residue and remainder of my real and personal property whatsoever and wheresoever and of what nature or kind so ever of which I shall be possessed or to which I shall be entitled at the time of my death or over which I now have or hereafter shall have any power of disposition I give devise and bequeath to all my Children in equal shares absolutely. And I direct that in case any of my Children shall die during my lifetime leaving a Child or Children, him, her or them surviving such last mentioned Child or Children shall take the place and share of the deceased parent or parents. I appoint the said Ian Simson Simson and Thomas Thomson of Her Majesty's Customs, Fiji, Executors of this my Will and Trustees for and Guardians of my infant Children. IN WITNESS whereof I have to this my last Will and Testament set my hand this thirty first day of December, one thousand eight hundred and ninety one.

SIGNED and acknowledged by the said Margaret Simson the Testatrix as and for her last Will and Testament MARGARET SIMSON in the presence of us present at the same time who at her request in her presence and in the presence of each other have hereunto subscribed our names as Witnesses.

MARY MOSS - Domestic Servant - GORE.

W. HENDERSON - Solicitor - GORE.

Pre-1900 Probate Indexes for New Zealand:
Courtesy of Verity Baylis.



IN MEMORY
of
JOHN HARKNESS MACAFFER
M.B.C.M.
Died at GORE
OCT 26 1885
AGED 34 YEARS

ALSO
MARGARET SIMSON
WIFE OF IAN SIMSON
DIED JAN 25 1892
AGED 34 YEARS
SO SOON
PASSETH IT AWAY
AND
WE ARE GONE

Macaffer headstone, Gore.

Chapter 13
NGĀHIRAKA and JOHN REED
her second husband
a son of
JAMES REED

Birth name:
MAURICE PHILLPE BEAUFORT de CANILLAC
(Unconfirmed).

His Maori wife EKAUMOENGA
Their life on Sunday Island (Raoul Island).

JOHN REED.

Two years after Dr Thomson died, Ngāhiraka married her neighbour, John Reed, a half European Maori boatman, at St Andrew's Manse, Symonds Street, Auckland, 9th December 1862. On their marriage certificate Ngāhiraka was recorded as being a 'spinster of full age.' The marriage was witnessed by Henry P. More, a local Brick Maker from the North Shore and John's married sister, Sarah Von Sturmer of Coromandel. Here is a confirmation of the fact that Ngāhiraka could not write, she signed her marriage certificate (and later her Will) with an 'X'. Ngāhiraka had a previous liaison with Dr. Thomson and before the doctor died they had three children.

COPY OF REGISTER OF MARRIAGE.

1862. MARRIAGES IN THE DISTRICT OF *Auckland*

When Married and Where.	Names and Surnames.	Age.	Rank or Profession.	Condition.	Name of Officiating Minister (or Registrar).	When Registered.
<i>9th Dec 1862</i> <i>St Andrew's Manse</i> <i>Auckland</i>	<i>John Reed</i> <i>Ngāhiraka</i>	<i>full</i> <i>full</i>	<i>Boatman</i> <i>—</i>	<i>Single</i> <i>Spinster</i>	<i>Dr Thomson</i>	<i>9th Dec 1862</i>

Married after the delivery to me of the Certificate required by the Act of the General Assembly of New Zealand, intituled "The Marriage Act, 1854," by

J. P. More Officiating Minister (or Registrar).

Marriage was solemnized between us, *9 NOV 1862* In the presence of us,

Henry P. More *William M. M. M.*
Sarah Von Sturmer *Coromandel*

I certify that the above is a true copy of the Entry in the Register Book of Marriages kept by me,

Officiating Minister (or Registrar).

A copy of the original Marriage Register 1862
Ngāhiraka (Spinster) and John Reed (Boatman).
Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.

When Dr. Thomson went to China, expecting to return home and retire on a full pension, Ngāhiraka remained at the family home at Stoke's Point, surrounded by their close neighbours, the Reed family, with their twelve children including John, who may well have lent a hand on her farm. John Reed's mother was Maori, she married James **REED** on the 15 April 1846, in Auckland, New Zealand. James Reed was the son of Maurice Philippe de Montboissier of London, whose father fled the French Revolution. James Reed's obituary give a glimpse into his life.

OBITUARY

One of our earliest settlers in the person of James Reed, residing at Stoke's Point, has just passed away at the good old age of 84 years and was buried on Saturday, November 25th, at the North Shore. Mr. Reed settled amongst the Maoris in the early days of the colony, and had a native wife, taken from one of the Northern tribes, several children. The eldest has reached the age of 48 years. In former days Mr. Reed worked the ferry boat between Auckland and Stokes' Point, but from growing infirmities was compelled in late years to resign the post. Many of his children have married amongst European settlers.

Daily Southern Cross 15th December 1876.

NGĀHIRAKA was widowed - the plight of a Half Maori mother.

Ngāhiraka's 1st 'husband' was Scottish born Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson. He had served as Principal Medical Officer of the 5th Division of the British Expeditionary Forces in India, where he had contracted an Amoebic parasite from which he would eventually die. Soon after returning to England from India, he was sent to New Zealand, as Surgeon Major of the 58th Regiment and arrived in Auckland on 23rd January 1848. His Regiment was stationed at Albert Barracks, on the present day Albert Park. Unrest in the Colony had settled and the Regiment were not required to be engaged in fighting Maori at that time. There was little for the doctor to do, except help the poor needing medical treatment; both Maori and European alike. He was careful not to treat those who could afford a doctor, as by doing so he would encroach on the livelihood of other doctors practicing in the young town. He filled in his time researching and writing the first history book of New Zealand, with a particular interest in the Maori race from a medical and scientific point of view. He travelled extensively throughout the North Island of the young Colony, analyzing climate, disease, flora, fauna and living conditions; particularly relating to the health of the indigenous population. He fell in love with the beautiful, unspoiled country, its breath taking scenery and mild climate. In his travels he purchased many plots of prime land, including an idyllic block at Stokes Point, on the North Shore of the beautiful Waitemata harbour which teemed with fish and bird life and was only a short boat ride away from the town opposite. To maintain his house and property, when he was away, he employed the services of two trust worthy, capable, Christian raised, mission-trained Maori girls, Kateruri/Katarina Takoto and her shy, younger, half European sister, Ngāhiraka, whom he fell in love with and had three children. Because of Army rules, the couple were unable to marry until he had fulfilled his Army contract, but lived as husband and wife, discreetly at Stokes Point.

In 1858 orders were received for the doctor's regiment to return to England. Dr. Thomson only had a few short years left to serve in the army, before he could retire on a full pension to their idyll at Stokes Point. He would have arranged for his neighbours, James and Ekaumoenga Reed and their strong, practical son, John, to help Ngāhiraka (Nga) and her sister, Katarina Takoto (Ka), while he was away. He also made an Army Will in which he provided for Ngāhiraka and his three young children, Thomas, Margaret and baby Mary, ensuring that she and their children would be well cared for in the event of his death. Sadly, their baby died soon after he left. He published his book on New Zealand after he returned to England and belatedly included an engraving of his children and their aunt (Ka), taken from a photo of his young family that they had sent to him. His regiment was then deployed to the uprising in China. When he realized he was dying from the Amoeba, which he had contracted many years before, he wrote to Ngāhiraka desiring she remain in Auckland, with their children and not return to her whanau (extended family) in Ōpōtiki.

Soon after news of the death of her 'husband' reached New Zealand, the Executors dutifully removed her two precious, surviving children. Half European/Maori women had no rights in those days. Heartbroken, Ngāhiraka had to leave her home as all of the doctor's extensive land holdings were to be sold in one package, rather than them taking the time to sell them individually; thereby maximising her assets. The Executors were trustworthy, honest men and the doctor's personal friends. It isn't a reflection on their character; they were not trying to defraud her, they simply took the easier option. Her children were placed in "good Christian homes," where they received a excellent education and every expense of raising them, was paid for from the sale of the land, which would have amounted to a "tidy sum"! Removed from her children, home, land and community, Ngāhiraka was in a desperate situation. She turned to her close neighbours and friends, James and Ekaumoenga Reed, who had the perfect solution - marry their bachelor son, John! She would have a home (a whare, or native grass hut) and stay in her community. Very little is known about John Reed, her 2nd husband, except through the life of his parents, who had lived self sufficiently on isolated Sunday (Rauol) Island and where John Reed was born and raised.

JOHN REED was given his licence to run the Stokes Point Ferry in 1854, subsidized by the Auckland Provisional Government. It was an open boat that could carry 20 passengers, with three crew - a sailing and rowing boat. His father, James Reed, was a community minded man, as his home on Stoke's Point was used regularly as a Polling Booth.

COME AND ENJOY YOURSELVES AT STOKE'S POINT
ON MONDAY, 4th JANUARY.

There will be Climbing a Greasy pole for
Leg of Mutton, Running in Sacks, Foot Races, Quoits,
and OTHER Manly Amusements.
A Ball will be held at the Hotel. Dancing to commence at 8 o'clock.

Sadly, John Reed died of Scarlet fever (caught from a ferry passenger, perhaps) at Stokes Point, 1st January 1864, another tragedy in the life of Ngāhiraka, four months pregnant with his child.

Deaths: On January 1st 1864, at Stokes point, North Shore,
Mr John Reed aged 23 years, universally esteemed and regretted.

In consequences of the decease of Mr. John Reed, of Stokes Point, the
BALL, advertised to take place at the North Shore Hotel,
on Monday Evening next, will be
DEFERRED till the evening of MONDAY, the 11th instant.
Daily Southern Cross Volume XX. Issue 2038, 2nd January 1864.

*(Eliza) Mary Reed – born 10th May 1864, at Stokes Point, Northcote, Auckland, 5 months after her father died. She was mentioned in Ngāhiraka's Will and in testimony from her half sister, Harriet Smith, in the Maori Land Court and was known to be in a Gisborne Mental Hospital in 1942, aged circa 78 years. Mary Reed was remembered, amongst family, as having a cheerful, positive with an uplifting nature and was a much loved aunt. It is thought she was an accomplished seamstress. The only known photograph of Mary Reed.



Left: (Eliza) Mary Reed, smoking a pipe. Courtesy of Lyn Chappell.

Right: (Eliza) Mary Reed 1896, at her sister Harriet's wedding. Courtesy Hazel McDonald.

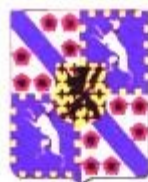
Table 42

Direct descent - King Hugues Capet I

King Hugues "de France" Capet I



Eustache II de Montboissier



Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac

King Hugues "de France" Capet I
m. 968 Adelheid de Poitou

Adele de France
m. 1029 Renaud I de Nevers

Alix ou Adelaide de Nevers
m. Geoffroi II de Semur

Geoffroi III de Semur
m. 1072 Hermengarde de Semur

Raingarde de Semur-en-Auxois
m. 1083 Pierre-Maurice Ier de Montboissier

Eustache Ier de Montboissier
m. Héraclée de Polignac

Héracl Maurice Ier de Montboissier
m. Marguerite d'Oliergues

Eustache II de Montboissier
m. 1226 Marguerite de Meymont

Eustache III de Montboissier
m. bef 13 May 1304 Thiburge Adhémar-de-Monteil

Héraclius II de Montboissier
m. 1307 Agnès de Chastel-Perron

Jean Ier de Montboissier
m. 1340 Jeanne de Flotte

Louis Ier de Montboissier
m. 22 October 1355 Marthe de La Roche de Tournelle

Pierre II de Montboissier
m. 1425 Jeanne de Châtillon-Sur-Marne

Jean III de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 4 July 1459 Isabeau Rogier de Beaufort-Canillac

Jean IV de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 18 August 1483 Marguerite de Vienne-Listenois

Jacques-Louis de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 17 November 1536 Gabrielle-Charlotte de Vienne

Jean V de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 5 July 1562 Jeanne de Maulmont

Jean Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 11 December 1592 Gabrielle de Dienne

Philippe de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 1646 Marie d'Alegre de Beauvoir

Jean Gaspard de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. Marie Claire d'Estaing

Philippe Claude I de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 8 June 1711 Marie Anne Genevieve de Maille Breze

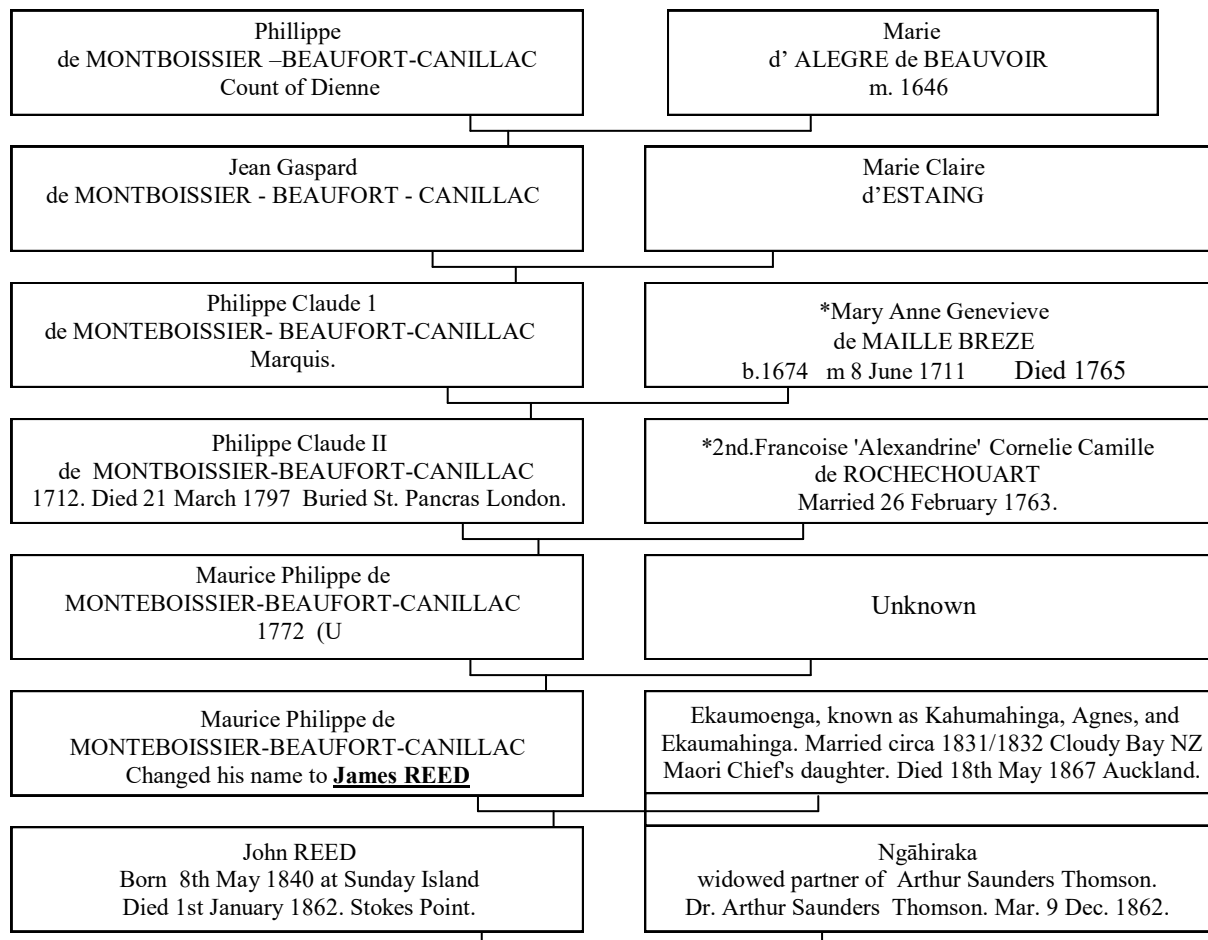
Philippe Claude II de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
m. 26 February 1763 Françoise "Alexandrine" Camille de Rochechquart



Capet 967-1270

JOHN REED's ANCESTRY:

Ngāhiraka's second husband, John Reed, has the most interesting family history. His father, **JAMES REED**'s birth name was Maurice Philippe de MOUNTBOISSIER BEAUFORT de CANILLAC, a descendant of French Aristocrats, eldest son of Count Maurice Phillipe de MOUNTBOISSIER BEAUFORT de CANILLAC, who was compelled to flee France, during the French Revolution. There are no official documents to confirm this.

TRANSLATED from French: ROCHECHOUART-MONTBOISSIER

According to George Martin's 'History and Genealogy of the House ROCHECHOUART' (The Ricamarie, 1990), Françoise Camille de ROCHECHOUART, was born January 23, 1741 in Fort St. Pierre in Martinique, died in Paris January 19th 1829 and was buried in the cemetery Picpus in France. She married at Versailles, February 26, 1763, Claude Philippe, Count of Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac, Lieutenant General of the armies of the King, who was elected on the 26th March 1789, as member of the nobility to the States General, the Seneschal Clermont Ferrand. He emigrated, and died in London in 1797.

Thanks to the painstaking research of the late Ngaire Von Sturmer and Lyn Chappell, John Reed's ancestry can be traced back to the French King, Hugues 968 AD.

A search of the internet found that, the artist, Joseph DUCREUX, was recruited by the Academy of Saint Luc, in 1764, at rue des Saint-Pères, to execute pastel portraits of:

1. Marquis of Montboissier. 1767. Phillipe Claude de Montboissier Beaufort Canillac.
2. Philippe-Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac, comte de Montboissier (1712–1797 lieutenant-général des armées: Ducreux. Born Paris France. Died 21st March 1797 U.K. M. 13 February 1763 to Françoise Alexandrine Cornélie de Rochechouart 1741-1829
3. La comtesse de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac, née Françoise-Alexandre-Camille de Rochechouart (1741–1829): Éc. fr.
4. La vicomtesse de Montboissier, née Marie-Charlotte Boutin: Roslin.

The French region of Auvergne, the old town of Pont-du-Château, lies near a strategic crossroad, connecting Paris to Barcelona and Lyon to Bordeaux. The town's castle was burnt in 1580, following an epidemic of plague and rebuilt in the middle of the 17th century, on the initiative of Guillaume de Montboissier Beaufort-Canillac, Lieutenant General of the army of Italy, in 1654. On returning to Auvergne he was honoured by Louis XIV. With financial help from his friend Mazarin, he built the current castle, with its crowned northern frontage of a terrace, its perron with double revolution; its broad southern terrace which overhangs gardens. 'It is of an approval which one does not see anywhere else,' wrote the Audigier Canon. It is now the Town Hall, in Pont-du-Chateau. Many of the family (the REED' s) ancestors are still buried in the vaults underneath it. The Chateau is also named 'Pont-du-Chateau' (Bridge of the Castle). The family owned much of the town and many other castles over the centuries - but this last one was the one they still owned at the time of the revolution. It had been in the family for three hundred years and was confiscated from the family by the revolutionaries. The Beaufort & Canillac families were merged by the arranged marriage of **Guérine de Canillac** to **Guillaume Rogier de Beaufort** in **1345**. Later the families of **Rogier Beaufort de Canillac** were merged by the arranged marriage of **Isabeau Rogier de Beaufort Canillac** to **Jean de Montboissier** (Jean of Montboissier) in **1459**. The name 'Rogier' was dropped and the family became Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac. Each family had its own Coat of Arms. These were also combined with each marriage to reflect the merging of the three families.

In the north of the city, the park of the Marquis, inspired by the famous landscape designer Ours; basins and valleys of more than 300 meters, aqueducts, thickets, etc. At the same time, between 1765 and 1773, Mr. de Régemorte designed a new stone bridge, built over the Allier river, indestructible, in spite of the spectacular floods, allowing the royal road to continue its route between Lyon and Bordeaux. These images are from Wikipedia:



The town of Pont-du-Châteaux.

Below right: The Church of Pont-du-Châteaux. The Montboissiers were an influential Catholic family. Peter Montboissier, known as 'Peter the Venerable,' was the Abbot of Cluny, for 25 years.



The Castle of Pont-du-Châteaux.

The old castle was burnt down in 1580 following an epidemic of plague. The Castle (current city hall) was rebuilt in the middle of the XVII century Philippe-Claude Montboissier Beaufort Canillac, with his friend Mazarin's financial assistance. The façade was harmoniously redesigned by Philippe-Claude II Montboissier Beaufort Canillac.

Philippe-Claude de Montboissier Beaufort-Canillac himself, after 1750, undertook important installations in his castle: vast stables in the west, sculptures and facings for the northern frontage of the principal masonry and the interior woodworks and paintings of the ceilings, dedicated to Frenchwomen. Generations of family portraits and treasures, collected over hundreds of years, were lost to the family, during the French Revolution. It was mainly Catholics who had to flee from the revolution - though there were some protestants too, depending on their connections to French Royalty. Anyone who was part of, or related to, French royalty were destined for the guillotine. The revolution basically came about because of the misuse of power by the aristocrats.

Most aristocrats became all powerful and misused the power the king gave them by demanding exorbitant taxes and beating or murdering, at will, any poor peasant unable to pay their taxes; husbands could even be killed if they objected to the aristocrats using their wives. The feudal system, as it was called, was rife over the whole country. The Montboissier Beaufort Canillac ceased to exist as a name after the revolution. The family names were combined in this way to show the lineage (or Pedigree) of each family to all who met them. The feudal system meant that all property was inherited by the first born son. Subsequent sons were granted a small allowance and had to go into the Kings armies to survive. Daughters were married off by arranged (contract) marriages (sometimes as young as 13-14 years) to increase the combined families wealth and power. The first born male had to attest to his right to inheritance as the Seigneur (Lord); by proving his heritage. He could also buy another Seignury to add to his properties (or buy a seat in Parliament). This way they controlled vast properties, towns, villages and other wealth. The Revolution wiped this heredity situation out in France, though it still exists to a certain extent in the English Gentry where property and 'Lordships' are concerned.

A Count (*Comte*) was an appointee of the king governing a city and its immediate surroundings, or else a high-ranking official in the king's immediate entourage, the latter called 'palace counts' or 'counts Palatine.'

A Marquis was a count who was also the governor of a 'march,' a region at the boundaries of the kingdom that needed particular protection against foreign incursions. These offices became hereditary and attached to land over the course of time.

Chevaliers: (*Knights*) were a subset of the nobility, which included all titled nobility, members of the orders of knighthood of the king, but also members of families of ancient nobility, even untitled. 'Chevalier' was used to refer to a member of an order, such as the Knights of Saint John (Order of Malta) as well as members of Royal orders. **Philippe-Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac's** nephew, Philippe Maurice François d'Albignac, was a Page in the court of Louis XVI. After the failed escape of the king, in 1791, he emigrated from revolutionary France and joined with his uncle in Trier.

1. Philippe-Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac, Marquis of Montboissier, corporal of the king's armies, named lieutenant-captain the 11th April 1729, brigadier the 20th February 1734 and then lieutenant general, resigned his command of the company in 1754.

2. Philippe-Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac II succeeded the Marquis of Rivière in 1766 and held the commission of Lieutenant-Captain until 1776. He was also **chevalier** of the Orders, General-lieutenant and Governor of Bellegarde; Captain of the Musketeers of the King's Guard Second Company, known as the 'Red Companies' the aristocratic Gendarmes de la Garde, or household troops, of the King of France, and was also known as 'the elderly Marshal, who commanded the Light Brigade.' After the dissolution of the Army of Princes, in November 1792, he was 'Albignac' (responsible for the troops maps) 1793 to 1795, in the regiments of Duke Claude-Antoine –Gabriel de Choiseul and the 62nd Infantry Regiment, the former regiment Salm-Salam, and then in Austrian service.



Uniforms of the Musketeers.

1. 1660 Louis XIV
2. 1727 Louis XV.
3. 1772 Lois XVI.
4. 1772 Louis XVI



Flag of the 1st Company of the Musketeers of the Guard, 1715.

Motto: *Quo ruit et lethum* -
To fall, there is death.

Created in 1622 when Louis XIII furnished a company of light cavalry with muskets. The Musketeers fought in battle both on foot (infantry) and on horseback (cavalry). They formed the royal guard for the king while he was outside of the royal residences. The Musketeers were among the most prestigious of the military companies of the Ancien Régime, and in principle the companies were reserved for nobles. In 1776, the Musketeers were disbanded by Louis XVI, for budgetary reasons. Reformed in 1789, they were disbanded again shortly afterwards.



'Review of Black Musketeers in the plain of Sablons.'

By Robert Paul Ponce Antoine.

Philippe-Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac was Captain of the Musketeers of the King's Guard Second Company, known as the 'Red Companies.'

Uniforms of Musketeers of the Guard, 1660-1814

Translated from French:

Rochechouart - Montboissier.

According to George Martin's 'History and Genealogy of the House ROCHECHOUART' (The Ricamarie, 1990) Françoise Camille de ROCHECHOUART, was born January 23, 1741 in Fort St. Pierre in Martinique and died in Paris January 19, 1829. She was buried in the cemetery at Picpus. Married [*she was his last wife*] at Versailles, February 26, 1763, to Claude Philippe II, Count of MONTBOISSIER-BEAUFORT-CANILLAC, lieutenant general of the armies of the King who was elected, 26 March 1789, as member of the nobility to the States General, the Seneschal Clermont Ferrand. He emigrated [*to England*] and died in London in 1797 and was buried in St. Pancreas church yard.

REF: http://www.archive.org/stream/londonpastpresen03wheauoft/londonpastpresen03wheauoft_djvu.txt



The 'Hardy Tree,' in the old St. Pancras Churchyard.
From St. Pancreas. Old Church. Wikipedia.

In 1866 the newly built Midland Railway cut through St. Pancras churchyard. At that time the novelist Thomas Hardy was a trainee architect employed to relocate graves for the reburial of corpses. However the tombstones around the tree have nothing to do with Hardy's work. They were taken from St. Giles Cemetery and left here in a dome shaped pile. An ash tree seeded itself and grew up through the gravestones, moving them upwards and growing over them as it did so.

The following record, written by his father, was found in a Reed family Bible. 'Maurice Philippe of Montboissier -Beaufort de Canillac, born at Hampstead London, 28th October 1792. Son of Comte (*Count*) Maurice Philippe de Montboissier Beaufort de Canillac, baptised in the Catholic faith. His birth record is also found in Herald's College Register 1793 (# 1115 last entry). Registered by French Aris tocrat, Maurice Philippe de Montboissier de Canillac. 'I certify that **my first child**, Maurice Philippe de Montboissier Beaufort de Canillac was born at Hampstead, in the County of Middlesex, on the twenty eighth day of October last (1792) and baptized the 30th of the same month by Philippe Francoise D'Albignac de Castlenau, Bishop of Angouleme, (now residing in Richmond in Surrey) who, like myself was compelled to quit France by a Decree of Legislative Assembly of that country.'

The fate young Maurice Philippe's (later known as James Reed) parents is unknown. It is assumed that they returned to France at some stage, after his birth and were killed with other exiled nobles, fighting to reclaim their confiscated properties in France. In his parent's absence, young Maurice Philippe was left in the care of a trusted family servant. James later told his children the story of his origins and was apparently well educated, for he taught his children to sing 'Home Sweet Home' in Latin. He said that all he remembered of his family servant, was that he always carried a large black bag, in which James said he brought out his personal linen embroidered with coronets; and which presumably contained his personal papers that the servant had been told to guard.

He was escorted to school daily by his guardian, but at some time he gave his guardian the 'slip,' and ran away to sea, aged 12 - 14 years and stowed away on an English ship, which sailed shortly afterwards. He was found crying when the ship was attacked in the China seas. The captain, realising the boy's extreme youth, took him into his own personal care, tutoring him in English and taught him all he knew about seamanship - which was to become James's life career. The Captain of this ship, more or less adopted the boy, for he gave the boy his own name - James Reed. His parents, and for that matter the servant, must have lived out the remainder of their days searching and grieving for their lost child.

We know little of his many seafaring ventures, except that James Reed was on a 'Man 'o' Wars,' having been a gunner on board the **Triton**, a 28-gun sixth-rate frigate and later he had 'cruised the South pacific in search of Sperm' and was familiar with Raoul Island.

BIOGRAPHY: ON THINGS HISTORICAL, by Pierre.
The History of Raoul Island. Part Two.

Whaling came to the Kermadec Islands in the 1820's, after having been practised in the Australasian waters for some thirty years. Polack reported that thirty ships were visible at one time from L'Esperance Rock in the south of the group. Not many sailors elected to live ashore and no attempt was made to introduce the 'bay' whaling shore establishments that flourished around the New Zealand coastline. The pohutukawa was invaluable for providing firewood for the shipboard processes of rendering down blubber, and the warmer climate and sea temperature at this latitude made the wet work of whaling a lot more pleasant.



The frigate Triton.
Painted by Nicholas Pocock in 1879,
for Vice-Admiral James Gambier.
Showing the Triton in three positions, sailing in a fresh breeze.
National Museum London

A letter from Ngaire Von Sturmer, 23rd August 1984:

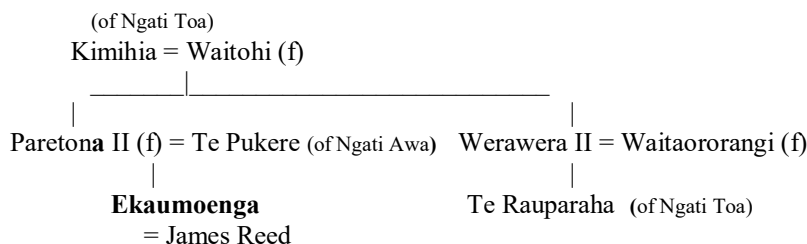
'James Reed worked for two trading firms in Sydney as master on one of their trading vessels. The first were the company of Berry & Wallstone-Craft, and master of one of Captain Randolph Dacre's ships...'

From 1825 to 1831 Captain Dacre traded between Australia and New Zealand, and it was around this time that James Reed first arrived in New Zealand, in the 1830's at about 36 years of age, when he was in charge of the shore whaling-station at Te Awaiti, Cloudy Bay in Queen Charlotte Sound. It was at Cloudy Bay that James Reed met and married a young Maori woman, a Chief's daughter, Ekaumoenga.

EKAUMOENGA'S Whakapapa (ancestry).
The wife of James Reed.

Lyn Chappell, explains that Ekaumoenga's name has been recorded in several different ways; the 'E' in front of the name being a form of address in Maori. Ngaire Von Sturmer's research names her as 'Ekaumoenga.' Joseph Cook, the husband of Eliza Reed, (James and Ekaumoenga's 4th daughter) was informant on some of the family death certificates. On Sarah Von Sturmer's death registration he names her as 'Mahanga,' on James Reed jr's certificate, 'Ekahumaihangā.' Maureen Cooper names her 'Kahumahinga' and on some Tapui records, in Wellington's National Archives, she is known as 'Te Kahumahinga.' Ekaumoenga's parents are named as Te Pukere and Takahui (f). Takahui is the 5th wife of Te Rauparaha, but Maureen Cooper believes that Paretona is Ekaumoenga's mother and has contributed it to the National Archives. Lyn Chappell has unsuccessfully searched for records of Ekaumoenga's father, Te Pukere, reputed to have been of Ngati Awa, in all of Ngati Awa, plus Tuhoe records. 'A small contingent of Ngati Awa left Whakatane for Tauranga, around 1820, then sometime later, a group of Ngati Awa joined up with Te Rauparaha on the Ngati Raukawa and Ngati Toa tribal lands, at Maungatautari Mountain, near Cambridge. They stopped on the way at Okoki Pa in Taranaki, where Ekaumoenga was born circa 1810, then eventually continued south to Wellington.'

Inside the cover of James Reed's Bible, a short family tree has been recorded, giving the Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac family as his fathers family, and also **Paretona** as Ekaumoenga's mother. Paretona was the daughter of Kimihia and Waitohi, and was named after another 'Paretona' of earlier generation. Kimihia and Waitohi are also parents of Werawera (II), father of Te Rauparaha. Te Rauparaha's mother was Parekohatu. Only five feet tall, Te Rauparaha was a fierce warrior and a cannibal, as was his father, Werawera, who was himself killed and eaten. Te Rauparaha's two elder brothers were eaten by the Ngai Tahu, as 'utu,' and all his life, Te Rauparaha had a fear of being eaten, but died, wrapped in his blanket, in his own bed. By the end of his lifetime, through the influence of the missionaries, cannibalism died out.



Ekaumoenga's parentage found in the Auckland Museum Library;
'Whakapapa-Ekaumeonga_source,' reference MS120:

Te Rauparaha and James Reed's wife, Ekaumoenga were first cousins. Ekaumoenga is believed to have been born at Okoki Pa, near Urenui, in Taranaki. Sometime prior to 1826, when she was still very young, her father Te Pukere, was drowned in a river crossing during one of the tribes 'hekes' [*migrate or move*] south. After her father's death, Ekaumoenga and her mother, Paretona, lived for a number of years at around Okoki Pa Urenui, New Plymouth. Her mother died when she was about 16 years old, circa 1826, at Pipitea Pa (now Lampton Quay) Wellington, the tribe's seasonal fishing ground. After her mother's death, Te Rauparaha (being Chief of the tribe, and related) made himself responsible for Ekaumoenga's welfare, giving her away at her first wedding to James Reed and gifting her the dowry of slaves. There is another account where it is quoted that Te Rangihaeata - another cousin of Te Rauparaha, gave her the dowry and gave her away when she married, but this is not born out by Joseph Orchiston, or in letters written by Judge Von Sturmer, now held in Wellington National Archives.

The document reads:

'Kaumoenga came as a mere child with her parents and lived at Pipitea Pa - About 1830 she married Reed, and lived with him at various places, Cloudy Bay, Queen Charlotte Sound - joined a whaling ship 'Cheviot,' and Captain Bateman married them. For a time they lived at Sunday Island, where children born. They returned to N.Z. in 1845 and Rev. Churton married them and christened their children. They then lived at Stokes Point, where Reed and his wife died in Little Shoal Bay, Onepoto which is now Northcote.'



Te Awaiti Whaling station in the Marlborough Sounds.

By William Fox. Jan. 1848.

Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. B-113-015

In the 1820s the local Rangitane tribe were defeated by the Ngāti Toa chief, Te Rauparaha and by 1827, John Guard had established a shore station at Te Awaiti, at the northern end of Cloudy Bay, north of Kaikoura, for harvesting Southern Right whales, encouraged by Te Rauparaha and many Maori worked in them. Some Maori women married Pakeha whalers, establishing a lucrative trade of supplies for muskets, thereby increasing Te Rauparaha's mana and military strength.



Te Rangihaeata



Te Rauparaha

Images of Te Rauparaha and Te Rangihaeata from New Zealand Electronic Text Centre.

*Te Rangihaeata image is from 'The New Zealand Wars: A History of the Maori Campaigns and the Pioneering Period': Volume I (1845–64) by James Cowan.

*Te Rauparaha image is from 'The Southern Districts of New Zealand: a Journal, With Passing Notices of the Customs,' by Edward Shortland.

Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson, Ngāhiraka's first husband, was collecting historic material and old stories from Maori, for his book. Being the next door neighbour of the Reed family, when they lived at Stokes Point, it is from them he would have got a first hand account of the exploits of their relative, Te Rauparaha. Dr. Thomson writes, 'This famous warrior....born between Maungatautari and Kawhia about 1769, fled to the south with his tribe in terror of Hongi in 1822; here he conquered and drove the scattered population away from both sides of the Cook Straits, and purchased fire arms and tobacco, and blankets from the sealers and whalers... Rauparaha was only known by Europeans when contaminated by vices and endowed with few of the virtues of civilisation; he was distinguished for skill, more than bravery in war and success gave to most of his actions the characteristics of genius. No man better knew how to instigate others to desperate deeds, without risking his own life; and such was his cunning, that for fifty years he eluded every danger, and ultimately died in his blanket at home. To rule rather than govern was his ambition; the society of whalers had given him a flattering tongue, and songs are still chanted, showing how well the people knew Rauparaha's whole life was one career of perfidious treachery.'

The Rev. Edward J. Wakefield came out to New Zealand in 1839 and on a visit to the Te Awaitei whaling station, he met Dick Barrett. It was Sunday and some of the whalers were dressed in their Sunday best. Others worked. Wakefield in his narrative wrote: 'A large gang were busy at the try-works, boiling out the oil from a whale lately caught.....The whole ground and beach about here were saturated with oil and the stench of the carcasses and scraps of whale flesh lying about in the Bay was intolerable...'

As the men stoked the furnace and stirred the reeking pots, one of them was asked if they always worked on Sunday? Contemptuously the worker had replied, 'Oh! Sunday. It never comes into this Bay!'

'The workers at these bay-whaling stations were not paid wages, they were paid in slops (loose fitting trousers; ready made clothing), spirits or tobacco. They were a bearded, unkempt mixture of runaway seamen, deserters, or escaped convicts of several nationalities. They could earn the equivalent of £35 wages during the season between May and October, while carpenters, blacksmiths and coopers (barrel-makers) were paid at the higher rate of 10/- a day. The women at Cloudy Bay were from the Maori tribe of Kawhia, those in the Sounds were Ngati-awa. There were twenty five children at the whaling station, all part-Maori.' From 'Whaling In Early New Zealand,' by Anthony G. Flude.



Try pot used at Weller Bros.

(This pot used to sit just inside the upper entrance to Caroline Bay, Otago.
Iron try-pots were used by whalers in the boiling down of blubber to produce whale oil.

Photograph from : <http://www.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nzlscant/queries.htm>

REED'S SLAVES.
A TRUE ROMANCE OF SUNDAY ISLANDS.
THE FIRST FAMILY IN THE KERMADECS.

By J.C.

Auckland Star, May 14 1927

The original story, narrated to James Cowan by Joseph Orchiston, husband of the Reed's grand-daughter, Harriett Annie Von Sturmer, daughter of Sara Von Sturmer, nee Reed, can be found at paperspast. To complete the story, extra illustrations and information have been added, from research done by Ngaire Von Sturmer, Margaret Collins and Lyn Chappell.

'This story of early days in the Kermadec Islands was told to me by an old friend, a man who had seen much of the rough and adventurous life in New Zealand, while we stood on a Wellington street corner the other day. We had been talking of the tragic end of the latest attempt to settle Sunday Island and recalling the many previous efforts to make a living, if not a fortune, out of that enticing, but grievously disappointing, island. Ninety-odd years ago there was a certain sea captain named James Reed, who cruised around the Pacific in an English whaler, in search of the great sperm whale. On one of his voyages he chanced to call at Sunday Island. There was a niche in the cliffs at Denham Bay which passing ships used as a 'Post Office,' and ships often dropped in for wood and water. The inviting appearance of that green-wooded isle of silence and beauty remained in his memory, long after its heights had sunk beneath the horizon astern. About the year 1830, he was in charge of the shore at the famous whaling-station in Te Awaite Bay [Cloudy Bay] at Queen Charlotte Sound, just inside the passage that, in 1839, was named Tory Channel. Reed also visited Kapiti, the island, stronghold of the great cannibal warrior Te Rauparaha and his nephew Lieutenant, Te Rangihaeata. About 1831 or 1832, at one or other of these places, the whale-hunter met a very handsome rangatira (Chiefly) girl, Ekaumoenga, niece to Rangihaeata and Te Rauparaha. The two loved each other and James Reed sought her as his wife, to rove the seas with him, or to set up a home on shore at Te Awaiti onshore whaling-station, Cloudy Bay, Queen Charlotte Sounds, in the South Island of New Zealand....

Ship's captains, in those days had authority to perform marriages; the exact legal right has been a matter of argument, but, anyhow, they did perform the ceremony and both parties regarded themselves as well and truly churched, or next door to it. And the pair of lovers were married by a captain of Reed's acquaintance, Captain Bateman, of the ship Cheviot. However they came up an unexpected problem. Te Rangihaeata insisted that his niece must not go to her pakeha husband barehanded and servant-less. She must have slaves to attend to the necessary house-hold and cultivation duties that are beneath the dignity and the inclinations of a chieftain's family. So he presented the young wife and husband with a dozen slaves, men (and perhaps several women) captured in the wars against the South island tribes. Captain Reed's sails were taken aback by this gift of captive toilers. 'What the devil am I going to do with twelve slaves?' he asked. Then he remembered Sunday island, that Robinson Crusoe, No-man's Land, north away yonder in the sub-tropics. Why not take wife, and retainers to the island, waiting there for the first who would take it and make a home and build a little colony? Capital notion!"

Three children were born to the couple:

*1832 Thomas James Reed born at Cloudy Bay, died on the whaler Seamander, 26/3/1849

1834 George Edward Reed born at Cloudy Bay, Queen Charlotte Sounds, died in 1845, after the family returned to New Zealand in 1845.

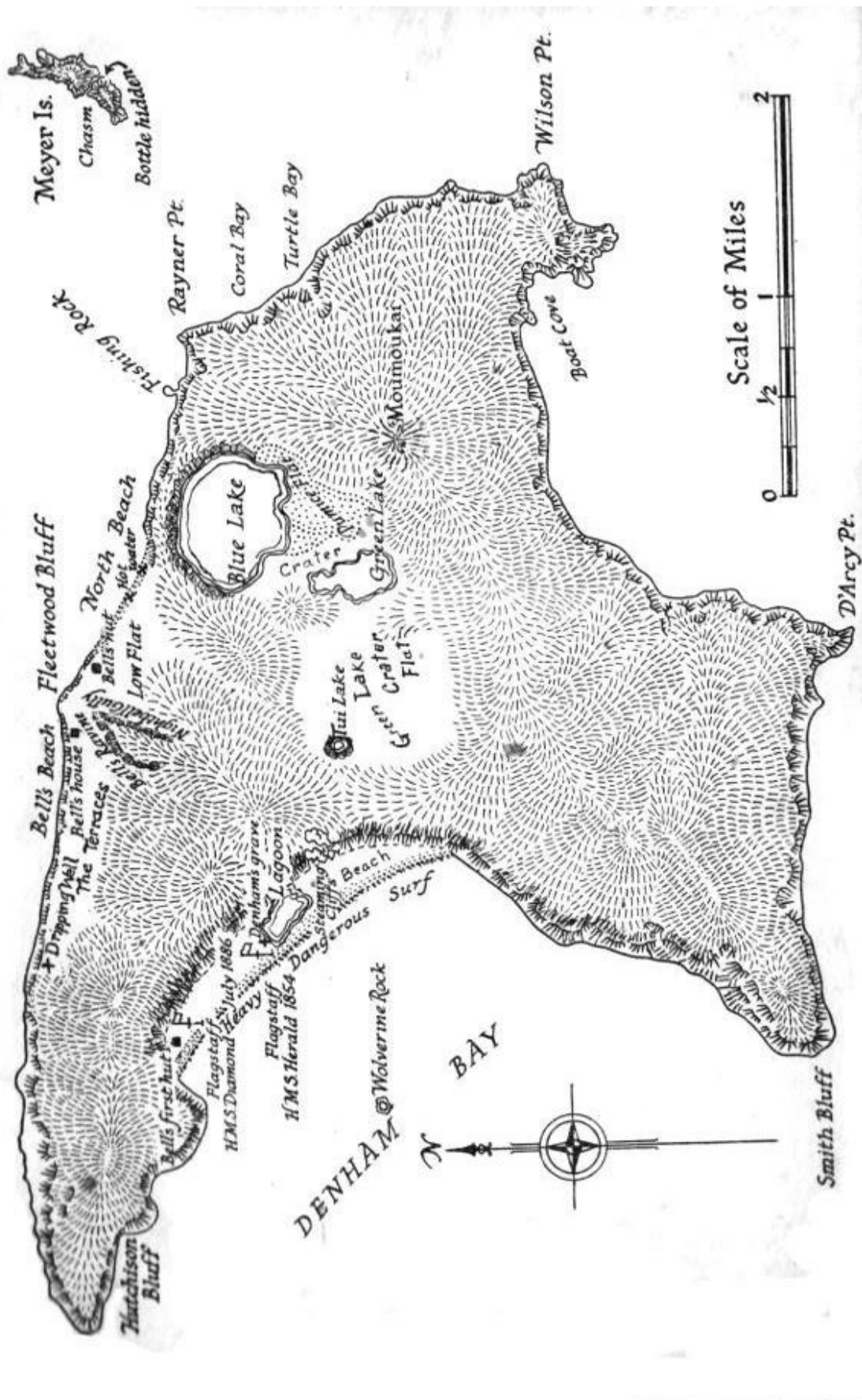
1835 Charlotte Reed born at Cloudy Bay, Queen Charlotte Sounds. Died 5th August 1859, at Northcote, of asthma, aged 24 years.

* Information from Maureen Cooper.

Map of Sunday (Raoul) Island from 'Crusoe's of Sunday Island,' by Elsie K. Morton.

The Bell family lived on the island from 1878 - 1911.

James Reed and his family, with his 12 Maori workers, five of whom died, were on Sunday Island (Raoul) from October 1836 -1854 more than 42 years earlier.



'So, we find Captain James Reed sailing off with his friend, Captain Bateman, in the Cheviot, for the South Seas, with his wife, three young children, Thomas, George and Charlotte and the sturdy, tattooed retinue, to make a home in the volcanic island of the Kermadecs. James procured banana plants and oranges [the stock of these, he later said, he got from Pitcairn Island]. At Sydney he bought potatoes, kumara, taro, and many other kinds of vegetables and fruit and several goats to stock the Robinson Crusoe isle; and he, with all his people and belongings, were landed on Sunday island. Also six crew members of the Cheviot came ashore and disappeared into the hills, until their vessel had departed. The group survived mainly on fish, giant limpets, mutton birds and the hearts of cabbage trees while they awaited the maturing of their crops grown on several acres of cleared ground. James Reed later said that he found no sign of European occupation, except one pig, which was presumed to have been the survivor of some liberated by Captain Cook. The family established themselves at Denham Bay, the island's best landing place, despite its treacherous shores and dangerous surf. Fresh water was always obtainable from deep pools in the swamp, known as 'the Lagoon,' with plenty of raupo growing nearby to make dwellings. The Maori workers would have been a great asset, in such circumstances. The island was seven miles long, by five miles wide, with sweeping terraces of brown sand hills, rocky cliffs and a beach set against a backdrop of dark forest clad mountains, 17,300 feet at its highest peak. The Pohutukawa (the New Zealand Christmas tree) blooms the whole year, in the subtropical climate. It has been said that anything (except potatoes) grow exceedingly well, in the temperate climate. Reed was industrious and happy in his island home and 5 children were born to James and Ekaumoenga on Sunday Island and five of their slaves died. Over the years visitors to the island have wondered about the old graves.'

We can see, from the following extract, that the first six weeks nearly proved fatal.

'Whaling Journal of Capt. W J Rhodes,' on the Barque Australian. 1836-1837.

Dec 17 1836 Arrived at island and met James Reed, his N.Z. wife, three children, 2 Maori boys (the slaves) and 6 deserters off the 'Cheviot,' on Sunday Island. **They all arrived 6 weeks previous to this date.** Intended to start a colony and trade supplier to the whalers.

The same ship returned the following year:

Dec 13 1837 Back on Sunday Island. Family not doing well. Almost starving. Two slaves dead. Report of new settlers on the other side of the island; Daniel Baker, a ship's carpenter by trade, and his Samoan wife, both having recently arrived from Samoa. They later moved to West Bay and settled near Reed, building a substantial four room cottage (from raupo reed in the fresh water lagoon), complete with stone chimney and a large storehouse for storing potatoes, maize, yams, taro and kumara, preserved fish and mutton birds. Baker returned briefly to Samoa in 1842 and brought back a milking herd of goats.

Harriet Anne Reed	born Sunday Island August 6th 1837 (m. Menary)
Sarah Kaohi Reed	born Sunday Island 19th May 1839 (m. Von Sturmer)
John Reed	born Sunday Island 8th May 1840 (m. Ngāhiraka)
Eliza Reed	born Sunday Island 24th April 1842 (m. Cooke)
James Reed	born 5 Oct. 1859. Died 23 Nov. 1876. buried Mt. Victoria, Devonport.
Alice Reed	born 5th May 1855 Northcote, N.Z. (m. Gee)
William Reed	born 1844 Sunday Island. Died 1908. Buried Wakapuaka Cemetery, Nelson.

The seasons went by and the Sunday island Colony became a pleasant picture of industry and fruitfulness. There were no rats there then, to destroy the crops, and the Reed's toilers raised food in abundance. Whale ships came to the island and lay-to off Denham Bay and bought supplies of vegetables, fruit, corn and goat's meat, water and firewood. Then, in 1845, when things were at their most prosperous stage, down came the thunder-bolt. It took the form of a terrible volcanic eruption. This was the first time the Sunday island volcano interrupted the peaceful life of pioneer settlers; the same catastrophe befell latecomers, in the fifties, and I think, writing from memory, the seventies. Heavy clouds of hot ash were

thrown out from the crater and a sulphurous gloom spread over the island. The Reed family were compelled to leave their home. They took refuge in a cave, on a point of the island, furthest away from the volcano and camped forlornly, wondering whether they would ever leave the place alive. Fortunately, the huge volume of smoke and steam rising from the volcano was seen by a whaling vessel, the 'Montezuma,' which was some forty miles to the westward of the island. She bore down on it and sighted the Pakeha-Maori family. A boat was sent ashore and the distressed family were soon safe aboard ship. Reed's treasure was in the abandoned home. Obviously James Reed was a hardworking, thrifty man, with a labour force of possibly a dozen slave Maori and had the business background from being a ship's officer in whaling. He went ashore with a boat's crew, to salvage his two boxes of gold in American dollars, which indicated a small fortune and left behind the smoking scene of desolation forever. James Reed departed with a family of five children born on the same shores, as did his neighbour, Baker. The whale-ship sailed for the Bay of Islands with the refugees, evicted by nature's rage, but fortunately not ruined, for there was the whaler's gold to make a new start in Maoriland. Reed's party by the way, numbered exactly the same as it did when he landed on the island. Five children had been born to the pair and five slaves had died. The whaling ship dropped anchor off Kororareka, Bay of Islands, just after Hone Heke had captured and sacked the settlement, in March 1845. So there was no landing there for the refugees from the Kermadecs.

Reed and his people came to Auckland and settled here. It is assumed that James felt that the marriage may not be accepted in European society, so they married again by being 'properly churchied,' at St Paul's Anglican Church, Symonds St, Auckland on their arrival back in New Zealand. After the second marriage ceremony, Ekaumoenga became known as 'Agnes.' James Reed, bought a good deal of land at Stokes Point, on the northern side of the Waitamata harbour, and some of his descendants live there to this day.'

'And how did you come to know all this?' I could not help putting the question to my friend who had narrated the story with so much precise detail.

'Well, you see,' he replied, "I got to know the Reeds rather well in the North in my younger days. In fact, I married one of the old Captain's daughters who was born on Sunday Island. She died thirty years ago. Another daughter married Mr. Von. Sturmer, who was magistrate and judge to the Native Land Court up Auckland way, many years ago. And there are others of the family still living at Auckland who can give, I have no doubt, stories of the settlement which I have forgotten."

So, once more, James Reed had to start again, setting up a home and income for his family. What became of his slaves is unknown. Some of them may have continued to work with, or for him, or they may have returned to their own South Island whanau and sadly their new baby died, soon after they arrived. Within the first year of returning to New Zealand, he had an official, Christian marriage to Ekaumoenga. They were married, by Rev. Churton, on 15th April, 1846 at St. Paul's Anglican Church, Symond's Street, Auckland. They also had their children christened. It appears from their marriage certificate that neither could write, which seems unusual, as James had been well educated as a boy. Then, James Reed purchased land at Stoke's Point, on which to establish a home for his wife and family. The first priority was to build a whare, from raupo, similar to the one they had lived in at Sunday Island. These Maori dwellings were warm and comfortable and the Reed family would have been used to the relative isolation and were experienced at being self sufficient. In their hasty exit from their island home there must have been many things that they regretted being unable to bring, like seeds and pips from their prized vegetables and fruit to start their new orchard. 'Waste not want not.' was the motto of the day. Every fruit stone was planted and there was an abundance of fish in the beautiful harbour, but it would have been a struggle until their garden got established.

Ekau's Maori heritage would have come to the fore as the family collected and prepared flax which grew in abundance at nearby Lake Pupuke and deftly wove kete (baskets) and other utilitarian objects needed in their new home. A large grove of karaka (*Corynocarpus laevigatus*) on the northern side of the lake could be harvested for both medicinal (leaves) and food (berries) purposes. The children explored their new environment, swimming and playing happy and free, but school was an altogether new experience for these free spirits!

*Marriages solemnized in the Parish of Wai-mata
County of Eden New Zealand in the year 1846*

No. *James Reed* of the Parish *Bachelor*
Ekau of the Parish *Spencer*
married in this *Church* by *Banns* with consent of
this *fifteenth* day of *April* in the year 1846

This Marriage was solemnized between us { *James x Reed* By me *Wm Christy Dudley*
Ekau x

In the Presence of { of
of *Edw Walker*



St. Paul's Church in Symonds Street was the garrison church for Fort Britomart. Built in 1841 to serve all of Auckland, it was demolished in 1883, after the fort and the promontory where it stood, were razed to use as fill for reclamation of the Auckland waterfront. The hill is already being quarried away in the photograph. Source unknown.

HISTORY OF NORTHCOTE.

By the time of European settlement in Auckland around the 1840s, the pa of the North Shore were mostly unoccupied, and those few that had occupants were later abandoned, largely due to the sale of the North Shore during the Mahurangi purchase. (Thematic Review Report)

During his lifetime, accountant and historian George Graham (1874-1952) recorded much of the Maori history of Auckland. Graham lived near the southern end of Northcote Point in the early 1900s. "Onewa Pa on the Point," as Graham described it, was in early times a fortified village, palisaded and entrenched. Maori fished in the bays and gathered berries and roots from nearby forests. The oldest known inhabitants of the district were Ngati Tai, who in ancient times suffered severely from raids of Ngati Whatua and in about 1650, of Ngati Paoa. Ngati Whatua then conquered the whole of the Auckland isthmus. Onewa was attacked again and again and in about 1740, the remnants of the Ngati Tai tribe were driven out. Ngati Paoa took over Onewa's Ngati Tai villages, but were driven back by Ngati Whatua. Gradually, the remnants of Ngati Tai returned in the early 19th century to their old villages at Onewa. After the musket wars of the 1820s and early 1830s, peace returned to the Auckland area. A few Ngati Tai, with their last chieftain Heteraka Takapuna, continued to live at Onewa for some years.

LITTLE SHOAL BAY

In pre-colonial times, there were waahi tapu (sacred sites), kainga (villages), canoe landing sites and gardens associated with the historic settlement of Awataha. Maori used the tidal area to fish and gather shellfish. Maori Track runs from the top of Council Terrace to the Scout Den. From 1902 until the 1950s, the land was occupied by the Birkenhead and Northcote Gas Company gasworks. A wharf, its wall still there today, was built to enable barges to bring in the coal. The manager lived in the last house on the right in Council Terrace and residents could pay their bills at the office at the top of the road. The site became a public reserve in the late 1990s.

By Dinah Holman

NORTHCOTE PIONEERING DAYS THE FIRST FIFTY YEARS

In the early days the great importance of Stokes was the fact that it was the gate to the North and the nearest point to Auckland. The first auction of the land on the North Shore occurred on September 18th, 1843 and included 70 sections at North shore (later Stokes Point and Northcote).

*James Reed bought the first piece of land on Stokes Point, above the Gasworks.

Subsequent auctions and sales took place and by 1850, there were a number of settlers. They crossed the harbour by rowing, or sailing, and it was not until February 1854, that a regular ferry service, subsidised by Auckland Provincial Government, was established and run by **Mr. James Reed**, of Stokes Point. The ferry was an open sailing boat, with a two man crew, accommodating 20 or more passengers.

In 1855 the Provincial Government paid subsidies to **J. Reed** (for Stokes Point ferry) and to D. O'Connor and W. Nicholson (great - grandfather of the McFetridge Brothers) for the Shoal Bay ferry, erecting a wharf at 'Patsy Heath's Point' in the following year.

Northcote Golden Jubilee 1908 - 1958

An extract from:

NORTHCOTES PAST
Early Settlers to Northcote.

Published by Northcote Borough Council 1981/2

JAMES REED: The site of his first home was on the property now owned by Mrs. Harrod, between Church Street and the Gasworks beach, Little Shoal Bay. Old residents remember *two graves, planted with snow drops on the flat above the Gas Works. These have long ago disappeared. The Gas company used to use this as a garden.

From Northcote Public Library: This property is 5 Council Terrace. It was purchased by a Mr. & Mrs. Kirk from Mrs. Harrod. It is now two flats: No 5 Council Terrace - Mr. and Mrs. Tonks; N0. 5A Council Terrace - Mr. & Mrs. G.R. Kirk.

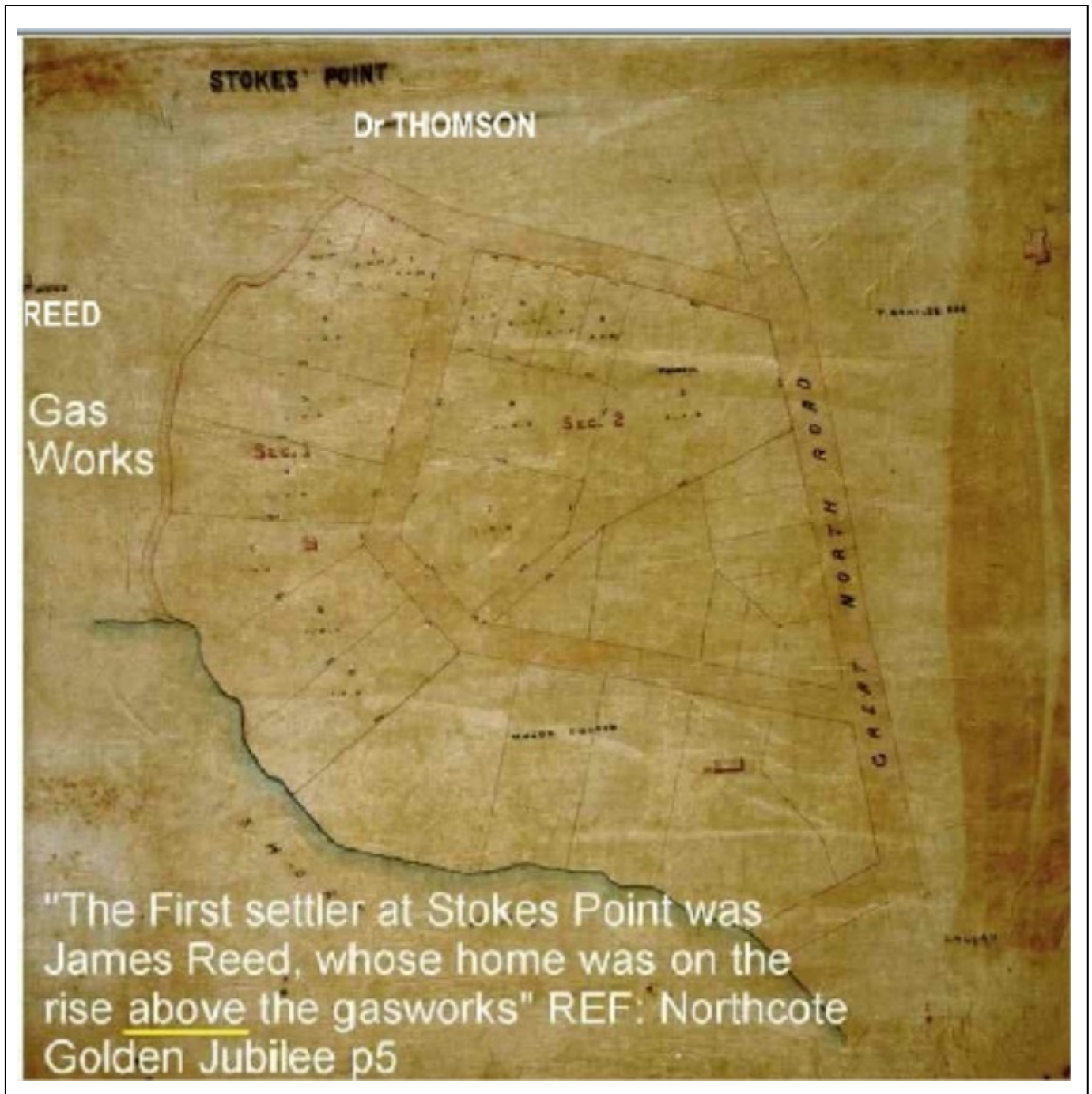
* One is probably the grave of Ngāhiraka and Dr. Thomson's baby, Mary, who wasn't baptised and therefore could not be buried in a consecrated church cemetery.

On 5 January 1854 the Auckland Provincial Government called for tenders for an open ferry boat service to include Northcote Point, Shoal Bay (via the tidal creek by Barry's Point) and Devonport (via the sand spit at the bottom of Victoria Road), and subsidised this service to 1865. The boats used were four oared whaleboats, but a cargo boat could also be hired as necessary. The subsidized ferry service from Stokes Point was operated by James Reed and could accommodate about 20 passengers. John Reed lived in a whare on land adjacent to Little Shoal Bay (next to the Gas works). (Elisa) Mary Reed the only child of John and Ngāhiraka Reed, was born five months after her father died.

Flax was also in abundance around the lake Pupuke. This essential commodity for Maori was used in clothing and in the manufacturing of many utilitarian objects. It is likely that a large grove of karaka (*Corynocarpus laevigatus*) on the northern side of the lake was harvested for both medicinal (leaves) and food (berries) purposes. Lake Pupuke (Pupuke Moana) was a valued resource for Maori, not only as a fresh water supply but also because of the diversity of resources on offer. Here they harvested freshwater eels (tuna) and mussels, captured birds and undertook food preparation. Flax also grew in abundance around the lake. Lake Pupuke was one of a number of water sources, including, rivers, wells and rain-water, that provided fresh water for the early settlers of the North Shore, but with population growth came the need for a reticulated water supply. Lake Pupuke was an obvious source of fresh water for the people of the surrounding area.



Sara Von Sturmer (nee Reed) Alice Gee (nee Reed) Eliza Cook (nee Reed) and child.
Photographs courtesy of Lyn Chappell.



*The map above was possibly the one drawn on pig skin, which originally belonged to sisters Rehutai and Fay Gundry, but has since been lost. Ian Squires remembered seeing it as a boy.

James Reed was the first settler at Stokes Point, Northcote, on Auckland's North shore. Their home was on the rise above the Gas Works, at what is now 5 Council Terrace. Their next door neighbour, Dr. Thomson and his common-law wife, Ngā-hiraka's property (indicated) was nearby.

Courtesy of Lyn Chappell.





The Reed family home.

5 Council Terrace Stokes Point circa 1892.

Far right: Ignatius Gee, husband of Alice Reed, youngest daughter of James Reed and Ekau-moenga. Ignatius's son is 3rd child from right.

Courtesy of Lynn Chappell.

James Reed (Maurice Phillipe de Montboissier) died aged 84 years, was buried on 13th October 1876 at a cemetery on Mt. Victoria, Albert Road, Devonport Auckland. Plot 019. The older graves are no longer identifiable.

by [Waltakere33](#) on 2017-04-04 04:52:52

James Reed (Maurice Philippe de Montboissier) was buried on 13 October 1876 at a cemetery on Mt Victoria, Albert Road, Devonport in Auckland - plot 019, he was 84. I'm not sure about Agnes, but they did have a camp at Stokes Point and at some stage there was a cemetery near the point. Back in 2006 I spoke to the then Sexton for the North Shore City Council, he said that the graves in top / original part of the Devonport cemetery were no longer marked or identifiable. James Reed ran the first ferry service between the North Shore and Auckland city. He was the son of French nobility, Count Maurice Philippe Claude de Montboissier Beaufort Canillac, they had to flee to England during the revolution, although some other sites state that James was born in the UK. I do have some other information about James which a French friend has found for me online, so at some stage I will try and translate it. I too am a direct descendant of James, our family is from Riwaka, near Nelson. My Great-Great Grandfather is William Reed born in Auckland 1844 to James Reed and Te Kahumahinga (Agnes).

by [NZReedy](#) on 2017-04-26 12:53:56

We must be related lol

by [jackg](#) on 2017-07-29 20:54:55

I am a great great grandson of James Reed (Count, Maurice Philippe de Montboissier Beaufort Canillac), descending from James's youngest daughter Alice Reed and her husband Ignatius Massek Gee. In answer to Waltakere33, it was not James Reed (M.P. de Montboissier) aged 84 who was buried on 13 October 1876 at Mt. Victoria, Devonport, but James Reed's son James, born 1849, who was buried there, age 27. Our records show that James (Jnr) was born on 5 October 1849 and died on 13 October 1876, buried the same day on Mt. Victoria, plot 19, whereas James (Snr) died on 23 November 1876, buried on 25 November 1876, location of burial not clear. One source says he was buried on Northcote Point while another says he was buried at Pompallier Cemetery, Birkenhead. James (Snr) was born at Hampstead, in the London area, on 28 October 1792 while James (Jnr) was born at Northcote, Auckland, on 5 October 1849.

From a family history website.

Chapter 14
NGĀHIRAKA
and
Captain JOSEPH BOND KENNEDY
Third husband of Ngāhiraka.



Ngāhiraka Kennedy.
By the American Photo Company circ 1889.
Courtesy Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne.

The family are greatly indebted to her husband Capt. Joseph Kennedy, who had the forethought to deposit the negative of Ngāhiraka's photograph in the Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne, where it had been stored in the Archives, forgotten, for more than 100 years. Each of her daughters had been given a gold locket with this photograph inside. Many have been lost, but the one given to Harriet is still in the family. The American Photo Company opened a studio in Gisborne in McKee's Buildings, Gladstone Road - July 1910 to March 1919, which suggests this photograph was taken in their Auckland Studio on the occasion of Kateruri/Katarina Takoto Gundry's marriage to George Matchitt, June 22nd 1889.



Joseph Bond Kennedy.
Colourization courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips.
Ngāhiraka learned dressmaking from he time at mission school.
Captain. Joseph Kennedy's jacket is home made.

* **Left:** Notice the weight of the greenstone earring in Ngāhiraka's pierced ear. This earring is still in the family. It was worn by one of her daughters, Kate Kennedy, on her wedding day. She was married after her mother, Ngāhiraka died and it would have been of great sentimental value to her.

NGĀHIRAKA (EMA) WOOD
Born 1838.

On some Birth, Marriage and Death certificates her third husband, Joseph Bond Kennedy, recorded his wife Ngāhiraka's date of birth as the same year as his, 1842, because her actual date of birth had never been precisely known and it was 'near enough.' This is definitely incorrect, because her father, Commander James Wood, H.M.S. Buffalo, was first in New Zealand from **September 1837, until 30th June 1838.** 'Tuesday 19^h September 1837. Anchored in the Bay Of Islands NEW ZEALAND.' Masters Log H.M.S. Buffalo. Public Record Office No 3066. Transcribed by Jill Kemp 2005.

Ngāhiraka was the daughter of the English Commander Wood (H.M.S. Buffalo and later H.M.S. Tortoise) and Matarena Waitangi Rangiwhiuwhiu, from Ōpōtiki, a Chief in her own right, and the wife of Chief Takoto Waimua.

We know little about Ngāhiraka's early life, but she would have been brought up in a traditional Maori environment at Ōpōtiki, in her formative years, fluent in her natural language and with the privileges that came with being of a chiefly line. The years after the missionaries came to Ōpōtiki were years of peace and plenty. It is very likely that her father, Commander James Wood from H.M.S. Buffalo, made arrangements with the missionaries to have his daughter attend mission school, as he would have considered it 'his Christian duty' to do so. The Commander would have remunerated the mission with Barter goods, such as Bibles, which he would have arranged to be sent to them from England. Whatever the circumstances, it is definitely known that her half sister Kateruri/Katerina Takoto, attended Rev. Wilson's Mission school at Hikutaia, Ōpōtiki, which was near the present day golf course and have the their own personal testimony that both girls were later sent to mission school in Auckland.

Ngāhiraka was married John Reed in a Christian church. She was a skilled seamstress and several of her grandchildren clearly recall seeing her beautiful needlework. Needlework was taught to many Maori girls by missionaries' wives, while the girls listened to the reading of Scriptures. Later in life Ngāhiraka ran her own home as a European and would have had to have been familiar with European living to do so.

Although she attended mission school she could not write, signing with a mark 'X' on her Marriage Certificate and Will. She may have been Dyslexic. Ngāhiraka has been described as 'being of light skin and blue eyes and had a tattoo, 'Tā moko', on her chin.

'Maori woman of high rank had their lower lip tattooed, as the lip and chin tattoo belonged only to the eldest. All four sisters would have had mana (prestige) around their lives, because Matarena, their mother, was a chief and also because of the different fathers and the mana they held. Matarena was given to a high ranking officer of her Majesty Queen Victoria's Admiralty, so that a child of high prestige could be born. This is the way of the Maori and it has been a similar way for the high society Europeans.'

Courtesy of Dion Tilley

Oral history from various branches of the family all refer to Ngāhiraka as a 'Maori Princess.' Her 'Tā moko' (tattoo) can be seen on her bottom lip, chin and eyelids. She knew the meaning of each line, according to her first common law husband, Dr. Arthur Thomson. She would have had lines on her breasts and running around her waist, according to the description given by her husband, Dr. Thomson, in his book.

Cuts, which bled profusely, were chiselled into the skin with a sharp instrument of bone. Dyes made from a mixture of water or fat, mixed with ground charcoal from either Rimu, Kauri or Kapara trees. Sometimes burned dog excrement, or caterpillars were used instead of charcoal. This mixture was rubbed into the incision, leaving a blue colour under the reddish transparency of the skin tissue. The recipient was not permitted to wash her face or look at herself for a week. The process was so painful that sometimes it was necessary to sip liquid through a hollow reed. It was not uncommon for the wounds to become infected and some died. Once healed, the tattoo, or 'Te Moko' was worn with pride and showed that she was ready to adopt the responsibilities of womanhood and establish a family of her own.

There was a saying, "You may loose your house and treasures, but your Moko cannot be deprived of you except by death, it will be your ornament and companion until your last day." It was usual to do the upper lip on a separate occasion as it was too painful a process to endure at one time.

Tattooing was later done with metal chisels or done using a needle but it is likely Ngāhiraka had her tattoo done with a bone chisel, the tip made from bird or rat bone similar to the one pictured here in the following photograph of a very old and rare, bone tattooing tool, with bird bone chisel tip. The chisel tip was attached to the intricately carved handle. To have survived centuries of years of use, without the aid of modern adhesives is a marvel of craftsmanship. This implement would be hundreds of years old and would have been a taonga (treasure) of sacredness, owned by a Tohunga or Priest.



A very old, sacred and rare, bone tattooing tool.

The flax binding, attaching the bird beak, which was used as a cutting implement, is still tightly secure after centuries, which demonstrates the skill and craftsmanship of ancient Maori, as does the intricate carving on the bone handle.

Courtesy of William Hastie.

Maori Race In New Zealand
By Augustus Hamilton
Names of lines used in Tattooing Women.

Hotiki - Tattooing forehead

Takitaki - Lines between breast and navel

Tu-tatua - Lines around waist 2 - 2½ inches wide.

Motoi - Ear ornament of greenstone.

Whakatehe - Lines on chin

Hopehope - Lines on thighs

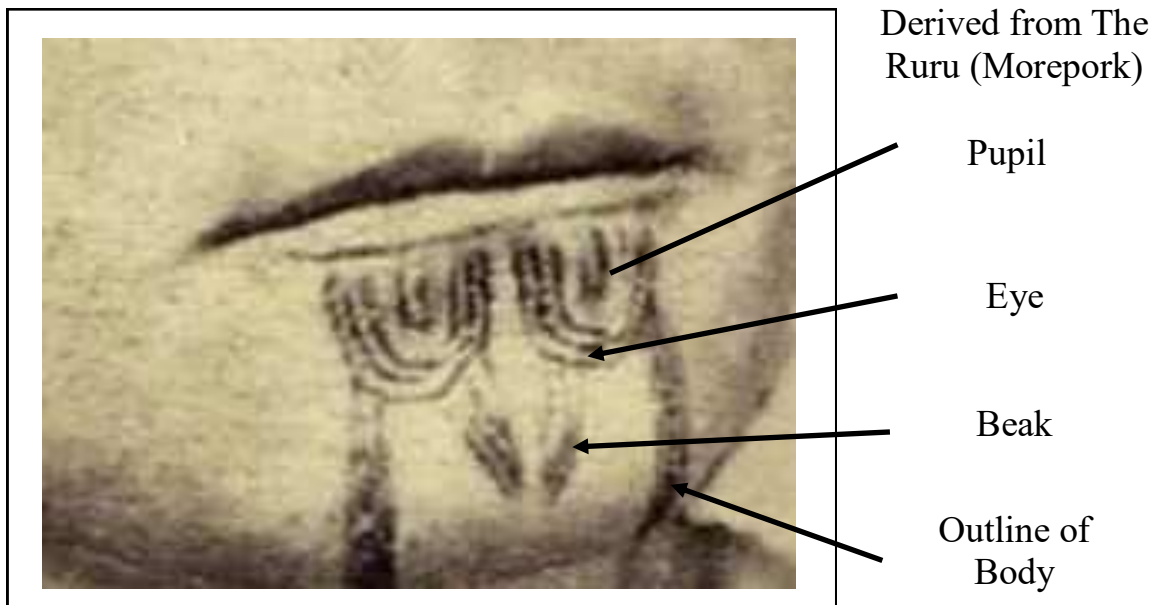
Kawe - Four lines each side of the chin.

A 'Moko (tattoo) was usually done when a young woman reached puberty. In the nineteenth century this was restricted to women of high birth and denoted person's of rank, being done only with the consent of the tribal elders. It was a very painful and sacred (tapu) ceremony, done in a specially erected outdoor shelter where the Tohunga could concentrate on the day long process, reciting a karakia (song) similar to the one famous tattooist, Poata, learned from his elders and which dated back to 'the old days.'

From Moko. By Michael King. Pages 56 - 57.

'He ngarahu tapu taku ngarahu
 Nau e I'o o Tikitiki-o-Rangi
 Tenei o pia, tenei o taura
 He iho nui, he iho roa
 He iho taketake ki a koe e I'o e
 Puritia I te ioio nui, I te ioio o te pukenga
 I te ioio o te hiringa wananga tipua
 I te wananga ariki, I te wananga atua
 No te uruuru matua! Ki a koe e I'o
 Matua e! e Ruatau!
 E Tane-te-waiaora, e!

My ash is sacred ash
 From you, I'o of Tikitiki-o-Rangi
 These are your elementary students, these are your more advanced students;
 The sacredness is great, the sacredness is extensive,
 The sacredness is fundamental to you, I'o,
 Held together with large strands, strands of knowledge,
 The strands of unique mystical knowledge,
 The lore of paramount chiefs, the lore of gods
 Derived from the heavens,
 From the ancient source, from the special source,
 From the main source! to you, I'o,
 To you the Father! To you Ruatau!
 To you Tane, Provider of Good Health.'



A close up of Ngāhiraka's 'Tā moko' which was derived from the Ruru (Morepork). Only her bottom lip was tattooed and a line on each of her eye lids - (like eye liner). She would have had other moko on her thighs, lower back, waste, or breasts.

Courtesy of Dion Tilley.

When her 1st 'husband' Arthur Saunders Thomson died, Ngāhiraka and her children were the sole beneficiaries of his Will, which should have left her a wealthy woman. But tragically, half - Maori women had no rights at that time. His appointed Executors sold her land to support his children, who were taken from her and she was forced to leave her home.

Two years after Dr Thomson's death, Ngāhiraka married her bachelor neighbour, John Reed, who was a few years younger than she and they lived in a whare on the water's edge on the North shore where he was building a boat. Of course, once Ngāhiraka married John Reed the Executors of Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson's Will no longer had any obligation to support her. She soon became pregnant, but, sadly John caught Scarlet Fever and died before their baby was born. Sometime after John Reed's death and the birth of their daughter, (Eliza) Mary Reed, Ngāhiraka moved to Fort Street with her child, but she kept close ties with the child's grand parents, James and Ekaumoenga, on the North shore.

Fort Street was then on the waterfront of the bustling town of Auckland and an idyllic place to live on the waters edge, with the view of Rangitoto Island and the sparkling waters of the Waitamata harbour on her doorstep. Canoes laden with produce arrived regularly, along with the numerous coastal trading ships. Joseph Bond Kennedy, took regular coastal trading runs between Gisborne and Auckland and probably knew Ngāhiraka from about 10 years old, when he first visited the Poverty Bay area, as a cabin boy. Now a Captain himself, Joseph Kennedy visited Auckland harbour so frequently that he received a Pilot's Exemption Certificate, authorising him to pilot his own vessel when entering Auckland harbour. Fort Street, Auckland




Fort Steet Auckland

K. Burcher (Artist), Charles Heaphy (Related Artist)


Auckland Art Gallery Toi o Tāmaki, gift of the Hon E Mitchelson, 1915

*Fort Street was originally called 'Fore street', being on the foreshore.

PILOTAGE EXEMPTION CERTIFICATE, No. 1
FOR PORTS IN THE PROVINCE OF Auckland ONLY.



This is to certify that Mr. Joseph Kennedy Master of the Colonial trading vessel
Sacra having been examined, and having been found qualified to conduct and navigate
his vessel in and out of the Ports of Auckland
all within the Province of Auckland
the said vessel Sacra is, in accordance with Section XVIII. of "The Marine Act, 1867,"
liable to pay only one full rate of pilotage in and out of each of the said ports in every year, unless the Master shall
employ a pilot; provided that this Exemption shall not be available unless the Master shall, when required by the Collector
of Customs or by any licensed pilot of any of the ports abovenamed, produce and permit this Certificate to be read by him;
and unless, from the time of approaching within three leagues of the port shore to the time of anchoring in the port, there
shall be kept at the mast or mainmast-head of the vessel a white flag; and this Exemption shall remain in force so long as the
said vessel Sacra shall continue to be commanded by the said Joseph Kennedy
but no longer.

Custom House, Auckland
Signed this 13th day of April 1874

Collector.

Registered as No. _____ Tonnage _____

NOTE.—When a Certificate of Exemption from Pilotage is required to endorse the Ports of more than one Province it can only be issued by the Colonial Marine Engineer, Wellington, and an application for such Colonial exemption must in all cases be accompanied by Certificates from the Harbour-master of each Port which the exemption is intended to endorse that the applicant is competent to navigate his vessel thence.

Joseph Kennedy's Pilot's Exemption Certificate.
for entering Auckland harbour.
Courtesy of Sharman Orr

Being so often in Auckland, it would seem feasible that Captain Joe may have rented a 'bolt hole' in Fort street to use while he sorted cargo. Perhaps he employed the newly widowed Ngāhiraka as his house keeper, where she could live right on the edge of the inner harbour of Auckland, on the sparkling Waitamata, with her young child. Whatever the circumstances, it was not too long before Joseph Bond Kennedy was courting the beautiful widow. When their son Edward Henry Bond Kennedy was born, in 1868, the family address was given as Fort Street. There is an old saying that 'a man's gifts go before him,' and in the early 1870's an opportunity presented itself to go into business in Gisborne with George Read and the family moved to Gisborne. There was further heartache when their two month old baby daughter, Margaret, died and was buried at the Hirini Street Cemetery in Gisborne. People would have assumed them to be married. Five years later they officially married at the Registrar's Office in Auckland on 15th April, 1873. Ngāhiraka signed with an 'X.' However, on one of their children's birth certificates on which Joseph Kennedy was the informant and he wrote that they married in Auckland on 15th June 1865!

Joseph Bond Kennedy was a self made man, having run away to sea at 9 years old and working on sailing vessels trading along the coast of New Zealand and as far a field as Australia. Through many a terrifying storm, or with the sun on his back, feeling the thrill of the wind in the sail, the creaking boards beneath his feet while powering through the waves, wind in his hair and salt on his lips, it would have been an exhilarating experience. No doubt at times he saw the wonders of spouting whales, enjoyed the company of leaping dolphins, spectacular sun rises and sunsets and the beautiful bush clad coastline and familiar mountains of New Zealand. This young boy grew into a man with the call of the sea in his blood. Through the discipline of hard work he learned the skills of sailing, under the stern hand and rough tongue of many an 'old salt,' until he saved enough money by the age of 18 years to become skipper of his own vessel. There is many a hair raising yarn he could have and no doubt did, tell. Under provocation he is known to have yelled at his own son, 'I will get the cat o nine tails to you, boy,' a sentiment he in turn shared with his own son! Captain Joe became renowned as a keen, honest business man, strong and hard working.

PAGES OF GISBORNE HISTORY
Poverty Bay Herald Vol. XXV111 - ISSUE 9167
8th June 1901

EARLY REMINISCENCES
By Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy

You were good enough to express the opinion that a statement of my early experiences in this part of the colony would prove of some interest to the readers. Owing to my Log having been destroyed by fire I am not able to give many dates, which I should like to furnish, but I will recall my impressions and state them to the best of my ability.

I will begin by saying that I first came to Poverty Bay as a boy in 1852 in a cutter called The Fly, owned and commanded by Captain Kane, late of Oamaru. The Fly was a vessel of 21 tons register, and we were bound from Lyttleton to Melbourne via the East Coast – calling at the coast with a view of purchasing a cargo of produce to suit the Melbourne market and our first port of call was Poverty Bay. On arrival we were towed into the Turanganui River by two whaleboats manned by natives. Our vessel was drawing 9 feet of water, and as far as my recollection serves me, we came over the bar and into the river without touching. The principal settler was named Benny Harris. His occupation was that of trader. There was a mission station at the big river, at a place called Tohanga. The missionary operations were, at that time, conducted by Bishop Williams, father of the present Bishop of Waiapu.

The traders lived principally on their business with the natives, who grew large quantities of wheat, and a small amount of maize. They also produced flax fibre. Pigs were plentiful. On both sides of the river there were native settlements, extending from where the Gisborne freezing works now stand and from Waikanae up to the second bend of the Waimata river, which is now called Harris Point. The Maoris were very numerous. There was no other white settler other than Harris where Gisborne now stands. He had a store just about where the Loan and Mercantile Co's store is.

On the Gisborne side of the river bank where the Court and Post Office are, there was a large enclosure of a Maori Pa. The posts of the enclosure were all carved in the old-fashioned Maori style. It was called Rawiri's Pa. The land on which Gisborne is now built was covered with Ti-tree, fern and Toitoi. On the river bank where Mr. Bull's gardens are, there was clump of Kaikatea trees, and that place was called Rua-kaikatea. There were some settlers at the Big river and at Makaraka. The Kaiti hill was wooded, the bush coming well down to the beach. The bush consisted principally of Ngaio, Karaka, Kohe, and Kowhai.

The Captain of the Fly, finding that he could not get a cargo suitable for the Melbourne market, sailed back to Lyttleton, via the East Cape. We touched at several places along the way up. The captain traded with the natives himself. He bought wheat and potatoes from the natives and pork and bacon from the settlers. The principal trader on the coast, at that time, was a Portuguese named Manuel. It was from him we purchased our cargo. The produce was paid for in trade, namely clothing, blankets, prints, shirts, tobacco and rum.

On our way back to Lyttleton, we touched at Mahia, which was then a whaling station. The station was established at Long Point, in the Hawkes Bay. It was one of the

biggest whaling stations on the coast of New Zealand. This enterprise was chiefly supported by Auckland merchants, Captain Salmon, Captain Ellis, and Mr. W.S. Graham being the leading men. I may remark here that Tuahine Point, at the north end of the Bay, near Gisborne, was also a whaling station, and one of the proprietors was a European named Billy Brown, who has several children and grandchildren now living in this district.

We returned to Lyttleton, discharged our cargo, and made another trip up the Coast, calling at Mahia and then Poverty Bay. On coming into the River Turanganui the second time we anchored in the middle of the river abreast of the end of the new wharf extension just made by the Harbor Board. We swung our anchor and never grounded. We lay here a few days, and then continued our voyage up the Coast, finally taking our departure for Melbourne. The natives at that time were far more numerous along the East Coast than they are now. Take for example Tokomaru Bay. On the north end of that bay there was a pa with a population of at least 1,000. Today you can scarcely see a vestige of the pa. The pa was built on a stony point, and the stones were piled up to prevent the sea from encroaching on the whares. All traces of the stone embankment have now disappeared. The same remark as to the large native population of Tokomaru applies to other places along the Coast.

I did not again see Poverty Bay until 1859. I was at that time a sailor before the mast on the Cutter Planet, owned and commanded by Captain Read. When we came into the river in 1859 we brought up abreast of Captain Read's store, which was situated just about the centre of where the Freezing Works are. Captain Read's dwelling house was also on that spot. In that short period of time - between 1852 and 1859 - the natives on both sides of the river had diminished in numbers. Where they had gone I cannot say. Captain Read traded largely with the natives. He was connected in business with Benny Harris. They were partners in the Kaiti run. The run included the Kaiti hill and the flats as far as Wainui beach. It was stocked with sheep and cattle.

Some time before 1859 a man called Yankee Smith established a store at Makaraka and at the mouth of the Turanganui river Captain Read was, as I have indicated, the principle trader in the place, he having bought out Smith's interest in the stores at Makaraka and Turanganui River. Mr. John Harvey, of Read's Quay, was then a trader at the Big River. He has been 53 years in the Bay, and has never, I believe, left it. From 1859 to 1861 I continued visiting the Coast as one of the crew of the vessels trading to these ports. The names of the vessels were Surprise Cutter, Captain Brand and the Arcadian Schooner, Captain Forester. I then shipped a brig called Gil Blas, which made a trip from Auckland to Melbourne, and back again. We lost our Commander Captain Wedgewood, when going into Melbourne heads. He and two passengers and the man at the wheel were washed overboard and drowned. His death was all the more painful by the fact that he had only been married some six months and his young wife was accompanying him on this voyage.

On returning to Auckland I took command of a vessel called the Queen, owned by Captain Read. She was a topsail schooner and was built in Auckland for the purpose of carrying the missionaries along the coast. Until the Waikato war broke out, Captain Read only possessed half an interest in her. He then became sole owner. I commanded the vessel for 13 years, trading steadily along the coast between Poverty Bay and Auckland with sheep, cattle and produce. We were the mail boat, and carried passengers, making a trip once a fortnight between Poverty Bay and Auckland.

During these years Poverty Bay was slowly increasing in population and importance. In the early days, as I said, the natives grew quantities of wheat, and I may mention that there was as much as 10,000 bushels taken away in one shipment in a brig chartered by Captain Read. She loaded at the Big River, Murewai and the Turanganui river. The cargo was taken off by her whale boats.

During the thirteen years I was in command of the Tawera trading between Poverty Bay, the East Coast and Auckland, the war broke out on the East Coast. It was about the year 1865. During the hostilities in Poverty Bay, on several occasions, I saw people brought wounded from Waerenga-a-hika [*about 5 miles northwest of Gisborne*] and that neighbourhood. There was one case worthy of a special mention, namely, Lieut. Ross. He had been struck by a bullet on the bridge of the nose. The bullet passed through his head, and came out at the back of the neck, and strange to say he lived notwithstanding the terrible injury. He is still alive and now resides in Ōpōtiki.

I may mention that the first news of the outbreak was taken to Napier by my vessel, the Tawera. Some three years later the massacre took place. It is unnecessary for me to refer at any length to that unhappy event, for it has now become part of the history of the Colony, except perhaps to say that Te Kooti landed at Whareongaonga, about three miles south of Young Nick's head. He landed at Tuahine Point, or anywhere this side of the bay, no European would have lived to tell the tale. On the night of the massacre my vessel was aground on the bar at the mouth of the Turanganui River. We were bound for Auckland. We had been there for two tides on the bar.

On that eventful night it happened to be clear and starlight. It was full tide at 3 a.m., but in the early part of the previous day I came ashore and called at Captain Read's house on business connected with the vessel. When leaving the ship I saw certain lights along the bay. There was a fire on Young Nick's Head and another at the mouth of the Big River. They were beacon lights used by the Natives as signals, and they were answered by a fire along the beach near the mouth of the Awapuni lagoon. When I was speaking with Captain Read I mentioned these fires to him, and said that I thought Te Kooti was somewhere in the vicinity of the Bay. He also had misgivings about the matter, and was inclined to think that Te Kooti was near at hand. I left him and went aboard the Tawera to wait for full tide. He said it looked like a house burning. We started to heave the vessel off at 2 o'clock, and at 3 a.m. the vessel floated, and I sent a man aloft to loose the topsails. He reported a fire in the direction of Pipi-whaka bush. However, there being nothing definite to warrant our remaining any longer, we weighed anchor and sailed on our voyage for Auckland. The wind was light south-east, and veered to north-east as we got out of the bay.

About 11 a.m. we saw the topsail schooner commanded by Captain Trimmer hoisting her flags. She had left the bay about the same time we did. It was along time before we could understand the signals. At first we thought that she had sprung a leak. We were several miles to windward of her, and squared away and bore down on her. As soon as we got close to her she squared away also, and came back to the bay with a whaleboat in tow. The whaleboat then left her and came to us with Captain Read. He told us the dreadful news, and we immediately ran back and arrived off the river at 2 in the afternoon. Captain Read went ashore and arranged that those Europeans who wished to go to Napier should proceed there in the Tawera, and those who wanted to go to Auckland were to go in Captain Trimmer's vessel. For the moment I have forgotten the name of his ship [*Success*].

Captain Read built two small jetties within the river at Gisborne and for many years Joseph Kennedy was sailing master for him. In 1868 the infamous Te Kooti was terrorizing many communities. An early account reads: "The news of the shocking raid upon Matawhero by Te Kooti and his band of assassins on 10 November 1868, reached the settlement of Turanganui (Gisborne). On the previous afternoon, the coastal trading ship Success, skippered by Captain John Trimmer, had been lying in the Turanganui river taking on cattle from the Waerenga-a-Hika mission property for delivery to Mr Clark at Tauranga in the Bay of Plenty. Alongside her a schooner named the Tawera, skippered by Captain Joe Kennedy, had been lifting a cargo of produce for Auckland. Both had become stuck on a sandbar as they attempted to leave the river. Early in the morning of the raid, according to Captain Joe Kennedy, the sky was clear and star-lit. A sailor, loosening the sails aloft, noticed a fire in the direction of the Pipiwhako Bush (to the south of Matawhero) and nothing seemed to arouse suspicion. Both vessels soon got free on the morning tide. As it became advisable to evacuate the women and children, Captain READ obtained a whaleboat with a volunteer crew comprising of W. W. Smith, M. Hall, R. Parkhouse, J. Brooking and C. Smale, set off to overtake the Schooners, Success and Tawera, which had left the river only a few hours before. Rowing for several hours, at 11am off Whangara, they caught sight of the Success. Captain Trimmer at once turned back. The Tawera was 8 miles further north. To attract Captain Kennedy's attention, Captain Trimmer lit some tow in a tin producing a dense pall of smoke and Kennedy, thinking the Success to be on fire, sailed back and taking the whaleboat in tow returned by late afternoon to Turanganui. At 6 pm they sailed for Napier with many women and children safely aboard. Captain Read went along to impress the authorities in Napier of the dire necessity for reinforcements. Her passengers included: Mrs. W. Parker, five children and a servant, Mrs. Robb and three children, Mrs. Blair, Mrs. Poulgrain's children (3) George Williams, Mrs. G.G. Mill and two children, R. Thelwell, Mrs. R. Shearer, Mrs. Young, Dan Munn, Mrs Bloomfield, her children and her sister (Miss Seggall) Mrs. R. U'ren, Mrs. W. H. Tucker and child (Henry) and Mrs. Ross and child. Observing a distress signal flying on the Tawera, the Captain of the Lord Ashley, en route to Auckland, sent a boat and took off Mrs. Bloomfield and her children, Miss Seggall, Mrs. Ross and child and 3 settlers not named on the Tawera's passenger list.



Gisborne Wharf. Kaiti Hill in the background.
Today, a little to the left of this photograph, there are tall trees surrounding the Hirini Cemetery and in the right hand front corner is Ngāhiraka's grave.

We took about 45 women, 30 children and a few men to Napier. We also took Dispatches for Sir Donald McLean, Native Minister, asking the Government for assistance.

We left about 6 o'clock in the evening and arrived at Napier about 11 the following morning; landed our passengers, left at 3 p.m. and reached the Bay 24 hours afterwards with Dispatches for Captain Read, informing him that assistance would be sent as soon as possible. Early the next day a steamer (I think it was the Rangatira) arrived with a Native contingent and some Hawes Bay Volunteers. The Tawera then resumed her voyage to Auckland, carrying the evil tidings to the north, for it transpired that we reached Auckland before Captain Trimmer. We continued trading between the Bay and Auckland.

I may state that on one occasion I was ordered by the Government Commissariat Department to take a load of cattle - about 60 head - to Tauranga, in the Bay of Plenty, for the troops stationed there. We arrived on the morning when a pa called Te Renga was attacked by our troops. Te Renga is about a mile and a half from the famous Gate Pa. I shall never forget that morning for I saw the bodies of 109 Natives carried by the troops and laid out prior to burial. A curious incident occurred at this fight. A Maori, who had evidently been in a rifle pit and had raised his head a little above cover, was struck by a bullet a little above the forehead. The bullet traversed the top part of the head, leaving a groove through the skin, but not fracturing the skull. He was taken prisoner with some 150 others. I noticed that many of the dead had been bayoneted in their rifle pits. The old fashioned bayoneted left a dreadful three cornered wound. Te Renga was about 3½ miles from the landing place at Te Papa.

By this time Poverty Bay had become notable to the outside world. Since then it has increased steadily in trade and population. The steamer Rangatira, at this time, was calling about once a month at Gisborne, going on to Napier and Wellington. Later the Pretty Jane and Go-ahead engaged in the trade between Auckland and Poverty Bay. We used to have occasional visits from other steamers, such as the paddle steamer Kumerang, commanded by Captain Crisp. I continued trading until 1874, when I was appointed pilot and harbourmaster at Gisborne by Mr. J. Williamson, Superintendent of the Auckland Province. I remained in the Government service for 18 months, but wishing for a more active life, I resumed coasting in a little steamer called Rosina. Twelve months after, I had the steamer Noko built in Auckland, and entered into the business in Gisborne as a lighterman and coal merchant, which business gradually developed, and is known under the name and style of Kennedy and Evans.

Joseph and Ngāhiraka, with their one son and four daughters, would have lived a comfortable life and their children received a good education. With her husband away so often, Ngāhiraka would have raised their family alone much of the time. They lived in Harris Street, close to the wharf and the children swam in the river and gathered shell fish along Kaiti beach. The eldest brother learnt the piano and there would have been music, laughter and sisterly squabbles in the home, with an eye on the horizon for their father's ship.

Ngāhiraka was a very creative lady; an accomplished seamstress and did beautiful embroidery, learned from the missionaries when she and her sister were raised in their school. Her daughter Harriet, inherited some of her mother's hand worked linen and Olive Hartog remembers Harriet Smith (her grandmother) showing them to her. Harriet also inherited creative talent from her mother, as have many of her descendants. One of her daughters, Maria (Kennedy) Choveaux made the statement to M.L.C. when asked of her ethnicity, "In our life at Gisborne we have not associated with Maori and have always lived as Europeans. We never thought much about the matter. I was never interested in it."

THE SCHOONER TAWERA

A Poverty Bay Trader.

Old Time Memories

By Oswald Schulze.

Auckland Star, Volume LVI, Issue 56, 7 March 1925, Page 18

Courtesy of Nelda Elder.

In the early days of this Colony there constantly sailed between Auckland and Poverty Bay, a 54 ton Schooner, the Tawera, owned by Captain George Read and sailed by Captain Joseph Kennedy. She was a very pretty model, well built and fitted, but did not hang to windward very well. Being in charge of an obliging skipper (Captain Joe Kennedy) she often brought important war news from the East Coast to the local Press. She had good cabin accommodation and carried, for her size, an enormous number of passengers in her time. Not far from the mouth of the Turanganui River (Gisborne) a sand bar protected the entrance. On this bar used to be 7 feet of water, but the Tawera invariably drew more. Leaving Auckland we used to discharge a good deal of our cargo on the coast; if not we had to poke her into Gisborne the best way we could and innumerable times she stuck and was dragged over the bar, until very little of her main keel was left – no wonder the old girl could not hang to windward! Nevertheless, I do not think that there were many of her size and class rendered the country better service than the little Tawera. The Tawera had been too small for a long time, so Captain Read built a vessel very much larger and Captain Joe took over the new vessel in 1873.

Captain Kennedy's father was also a seaman, a foreign - going mariner, trading mainly between Sydney and Kennedy's Bay. A Frenchman killed him - whether it was ashore, or aboard the ship (he was cook) I could not ascertain, because it was a topic the son (Joseph Kennedy) avoided. His education in consequences was defective, and yet years of intercourse with men of culture, whom he carried as his passengers, had given him a surprising amount of polish - even in his language one would think that he had received a first class education. On his mother's side he was a descendant of the highest chiefs of the Poverty Bay district and as such he and his two brothers proved their claim to 60,000 acres of land in the hinterland of Poverty Bay.

*At Native lore and tradition he was adept. Here is an item which he, Captain Joe Kennedy, related when wind bound. 'One of my mother's ancestors, Tutamure, was a great warrior. He had conquered the country from Ōpōtiki right down to Napier. On all these expeditions he was accompanied by his younger brother, who was a very handsome man – the chief himself being very ugly. The chief whom he had subdued in the Napier country had a very handsome daughter he offered to the ugly chief for his wife; but the damsel objected, she wanted the handsome brother. Shortly before the return of the chief to his own country he took a walk and came across a very clear brook; he stood there for some time contemplating his features and finally exclaimed, 'So no doubt you are a very ugly fellow, and I am not surprised that the chief's daughter rejects you.'

* After the Kennedy boys were assumed orphaned, Joseph's brother Nathan was raised as Maori in Kennedy's Bay. The old people there knew his mother and her Whakapapa. It is only in recent years that some descendants have their DNA done and by the expertise and patience of Liz Koh, it was found that Rangirauwaka/Kateraina Taurangi had gone back to her whanau (family) remarried and had another family. Her story is in South To The Left Of Venus Part One, chapter 4.

Captain Joseph Kennedy commenced Lightering at the port of Poverty Bay, founding the firm of Kennedy & Bennett and later Kennedy, Evans & Co with his business partner, John Thomas Evans who had moved to the area from Oamaru, in a Lightering business. It was a small business then, for there were no freezing works, but it grew into a big business, company comprised of Timber Merchants, Carriers, Lighter men, Shipping and Insurance Agents. (Lighters were used to go out to the coastal ships to unload cargo). One Kennedy launch, the 'Lily', was swept out to sea in the 1876 flood; the schooner 'Clara' was used for work on the big river. From a small beginning the company grew, and by 1885 it owned 6 Lighters capable of carrying 450 - 500 tons. For many years they did the whole of the lightering for The Union Steam Ship, Huddart-Parker, and Tyser Companies and also carried out mail contracts, representing The N.Z. Express Company, Westport Coal Company, and the Alliance & North British Mercantile Insurance Companies. Mr Evans had management of the Office, whilst Captain Kennedy supervised the shipping and coal departments, an amazing achievement considering his having had so little formal education. Telephone numbers - 50 & 12. Bankers: B.N.Z. This company was eventually sold to the Sheep Farmers Company. Through hard work, Joseph Bond Kennedy became a wealthy man.

KENNEDY, EVANS & CO.,
GENERAL TIMBER MERCHANTS, GISBORNE.
AGENT FOR: KAURI, TOTORA and RIMU TIMBERS
And all Building Materials always on hand.
TRADE SUPPLIED of LIBERAL TERMS.

ALSO -
COAL and FIREWOOD YARDS in
Gladstone Road and at the Wharf. Westport, Greymouth, Bay of Islands,
and other Coals in Stock.

ORDERS PROMPTLY DELIVERED BY OUR CARTS.

18 Feb. 1893

Children of Joseph and Ngāhiraka Kennedy:

Edward (*Henry*) Bond* KENNEDY bn Auckland 8:8:1868 - 1948

*Harriet Bond KENNEDY bn Auckland circa 1872 - 22.2.1951 aged 78 years

Margaret KENNEDY Died of Pneumonia, age 2 months, 27th Dec. 1874

Kate KENNEDY bn Gisborne 26:3:1876

May Bond (Maria) KENNEDY bn. 1874 and died 1975, aged 83 years.

Hannah Bond KENNEDY Born 30.11.1880

*An agent for his mother, who was illiterate, registered him Edward HENRY Kennedy. His father, when he returned from sea, registered his son as Edward BOND Kennedy.

Poverty Bay Herald

25th June 1883

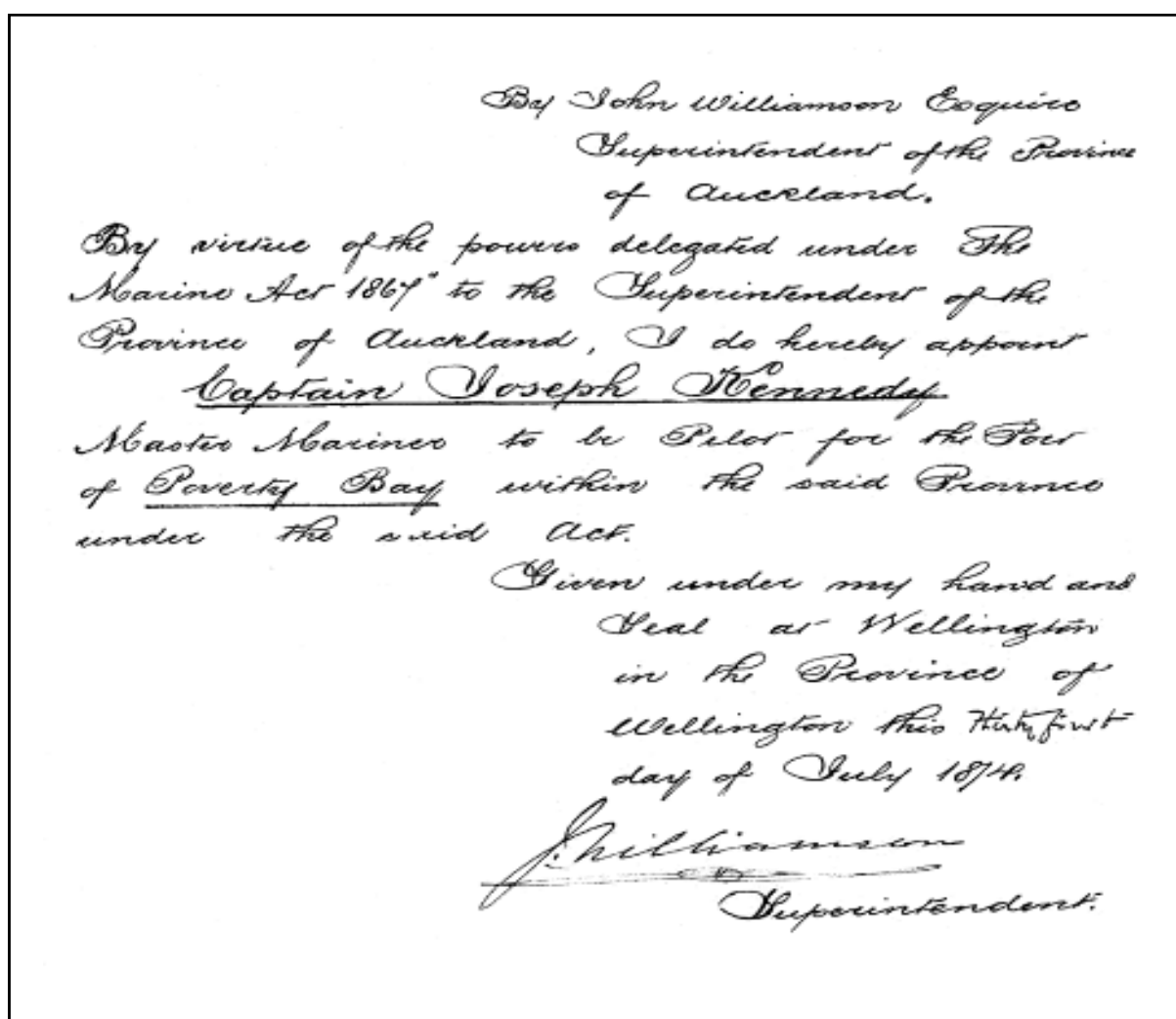
At the Trust Commissioners Court this morning before J. Booth, Esq., T.C. certificates were affixed to the deed of lease in the deed of conveyance section 151 Parish of Waioeka from **Katerina Takoto** to **Ngāhiraka Kennedy**; deed of conveyance of section 152, Waioeka; deed of conveyance in Harataunga Block (Kennedy's Bay) from Jonathan and Nathan Kennedy to Joseph Kennedy.

* It was Joseph Kennedy who eventually sold his father's Kennedy Bay property on behalf of his brothers.

These transactions between the family were possibly to help relieve the financial difficulties of Kateruri/Katerina Gundry, after the death of her husband, when the trustee he had appointed was dishonest and robbed Katerina of her assets. Her half sister Ngāhiraka Kennedy and Ngāhiraka's third husband, Joseph Kennedy, were both considerably wealthy and the families were close.

'Captain Joe,' as he was affectionately called, was never at home for long. There were always goods needing to be transported to another town. When the ship was loaded and tide and weather permitted, he would be off again, leaving her to run the home, always with an anxious eye on the weather, hoping and praying her husband would return safely, having already been widowed twice. It would have been a busy time for her with a large family so it was welcome news when her husband was made Harbour Master and Pilot at Gisborne.

In February 1874 the Superintendent of Auckland Province, John Williamson, visited Gisborne. He met various groups and made a number of promises, including some harbour works and the appointment of a pilot. As a direct consequence of Williamson's visit the Provincial Council appointed Captain Joseph Kennedy as the Port's first pilot and harbour master. As a direct consequence, in October 1874, Joseph Bond Kennedy was appointed Harbour master and Pilot at Gisborne. Three months later he left this position, in anticipation of the finding of a Court of inquiry after Pretty Jane stranded on the Waipaoa bar. Being on his own, virtually from a child, Joseph always had an independent streak and tendency towards non conformity to rules!



Joseph Kennedy's Poverty Bay Pilot's Certificate.

Courtesy of Sharman Orr.

Because of the number of occasions he had entered Auckland harbour, over many years and his exceptional seamanship, Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy was exempt from needing the assistance of a Pilot to enter the Waitemata harbour and berth his ship.

Finding of Court of Inquiry:

Court found that vessel was stranded by the want of knowledge and great imprudence of the pilot, Joseph KENNEDY and that the chief officer, James CAREY, was extremely culpable in allowing pilot to take vessel to sea during temporary absence of master, and not having remonstrated with pilot for attempting to take the bar. Master considered reprehensible for absenting himself when the ship was going to sea without any cause whatever, and for not giving positive instructions that the vessel should not proceed to sea. Master's certificate suspended for three months.



Joseph Bond Kennedy.
By the American Photo Company circa 1889
Courtesy of Tairawhiti Museum Gisborne.



Joseph Bond Kennedy
circa 1890.
The Cyclopaedia Of New
Zealand Hanna, photo.
p 1001.
Used by permission.

Joseph Bond Kennedy.
Probably taken at one of his
daughters' weddings – note
his button hole.





Harriet Bond Kennedy.

Circa 1889.

Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.

*According to her grandchildren's recollections, Harriet's hair had never been cut and it touched the ground.

In May 1890, Ngāhiraka Kennedy became seriously ill with ulcerated haemorrhoids, resulting in acute blood poisoning, an extremely painful condition. Her health deteriorated over the following six weeks. Ten days before she died she made a Will, leaving her family land in trust to her children, with Joseph Kennedy as Trustee. Here we see the only reference of her being referred to by her Mission baptized name, 'Ema.' Her Will was interpreted for her in her native Maori tongue, with the aid of a Government appointed Maori interpreter and in the presence of her much loved husband and she signed it with her mark 'X.'

Ngāhiraka Wood/Thomson/Reed/Kennedy died July 30, 1890
at Gisborne, Poverty Bay.
Aged 48 years. (Actual age was 52 years.)

Certificate Of Death

Ngāhiraka Kennedy

Cause of death: Purpurea haemorrhagica - 6 weeks
[blood poisoning]

Ulceration of the rectum - 4 weeks (*extremely painful*)

Peritonitis - 24 hours

Father's name: Unknown (*to the informant - Commander James Wood*)

Father's Occupation: Trader. (*Master Commander in Her Majesty's Navy*)

Seen by Doctor John F. Innes the day she died.

Poverty Bay Herald August 1890
Death

Kennedy – on July 30th at Harris Street, Ngāhiraka, the beloved wife of Joseph Kennedy. Auckland papers copy please. The funeral will take place tomorrow afternoon at the Kaiti cemetery, leaving the Runanga whare, Kaiti, at 2 o'clock.



(Rly. Publicity photo.)

The wonderfully situated Whare-runanga on Kaiti Slopes.

THE NEW ZEALAND RAILWAYS MAGAZINE,
VOLUME 11, ISSUE 1 (APRIL 1, 1936).

'The wonderfully situated Whare-runanga on Kaiti slopes.'

Ngāhiraka was buried with her infant daughter, Margaret, in the Hirini Road cemetery, opposite the wharf. The headstone is in the front right corner near the road, but hidden by trees. Incidentally, all who are buried at Hirini cemetery are from, or are connected by marriage (through Joseph's mother) to the Ngāti Oneone tribe, who are descended from the *Opoko-Rehe. Sadly this Whare-runanga was destroyed in a fire.

*Opoko-Rehe were based at Kutarehe town and were the land holders of Ohiwa harbour and descendants from Hape, Captain of the Rangi-Maturua waka.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley.



Headstone partially damaged reads:
Sacred to the memory of
Ngāhiraka KENNEDY
the beloved wife of
Joseph KENNEDY
who died 29th July 1890
Aged 48;
also her daughter
Margaret KENNEDY
who died December (*Pneumonia*)
27th 1874
aged 2 months.

STRANGERS WHEN PASSING BY
STOP AND WHEN
YOU LOOK AT THIS
THINK OF ME
AS I WAS ONCE
AND YOU WILL BE
AS I AM NOW
NOT LOST
BUT GONE BEFORE

Courtesy of Patsy Orr.



On 26th December, 2003, while searching for Ngāhiraka's resting place, Debra Smith found the headstone, face down in the grass. The family raised the headstone and concreted it into place the next day! Left to right: Peter Barry Smith, Debra Smith, Lorraine Mary Smith pause, as Barry Kennedy Smith performs a Karakia (prayer).

Rest in peace Ngāhiraka.

This is the last-Will and Testament
 of Emma Ngahiraka wife of Joseph
 Kennedy of Gisborne in the County
 of Cook Master Mariner. I hereby
 revoke all former Wills made
 by me and declare this to be
 my last Will. I give and bequeath
 Section 151 containing 50 acres
 in the Parish of Wairoa District
 of Opotiki to my husband Joseph
 Kennedy to hold in trust for
 my daughter Mary. The
 remainder of my shares and
 interests in other lands to the
 said Joseph Kennedy to hold in
 trust for my children Edward
 Henry Kennedy Harriet Kennedy
 Maria Kennedy Kate Kennedy
 and Hannah Kennedy I hereby
 appoint the said Joseph Kennedy
 to be the executor of this my will
 signed by my name this the
 2nd day of July 1898

Emma ^{by} Ngahiraka
 mark

Signed and declared by the person
 signing this will to be her last-
 Will (signed by her mark as she
 could not write) the contents of this
 document having been read over
 and explained to her previous
 to her signing she being in
 sound mind, before us and

This is the last Will and Testament of Ema Ngahiraka wife of Joseph Kennedy of Gisborne in the county of Cook Master Mariner. I hereby revoke all former Wills made by me and declare this to be my last Will. I give and bequeethe Section 151 containing 50 acres in the Parish of Waioeke District of Opotiki to my husband Joseph Kennedy to hold in trust for my daughter Mary. The remainder of my shares and interests in other lands to the said Joseph Kennedy to hold in trust for my children Edward Henry Kennedy Hariet Kennedy Maria Kennedy Kate Kennedy and Hannah Kennedy I hereby appoint the said Joseph Kennedy to be executer of this my Will signed by my name this the 28th day of July 1890

her

Ema X Ngahiraka

mark

Signed and declared by the person signing this Will to be her last Will (signed by her mark as she could not write) the contents of this document having been read over and explained to her previous to her signing she being in sound mind, before us and at her request in her presence and in the presence of each other we here subscribe our names as witnesses.

C.C. Lewis

A Justice of the Peace for the Colony of New Zealand

C.F. Harris Licensed Interpreter.

Correct translation of annexed Will. Fred Jones

Licensed Interpreter Gisborne.



Ngāhiraka Waitangi Kennedy

This exquisite portrait drawn by
Warwick Tilley, 2014.

Commissioned by Dion Tilley.

Chapter 15

NGĀHIRAKA AND JOSEPH KENNEDY'S CHILDREN

Edward Bond KENNEDY born Auckland 8:8:1868 - 1948

*Harriet Bond KENNEDY born Auckland 1872 - 22.2.1951 - SMITH

Margaret KENNEDY died age 2 months, 27:12:1874

Kate KENNEDY - WELLS born Gisborne 26:3:1876 - WELLS

May Bond (Maria) KENNEDY born 1874 - CHOVEAUX

Hannah Bond KENNEDY born 30:11:1880 - WILLIAMS

Ngāhiraka already had a daughter called Margaret, who was taken from her when her first common law husband, Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson died.

On October 1st 1866, Compensation Court sittings at Ōpōtiki were held in Volker's, house; the same gentleman who had been violently murdered in St. Stephen's Church nearby.

'Ohiwa, held by the Upokorehe, was contested ground between Whakatohea, Tuhoe and Ngātiawa.

One of the Claimants was Joseph (Bond) Kennedy, of mixed parentage, who claimed 1800 acres at Paiwiwi between Ohiwa and Waioatahe, through his mother, Rangirauwaka of Upokorehe. Kennedy was awarded a fifty acre block beside the Waioatahe River, the standard size awarded to military settlers.

Joseph was reputed to have fought on the side of the British during the Maori Wars about this time as well, but we have no record of his service. On 8th April 1867, before judgement was given in the claim, **Joseph Kennedy** was given 50 acres out of the land claimed as compensation in extinguishment of the claim of himself and of all other persons claiming through or under him.'

EDWARD BOND KENNEDY

First registered as Edward Henry Kennedy.

Born 8th August 1868

The eldest son of Joseph Bond Kennedy and Ngāhiraka was born while his mother were still living in Fort Street, Auckland. He was registered, by an agent at birth (Ngāhiraka was illiterate) as Edward Henry Kennedy, but on returning from sea, his father registered him again, changing his middle name to Bond. The family moved to Gisborne soon after Edward's birth and lived as a married couple. They discreetly visited Auckland and married in a Register Office on 15th April 1873. Ngāhiraka signed with her mark, 'X'. Edward, being his father's first child, would have been a very much loved, with his older half sister Mary Reed fussing after him! She was a clever seamstress and his parents were wealthy, by standards of the day. He was at school at four years of age! Edward would have received a good education and being the only boy he would have been somewhat spoilt.

A LIST OF FEES

In the late Mr. Lysnar's diary appear the accounts of the Gisborne School for various quarters during his headmastership.

Quarter ending September 30th 1872, and the particulars include
Captain Kennedy: Tuition for Mary (Reed) and Edward Kennedy
£1/6 shillings (Edward was only four years old!)

Edward (*Henry*) Bond Kennedy Born 8th August 1868 at Auckland

+ 1. Selina Copeley (mother: Lily Rich) born London 1871.

Married Dec. 26 1892 at Hastings.

Children:

1. Alfred Edward Bond Kennedy, born 21 February 1894, at Waipukarau.

2. Ngāhiraka Bond Kennedy born 23 July 1895, at Waipukarau.

Died 27 August 1902, aged 7 years, of Pulmonary of Tuberculosis.

*Alfred Edward Bond Kennedy, a Fitter, married in Hamilton.

+ Bertha Keegan Born. 9. 08. 1918, Ohakune.

Died. 30. 08. 1991 Waihi, North Island.

Alfred and Bertha had two daughters:

1. Opal Lillias Alfred Bond-Kennedy, born 23. 05. 46

Died 23 .11. 2002

Opal was a teacher and married Ian Alexander Mandeno, Auckland 1969

One son Jachin Boaz Mandeno

2. Nelda Selina Bertha Bond-Kennedy NGĀHIRAKA

Born 7. 08. 1947

Nelda was a Secretary.

+Neville Wallace Elder, married at Invercargill 1969

Neville (Wally) and Nelda have one daughter

1. Kyla Annette Elder born 12.10.1973

Kyla Annette Elder and partner Craig Aaron Hawkes have one son;

Elliot Craig Hawkes, born 26. 01. 2014

*Alfred had numerous aliases recorded in Land documents:- Alfred Edward Bond Kennedy, Edward Henry Kennedy, alias Edmund Kennedy, alias Erueti Mereana Ngāhiraka.

* Arnold Kennedy, as issue of Edward, is mentioned in MLC documents.

Being the eldest, and only son Edward inherited family land at Opape, by Succession, from Tame Tamihana, Ngāhiraka's son (Thomas Thomson) from her 1st 'marriage'. He (Edward) and his wife separated in 1913. Edward Bond Kennedy was working at the Petone Workshops in 1920, when he received an account from Hampson and Davis Solicitors in Rotorua, after having searched for information regarding his land at Opape. He died in 1941, aged 73 years.

Folio 23491. BDM. Edward Henry Kennedy's Will was disputed and went before the Maori Land Courts. My understanding is that he originally left his land to his sisters. There are various quotes from the Court proceedings and his sisters' testimonies throughout this book.

Electoral Rolls:

Edward Bond Kennedy:

1896 Residence - Hawkes Bay

1900 Residence - Waiapu

1905 - 1906 Residence - Wellington East

1911 Residence - Wellington East. Residence - Wellington North

Alfred Edward Bond Kennedy - 1919 Residence Gisborne, East Cape.

WOOLLEN MILL TROUBLE

Dominion, Volume 9, Issue 2734, 31 March, 1916, Page 6

Nothing further has transpired in connection with any movement towards a settlement of the trouble between the Wellington Woollen Company and its Petone Mill hands. When approached yesterday to see if he had anything to say, by way of a rejoinder, to the company's statement of yesterday morning, Mr Edward Kennedy (Secretary of the Union) said that a reply would be forthcoming this (Friday) afternoon.

INTERPROVINCIAL

Poverty Bay Herald, Volume XL111, Issue 14095

12 September 1916

The Press Association

Judgment was given today in the case against Edward Kennedy, secretary of the Woollen Mills Union, charged with aiding a strike at the Petone Mill. The Magistrate held that the evidence showed that Kennedy aided the strike, but took into consideration the fact that he might have thought that he was acting legally. The defendant was fined £10.

Land Information : Written by Edward referring to: 'Own Shares.'

Opape No1A No 10 Area ? rood 8 perches Total Shares 2 ¼ Own Shares: ¼

Opape No1A No 19 Area 182a or 03P. Total Shares 154 ¼

Harriet: 1, Maria :¼, Kate: ¼, Own Shares: ¼

Opape No 1A No 18 Area 1/a, 1r, 01p Total Shares 154¼

Edward: ¼ Harriett: 1 ¼ Own Shares: ¼

Opape No1E No2 Area 14a, ?r, 28p, Total Shares 2½

Own Shares: ¼ + 11/120, Hariata: 41/120,

Hannah: 11/120, Kate: 11/120, Maraea: 41/120

Opape No1S Area 82a, 3r, 24p, Total Shares 11 ½

Own Shares ¼ + 11/120

24th February, 1948

10. Alfred Edward Bond Kennedy. Opape 1E2 and other Block.

Deceased: Edward Henry Kennedy alias Edmund Kennedy, alias Erueti Mereana Ngāhiraka.

KATE KENNEDY - Mrs WELLS.

She was born in Gisborne on 26th March 1876. We know nothing of her life. The youngest children were brought up in Harris street home where their father Joseph and mother Ngāhiraka had lived, before he remarried. They were near Kati hill and no doubt enjoyed swimming, fishing and collecting shell fish from the beach nearby.

Their father was a wealthy man and provided well for the children. You can see how beautifully she was dressed as a bride when she married William Robert Wells in 1898.

Her niece remembers her in her old age as a 'big lady,' married to William (Bill) Wells, 'a small man.' In her old age she was 'practically an invalid,' by 1942, according to testimony of her sister Harriet Smith, giving evidence in Court. Kate was raised by her older half sister, Mary Reed, and sister Harriet, after their mother died. Sadly their only daughter Ngāhiraka Sophia Wells, died young. It would have been such a sad loss to the couple.



Kate Kennedy with her father Joseph Bond Kennedy,
on the occasion of her marriage to William Robert Wells in 1898.

Courtesy of Jon Tilley

Note: the greenstone earring she would have inherited from her mother, Ngāhiraka.

Little is known about the life of Bob and Kate Wells. It is apparent that they struggled to make ends meet. In those days, being a Carter was a hard job, coping with the state of the shingle roads, especially in winter and keeping the horses and cart in working order, as this Bankruptcy notice in the Poverty Bay Herald shows.

BANKRUPTCY.

The first meeting of creditors in the estate of Robert William Wells, of Gisborne, carter, was held at the office of the Deputy Official Assignee yesterday afternoon at 2:30 pm.
There were present Messrs. Sandlant, Townley, Ormond, Sheridan, Seymour, and T. Adair.
Mr. E.J. Crisp appeared for the debtor.
Mr Sheridan stated that his claim would amount to about £203, and that he valued his security at £130. he produced an Instrument of Security, dated 20th July 1900,
To secure £58: 6s, over
one four wheeled wagon, one set shaft harness;
also a bailment dated 8th October 1900, to secure £12,
over one black gelding, one brown gelding,
one bay mare, two harness, and three collars.
He was prepared to hand over this security to the creditors on payment of £130.
Mr Crisp said that from what he knew of the value of the security he would not advise
The creditors pay the £130, and nothing further was done in the matter.
The bankrupt attributed his bankruptcy to inability to work owing to the bad state of the road in the winter months.
Last summer he lost three weeks work through his Shafter going lame.
He considered his earnings did not average more than £1 a week.
He had no capital when he started carting. Mr. Sheridan Assisted him to get the wagon and horses in order to cart firewood, And he was to have paid Mr. Sheridan by delivering firewood to him.
He had delivered ten cords at 22s 6d per cord.
The creditors seemed to think that the bankruptcy was Attributed to misfortune, and the Official Assignee was Instructed to wind up the estate in the usual way.

In 1899 the couple had a daughter, Ngāhiraka Sophia Bond Wells, who gave birth to a son when she was 16 years old. I have been unable to locate his birth certificate.

MAHAKI WELLS born 1915. (BDM online.)

His father's name is not recorded.

Tragically Kate and Robert's beloved, only daughter, Ngāhiraka, died two years later.

However, Olive Hartog recalls, 'Wallace Mahaki Wells was living on a Marae, with his father's side of the family, for a while, until Auntie Mary Reed took him back to Kate Wells to raise. He eventually went to Auckland and visited her father, Alexander Smith, a few times.' It is thought that he had a daughter, but her name is unknown.

Death 28th Feb. 1917
DEATH.- WELLS, at Gisborne, on 26th February, Ngāhiraka Sophia,
the beloved only child of Robert and Kate Wells, aged 17 years.
Interred Makaraka cemetery.

MAY (MARIA) BOND KENNEDY - Mrs CHOVEAUX.

Referred to in her mother Ngāhiraka's Kennedy's Will as 'Maria' May, she was born at Gisborne, about 1878. When she married Henry Matthew Choveaux, a Clerk and Agent, at a Registry Office in Gisborne, on 21st March 1912, her occupation was recorded as being a 'Lady's help'. The bridegroom's father was in the Civil Service and Henry was born in Croydon, England. He had aristocratic French ancestry.



The Choveaux family crest:
GARDEZ BIEN - 'Guard Well'.

1. Louis Nicholas CHOVEAUX
(Nobleman at the Court of Louis XIV)
Wife unknown.

1

2. Louis Nicholas Choveaux
A refuge from French Revolution
Came to England 1791
Became Private Secretary to Duke Of Kent,
Queen Victoria's father.

1

3. Louis Nicholas Choveaux was born 12th July 1833 and married Anne Clara Farrel on 29th July 1854. The couple had seven daughters and four sons. Josephine, the eldest daughter, was unmarried and went to Zanzibar to teach the Sultan's daughters. One daughter died of Scarlet fever, one son died at 18 years of age when kicked during a game of football and one son died from Whooping Cough. One daughter married a doctor and Henry emigrated to New Zealand.

Henry Matthew Choveaux, the second youngest, also became a Clerk and emigrated to New Zealand. When he married the beautiful and very elegant May Bond Kennedy, at Gisborne. Henry had no family in New Zealand. May's mother had died and her father had remarried. Henry Choveaux established a music shop in the main street of Gisborne and no doubt their children learned music.

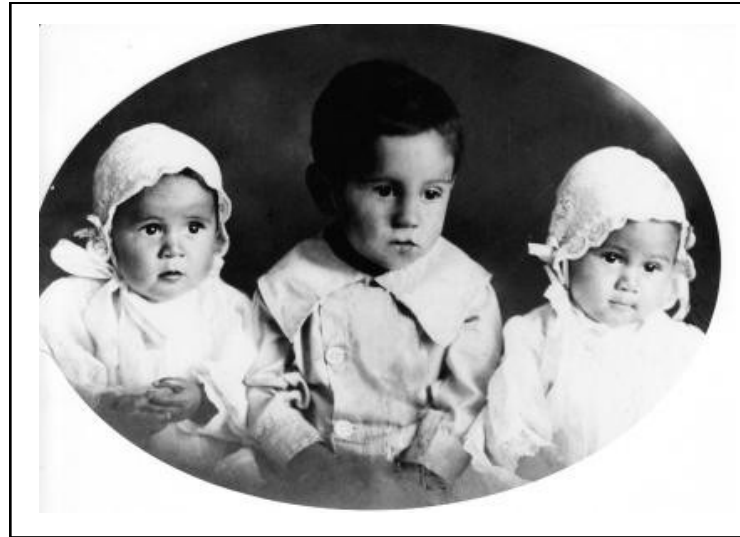
Henry Matthew Choveaux
married
May (Maria) Bond Kennedy
at Gisborne.
21st March 1912.
Courtesy of Sue Brownlie.



May Bond (Maria Kennedy) Choveaux.
Courtesy of Sue Brownlie.

The INDUSTRIAL AND ART
EXIBITION
23rd September 1908

Captain Kennedy exhibited a large
piece of greenstone in its rough state,
while a native map, and a 'Coat of
Arms,' worked in wool, by Miss M.
Kennedy, also attracted attention.



(Enid) Betty, Nigel and (Edna) Kitty Choveaux.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley

Registration Number	Family Name	Given Name(s)	Mother's Given Name(s)	Father's Given Name(s)	Still Birth
1914/1233	Choveaux	Enid Betty	May Bond	Henry Matthew	-
1912/16895	Choveaux	Nigel Christopher	May Bond	Henry Matthew	-
1914/1232	Choveaux	Edna Kitty	May Bond	Henry Matthew	-

The twins were called by their middle names.
Online B.D.M. confirms the name and year of birth of the three oldest Choveaux children.



Three daughters of May Bond Kennedy and Henry Choveaux.
(Edna) Kitty, Iris (Chook) and (Enid) Betty.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley

These three beautiful grandchildren, Ngāhiraka never got to see. Note the lacy work on their dresses. On enlarging the dresses they appears to be knitted in a lacy pattern, nearly to the waist. Kitty has knee length, hand knitted socks and they all have enormous bows in their hair! These were much loved, well cared for children.



Above from left: (Iris) Chookie, (Edna) Kit, (Enid) Betty and Nigel Choveaux.
Courtesy of Sue Brownlie.



Left: Nigel Choveaux on the steps of the
Choveaux family home, at Kaiti circa 1915.
Right: Jon Tilley with his mother (Enid) Betty.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley

Henry Matthew Choveaux + May (Maria) Kennedy

1

Nigel (Len)

(Enid) Betty + (Edina) Kitty (twins)

(Iris) Chookie
+ Harold Littler

1

Wynne Peter Suzanne Barry

Henry and May's eldest, a son Nigel, known as Len; then came twin girls, Enid Betty, known as Betty and Edna, known as Kitty. The youngest daughter, Iris Chookie Choveaux, was born at Kaiti Beach in 1913 and was known by her middle name, 'Chookie.' It seems that Henry didn't go to the first World War, possibly because of his eyesight.

On 20th December 1939, (Iris) Chookie Choveaux and Harold Littler, a local Hairdresser were married at the Registrar's Office Gisborne. They were both 24 years of age. Harold was the son of Ellen nee Stevenson and Albert Francis Henry Littler, a Taxi Proprietor from Gisborne. Witnesses who signed the Marriage register were Mrs. Elizabeth Ester Carr and Edna Olga Rich.

For issue to Public.]

NEW ZEALAND.

COPY OF REGISTER OF MARRIAGE BY REGISTRAR. No. 30057

1939 Marriage in the District of Gisborne [S.G. 100]

No.	When and where married.	Name of Bride.	Age.	Name of Groom.	Age.	Place of Birth.	Parents of Bride.	Parents of Groom.
1	1939 20th December Registrar's Office Gisborne	Iris Chookie Choveaux	24	Harold Littler	24	Gisborne	Edna Olga Rich Elizabeth Ester Carr	Albert Francis Henry Littler Ellen Stevenson

MANAGED, after the delivery to the Registrar of the Marriage Act, 1908 by

This Marriage was solemnized between

Harold Littler and Iris Chookie Choveaux

In the presence of

Edna Olga Rich and Elizabeth Ester Carr

I solemnly certify that the above is a true and correct copy of the Marriage Register.

Given under my hand at Gisborne the 21st day of January 1940

[The fee for this certificate is 1/6d.]

The Marriage Certificate of (Iris) Chookie Choveaux and Harold Littler
who married at Registry Office at Gisborne.
20th December 1939. Courtesy of Sue Brownlie.

The Littler's had four children, Wynne, Peter, Suzanne and Barry.
Suzanne Littler married Roger Brownlie and they had three children Paul, Shane and Emma.
The couple later divorced.



May Bond (Kennedy) Choveaux.
Courtesy of Sue Brownlie.



Left: Edna Kitty and Enid Betty Choveaux.
Courtesy of Jon Tilley.



Right: Henry and May Choveaux centre.
The girl on the right may be Irene Smith.
Courtesy of Jon Tilley.

Choveaux from Papers Past Transcriptions
Poverty Bay Herald

11 January 1911

Mr. J.H. Gittos, who has resided here for the past ten years, has been transferred to Hamilton, in order to represent the interests of the London and Berlin Piano Company in the Waikato district. Mr. Choveaux, of the International Correspondence School, London, England, has been appointed agent in Gisborne for the above company, and will conduct the business in the premises lately occupied by Mr. J. H. Gittos. Special space and attention is to be given to the display of piano, whilst the DIX gramophone department will be well looked after. Mr. Cowell, who is very popular throughout the district, will travel in the interests of the same firm, while Mr. Farr, whose name is a household word as a piano repairer and tuner, will attend to all orders left with Mr. Choveaux. Mr. J.A. Gittos leaves on Saturday for Auckland and Sydney, where he intends to make a special selection of talking machines and records of the trade in this district.

6th February 1911

Patent:

We have been informed by Mr. Choveaux of the London and Berlin Piano Co. that he has been requested to draw out specifications for letters patent for an improved saddle girth, and that the application has been lodged today. At the present stage it is not expedient to go into details except that it is simplicity itself and will only cost a fraction more than the girth now in use. There will no doubt be a large demand for this new girth, which will be on exhibition in the window of the London and Berlin Piano Co's shop to-morrow.

17th July 1912

YOUR OPPORTUNITY

Why didn't I buy my piano from
CHOVEAUX?

I would not have had all this trouble and worry!
That is what many say who have listened to the
plausible tale told by our competitors.
Let us warn you before you buy your piano.
It is a matter which requires your upmost consideration.
The prices of our Pianos are marked in plain English.
You pay us exactly the same price as you would in
Auckland or Wellington.
Our Competitors know that we stock
the finest Pianos the world can produce, viz.,
The Famous Steinway
The Wonderful Spencer
The Superb Kaps
Any of the instruments will make you content.
Come along; let's talk the matter over.
Our long Home and Colonial experience
is at your service.

CHOVEAUX
LONDON MUSIC SHOP (Corner of Grey Street).

INDUSTRIAL EXHIBITS

22nd October 1912

Mr. H.M. Choveaux, representing the
London Berlin Piano Co., is making an attractive display
of Spencer Pianos, Werthein sewing machines,
Columbia zonophones and records.



"NUF SED" - 8th August 1912

Henry Choveaux had a great sense of humour! He was entrepreneurial and had to compete
for business with another larger music shop in Gisborne.

Papers Past. Gisborne.

**Spencer
Pianos ::**
**Are used in the
ROYAL NAVY.**

This ought to appeal to your want.

Sound, Honest Value.

**ONLY FROM
CHOVEAUX,
SOLE AGENT.**

NUF SED.

Do You Know ?
THERE ARE MORE
Spencer Pianos
IN GISBORNE HOMES THAN ANY OTHER MAKE OF PIANO

OUR STRONG POINT
IS OUR COMPETITORS' WEAK POINT—
The Price!

We Sell from Our Assorted List.
DO OTHERS!

WALK INTO THE
London Music Shop
IT PAYS! IT PAYS! IT PAYS!
LISTS FREE. 'NUF SED!

CHOVEAUX'S.

Used By Navy! 19th May 1913



Above: London Music shop, Gladstone Road, Gisborne, two doors down from the Bank of New Zealand, in which Henry Choveaux was a partner.

Henry Choveaux on right, holding his tobacco pipe.

Below: a gramophone record, still with H.M. Choveaux, London Music Shop label.
Courtesy of Jon Tilley.



27th March 1914

Award!

The local agents for the National Piano Company, Messrs. Choveaux and Cowell, have received the following telegram the Auckland manager of the National Piano Company: 'At the Auckland Exhibition we have been awarded eight first awards and medals, also championship for display. Beaten all records.'

.....

4 April 1914 – Partner

Mr. H. M. Choveaux, of the London Music Shop, has opened a branch shop in premises two doors below the Bank Of New Zealand, in Gladstone road. A fine display of music and musical instruments is made for inspection. Mr. G. E. Cowell is in charge of The branch of the business.

22 October 1913 SWAT that Fly

To the Editor of the Herald.

In reply to 'Sanitas,' I would like, with your kind permission, to make a few observations. What connection, may I ask, has the 'Turkey Trot' and the 'Bunny Hug' to do with exterminating flies?

As to the contention that there is danger in children handling flies, I would point out there is no need for them to handle them. A tin of insect powder and a brush will answer that point. In regard to the statement that the teachers are lending themselves to such a paltry cause, I would like to know how he arrives at such a conclusion. The teachers, who know the danger of allowing flies to breed and carry germs from filth to food, are not losing their dignity by approving of this campaign, but are showing a broadmindedness which 'Sanitas' seems to lack.

The health authorities of New Zealand and other countries, not necessarily America, are seriously alive to the menace of this pest, and are passing bylaws to compel people to take steps to mitigate this evil and prevent breeding spots to be left exposed. It has been proved that one fly can carry typhoid germs from an infected house a distance of two miles. Re the prizes offered, they may appear cheap to 'Sanitas,' but do not seem to be considered so by the children, judging by the number who have entered this competition.

In conclusion, I venture to suggest, that 'Sanitas' has adopted a wrong nom de plume; it should be 'Fly Champion' instead. The matter which appertains to Mr. H.E. Hill, in 'Sanitas' letter needs no comment. I am, etc.

H. M. CHOVEAUX.

COMMUNITY SPIRITED!

In 1916 Mr Henry Choveaux kindly loaned a piano, free of charge, for the Red Cross Concert being held to raise funds for the soldiers in World War 1.

COURT CASE

15 June 1914

Oliver Lancelot Walker, of Gisborne canvasser (Mr Burnard)
v. Henry Matthew Choveaux and George Edwin Cowell,
of Gisborne, music dealers (Mr Coleman)
claim £501 damages for alleged malicious prosecution. (Jury Case).
26th June 1914 Case Settled

Mr Burnard intimated that the case had been settled,
defendants having paid satisfactory damages,
which had been accepted. Case struck out

4 July 1919

Gas Lighting

The All-British Moore Gas Lighting System, the latest,
most convenient, and most economical of modern lighting systems
for country homes, can be installed in your home, anywhere in
Poverty Bay or East Coast districts for 20 and upwards,
according to the number of lights required.
There is now nearly 100 plants in operation in this district alone.
Messrs. H.M. Choveaux Ltd, at the London Music Shop,
will gladly supply information and quotes on request.

MAGISTRATE'S COURT

20 November 1919

This afternoon Mr. J.S. Barton S.M., was occupied hearing a civil action between H. M. Choveaux, Ltd. (Mr. H. Hei) v Ruku Hinaki, Whangara (Mr. Nolan) and Ngarue Hinaki, Gisborne, in which the plaintiff company sought to recover £11/ 3s, being the balance due on two light Moore plants and a quantity of methylated spirits. Mr Hei said the goods supplied and the work done were really a contract to install patent light plants. Hugh Patterson said he approached Ruku Hinaki for an order to erect a lighting plant in the meeting house at Whangaroa. At a later date Ngarue Hinaki said he had £16 in hand for the work but before the order could be given Ruku and another man named Leach had to give their sanction. Witness saw both of these men, who gave their consent to the plant, being installed. Witness had repeatedly replied to Ngarue, who referred him to Ruku, and when he saw Ruku the latter referred him back to Ngarue. Ruku always said Ngarue had the £16 and he should pay.

To Mr.Nolan.

When he saw Ruku, Ruku agreed to the installation of the plant. Ruku understood that the three of them were liable for payment. The whole business was verbal. He usually worked on a signed contract with Europeans, but not with natives. It was difficult to get a witness to native signatures. Ruku acknowledged he was liable, because he did not dispute the fact.

Henry Matthew Choveaux, agent said Ruku pointed out to him the place where the light was to go and assisted in its erection. Ruku said the payment would be made by him in about 10 days time, when he visited Gisborne.

To Mr. Nolan: Ruku was the only man who had been billed for the amount due. He understood that the light was wanted to give good light for the Hon. Ngata, who was visiting the place to address the natives.

Mr. Nolan said the defence was a denial of liability. There was an unofficial committee, jointly responsible for the meeting house. Ruku had always expressed himself as unwilling to take any interest in the erection of the light.

Evidence was given by Ruku Hinaki, who said he had refused to have the light installed when asked by Patterson to do so. He denied Patterson's evidence that he had consented.

23 January 1920
TOWN EDITION

The Gisborne and Wairoa businesses
of H. M. Choveaux Ltd., have been purchased by
the National Piano Co.,
which after alteration to premises
will open on 28 January with an extensive stock.

18th March 1920
WHAT ABOUT THE FUTURE?

THE INTERNATIONAL CORRESPONDENT SCHOOLS have helped more men to successful futures than any other institution in the world. I.C.S. training is simple, quick, and certain. At little cost, it comes to you, where you are, and follows you round wherever you go. Post this coupon NOW!

INTERNATIONAL CORRESPONDENCE SCHOOLS
66 Dixon Street, Wellington
or

H.M. Choveaux Box 203, Gisborne.

Architecture	Advertising
Illustrating	Show Card Writing
Sign Writing	Agricultural
Salesmanship	Electrical
Municipal	Window Dressing
Mechanical	Steam
Civil Engineering	Motor Mechanic
Draughtsman	Hydro Electric
Garage	Concrete
Superintendent	Construction
Marine	Building
Commercial	Construction

If the subject desired is not on the above list write

21 April 1920.

Mr. H.M. Choveaux, indenter of sanitary fittings, wrote offering to install Free of charge for one month a patent chemical pan, with a view to satisfying the Board as to its efficiency. To be considered.

Mr Choveaux, representing the London Berlin Piano Co. Is making an attractive display of Spencer pianos, Wertheim sewing machines, Columbia zonophones and records.

Mr Choveaux Acting Manager For Concert.

20 November 1920

On Thursday next at 8 pm., at His Majesty's Theatre, Mr. Amore will give a concert performance of the principal parts of 'Faust,' being assisted by Misses Cotton and Messrs. Jones, Lavin, Catton and Shone. Mr. H.M. Choveaux is acting manager for Mr. Amore. The box-plan is at Muir's, and tickets may be obtained from any of the performers taking part in the opera.

The 4s tickets including booking, without extra fee.



Left: Nancy Choveaux 1931.

Below: The wedding of
Nigel and Nancy Choveaux
14th December 1937.

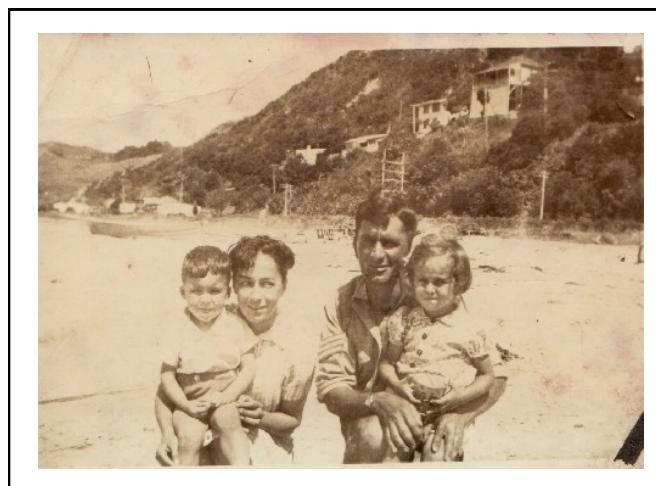


RECOLLECTIONS FROM CHILDHOOD

By Jon Tilley

Jon loved going to stay with his Granddad and Grandma Choveaux (May Bond Kennedy and Henry Mathew Choveaux). They lived in a big villa on a hill above Kaiti Beach. From here, sitting on the long veranda in front of the house, Jon would watch the old Maori ladies down on the beach gathering crabs, crayfish, and kina, and always wondered why they didn't get nipped. He would disappear down to the beach and play down there all day catching what he could and if he got a kina prickle in his foot and started to cry his Grandma would hear him and come hurrying down, knowing what was wrong, and carrying a bottle of peroxide to anoint his foot and take the sting away. He learnt to swim down there at the beach in the rock pools, his Grandma encouraging him with outstretched arms to come towards her, as he gained his confidence. He stayed with them a lot while his Dad was away at the war. In the afternoon, when the old man was resting, he would regale Jon with stories of Africa. In the morning the old man would tap on the wall from the adjoining bedroom where Jon slept with his Grandma, to tell him to come and get into his bed and there he would tell him more stories. The old couple slept in separate rooms. Every morning, religiously, when the old man got up before six, he would listen to the BBC world news on the radio. There was also a grand piano in the drawing room. Before the war the couple had a music business in Gisborne, but one day it got burnt down, instruments and all. They were devastated. Then the Kaiti house got burned down too and they were quite destitute. They shifted to Domett Street, on the other side of Gisborne and he took a job on the wharf as a weigh master on the weighbridge. From here he would bike to work each morning dressed up in his collar and tie. Jon recalls his grandfather Choveaux as a very aristocratic looking gentleman with a moustache. The old man eventually died.

Jon's Grandma was born Mae Bond Kennedy. His Gran had a stroke while he was at Intermediate School and came to live with them in their home at Centennial Crescent, selling the Domett Street house. It was here that Jon asked her to teach him Maori when he was 13 or 14 as he had so many Maori friends, but before she could teach him she had a stroke and then after she came to live with them another stroke, which left her speechless and that put an end to his learning Maori, which he has sadly regretted to this day. She never spoke much about her family, the Kennedy's, except once to say that she learnt to swim when her father had taken her and her sisters out on a boat and threw them overboard to 'swim' back to the shore. There was a family ring with the Choveaux coat of arms/crest on it (incorporating a horse) which old Mr. Choveaux used to seal his letters with using wax, but this ring has now been lost (or maybe passed on to another family member).



Jon with his mother (Enid) Betty (nee Choveaux) Tilley,
Nigel and Helen Choveaux at Kaiti Beach.
Courtesy of Jon Tilley.



Henry Matthew Choveaux
May Bond Choveaux was buried with her husband in the
Taraheru Cemetary, Gisborne.
Courtesy of Sue Brownlie.



Ngāhiraka Kennedy. Photograph copied from a locket.
Courtesy of Betty Schroder.

May (Kennedy) Choveaux had a photograph of Ngāhiraka, her mother, in a locket, identical to the one her sister Harriet had and which passed down to Betty Schroder. It is likely that all the girls were given a locket of their mother after she died. The family was upset when it was lost and so thrilled to have a replacement photograph from this book.



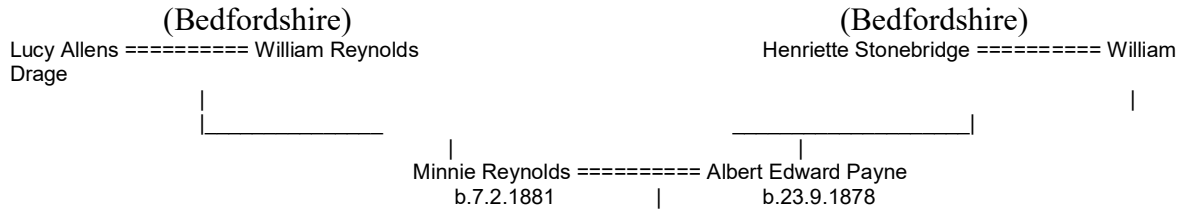
Jon and Corinne Aline
Tilley (nee Payne)
married in Ōpōtiki
21st March 1964.
Courtesy of Jon Tilley.



Mark Tilley Choveaux.
Died on Nov 11th 2006.
Son of Pat and Betty Tilley, Gisborne.
Brother of Jon Tilley and Joanne Jennings.
Father of Robert and Symon.
Courtesy of Joanne Jennings.

PAYNE ANCSTORS:

Information from an old family Bible. Courtesy of Dion Tilley:



Albert and Minnie Payne arrived in Napier, New Zealand, on 15th January 1909 aboard the steam ship 'Mamari.' They moved to Ōpōtiki in 1912, then to Otane in 1939 and back to Napier circa 1941.

They had four children:

- 1: Constance (Connie) Ruth Payne born 21.4.1909 Rugby, England. She had no children.
- 2: Winifred (Winnie) Florence Payne born 20.4.1904 Rugby, England.
- 3: Doris Payne b. 21.4.1909 in Napier, New Zealand.
4. William (Bill) Reynold Payne born in New Zealand 1.1.1911

Albert Payne was manager of the old picture theater in Ōpōtiki and their three daughters were very involved in the theater. One of them played the piano at the silent movies, as movies did not have sound in those days. Dion has a picture of Bill's three sisters as young children all beautifully dressed at a play in the old theater, which is still standing.



A production in the Ōpōtiki theatre in 1915.

Courtesy of Dion Tilley.

From the top going clockwise: Winne Payne, Rosina Vanstone, Connie Payne, Edna Dyson, Doris Payne (Fairy), Sallie McCready (Flower Girl), Bell Watson, Vera Frith.



Corrine Tilley's (nee Payne) extended family.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley

Back row: William Stephen (Mick) Butterworth, William Reynolds (Bill) Payne, William (Bill) Merrie.

Second row: *Ellen Barbara Cecile Butterworth nee Du Pontet, Derek Michael Butterworth, Marguerite Aline Payne nee Du Pontet, Keith Payne, Winifred Jeanne Merrie nee Du Pontet.

Babies on knees: Janice Eleanor Butterworth, Marcelle Payne, Donald Merrie.

Front row: Lynette Payne, David Charles Butterworth, Corinne Payne, Gilbert Merrie.

*Barbara Butterworth nee Du Pontet received the Queen's medal for services to humanity.

Keith Payne thinks that his grandfather Albert Payne was a builder, as he built the original family home where he raised his family. Later his son William (Bill) Payne took over the house and married Marguerite Du Pontet. They too brought up their family at the homestead. Keith also thought that Albert Payne was manager for the 'Ardline' (Carrier Line) a passenger service consisting of a fleet of prestigious large American vehicles which could carry up to nine passengers between Auckland and Gisborne and that his grandfather Albert was a member of the Ōpōtiki Council, but this information is unconfirmed. During the 1964 BIG FLOOD in Ōpōtiki all documents from the Court House and Council as well as all the paper work in homes, were lost including the old news papers from Ōpōtiki News. Information prior to 1964 is difficult to research.

In 1938 Mr F.H. Roe and Albert Payne's son William (Bill) Payne founded the Ōpōtiki News. Originally it was free and had a circulation of 125, but later it became a paid newspaper with a cover price of 3d. Over the years became a thriving business, employing many people and was an important part of the fabric of the Ōpōtiki area. In 1962 the newspaper changed from a broadsheet to a tabloid size publication. In 1968 William (Bill) Payne died and his son-in-law Jon Tilley in partnership with George Cooper and Ernie Wells took over the newspaper. Ernie Wells later left the company and the remaining partners had equal shares. In those days Jon had to set the wording in the paper himself. Each letter was made of metal and glued onto a small block the same size as the letter. There was a full alphabet for each font size and many different fonts for all the different heading sizes required. Every letter had to be placed by hand into a wooden tray and set side by side to make a word. It was very tedious work day after day and the lighting was not good. Jon usually took the paper home for his boys to check over for mistakes the night before circulation. Dion in particular became a skilled editor and loved finding mistakes his brothers had missed! After many years Jon's eyesight was affected so much that he felt he had to retire, so in 1983 he and his partner sold the business. The family have always been sorry he didn't hire a manager instead. The new owner's monthly payment for the sale barely covered Jon's mortgage payments on the land he had brought at Paerata Ridge, so Jon and his wife struggled for several years surviving on Corinne's nursing income while Jon lived alone in a caravan on site, until he had developed the land into a deer farm and built a house. While he was doing so his wife and two of their children, Dion and Schiovan, went to stay with their grandmother Marguerite Payne in the old family homestead. The Payne family home is still standing, but is not in the family's possession anymore.



The Payne Homestead
7 St. John Street Ōpōtiki.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley 2015.

The photo is taken looking west. The window on the right is Marguerite Payne's bedroom; the windows on the left was Corinne Payne's old bedroom where Dion later lived. There are three more bedrooms along the right hand side. Many happy family occasions were celebrated in this home.

WILLIAM (BILL) and MARGUERITE (nee Du PONTER) PAYNE.

Corrine's parents, owned the Ōpōtiki News and Bill Payne was a printer. The couple generously purchased and donated the land for the Ōpōtiki St. Johns Ambulance and the whole Payne family took care of the day to day running of St. Johns. Jon Tilley became very involved in St. Johns himself and served as an ambulance office for more than 25 years. William (Bill) Payne had a street named after him called Payne Avenue, but even that is a small tribute to what he had given to the community.

CORINNE ELEANOR PAYNE.

Her middle name is after her maternal grand-mother Dorothy Eleanor Du Pontet. Jon Tilley was a Meat Inspector in Gisborne and moved to Ōpōtiki to work as a Meat Inspector at the Bacon Factory in Wellington Street, now gone. He just happened to be living next door to the old Payne homestead where the Du Pontet sisters grew up and couldn't help noticing the stunning young girl next door. Jon loved motorbikes all his life and one day he took beautiful blonde Corrine Payne for a ride to the beach. They blasted down the beach at a very fast speed; Jon trying to impress her no doubt, but this time his bike hit soft sand. The front wheel dug in, the bike catapulted the pair into the air and they both hit the ground hard, skidding and rolling. Corinne came off worse, suffering bad sand grazes to her exposed body and face. Jon was very upset to see Corrine hurt and knew her father would want to skin him alive. He hoped he may be saved by Bill's devout religious beliefs and be forgiven. Jon took Corinne home but didn't wait around for the her father's wrath! He slipped home next door and listened to Bill shouting and berating his daughter for being so stupid as to go out with such a 'worldly, irresponsible young pup like that Jon Tilley;' forbidding Corrine to ever see him again. Jon had to endure the pain of listening to Corrine crying and pleading with her father. It was a long time before he plucked up enough courage to go and face Bill. Eventually he won over her parent's hearts and married Corinne during the great flood of Ōpōtiki, in 1964.

Jon went pig hunting the day before the wedding and was gored by the tusk of an angry boar (wild male pig) which ripped the inside of his leg. While he was carrying Corinne across the flood the wound got infected from the dirty water, which caused blood poisoning. On his wedding day he could hardly walk up the aisle. Fortunately he was very fit and strong, or he would not have been able to get married on that day.

PRESTIGIOS BLOODLINES:

Smith, Smyth, Du Pontet, De La Harpe and Malan.

This relates to family trees in last chapter:

SMYTH Ancestors.

In 1545 John Smith (Smyth) 2nd Bart was a very powerful Lawyer. He bought the estate of Ashton from Sir John Arundel for 920 Pounds, which included a Manor House, Chantry of Long Ashton and extensive Great Cromwell farm lands. Also purchased was the Manor of Durligh in Somerset. In 1547 John was elected Mayor of Bristol. The Baronetcy was created in the Baronetage of England on 16 May 1661 following the English Restoration, in recognition of the family's loyalty to the Crown for Hugh Smith of Ashton Court.
http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ashton_Court

Sir HUGH SMITH, 1st Baronet died 28 July 1680

Sir JOHN SMITH, 2nd Baronet 1655- 26 May 1726

Sir JOHN SMITH 3rd Baronet.

Although the baronetcy was extinct on the death of the 3rd Baronet it was recreated in 1763 for the husband of his daughter and heiress Florence. His 3rd daughter Elizabeth, and her sister married two Smyth brothers.

Sir JARRITT SMITH

1692–1783 (Previously known as Jarrit).

Jarrit Smith was the first to mine the Long Ashton coalfields and in 1748 commissioned the first mineshaft to be dug in South Liberty Lane. He was a British Tory Member of Parliament for Bristol, England, for twelve years. In 1760 he carried a bill through Parliament to replace the medieval Bristol Bridge which was in a bad state of repair and he was also a powerful Barrister. He married widow, Florence Smyth one of the daughters of Sir John Smyth, 3rd Baronet and Elizabeth Astry, the daughter of Sir John Smyth, 3rd Baronet. Jarrit Smith, motivated by greed, plotted to write his wife's sister *Elizabeth out of the Smyth inheritance. He, knowing the Smyth rules of not permitting family members to marry a Jacobite (sympathizers of the Roman Catholic Stuart King James II of England) simply falsified Elizabeth's marriage document to say that her husband Gerard Smith was a Jacobite, thus automatically disinheriting her. It was later found that Jarrit Smith had altered the documents, but it was too late. * Elizabeth is the direct ancestor of the New Zealand Pyne family. Elizabeth Smyth 1st married Astry. 2nd marriage Smith. Elizabeth's sons James and William disappeared to the seas and became Pirates (Soldiers of Fortune). As an old man, James Smyth returned to England and settled with wife and young son and remained unknown as one of the Heirs of Ashton Court, only disclosing the truth near the end of his life in a written signed account which was stolen after his death. James Smith his great-grandson, due to three generations of poverty, finally moved to Christchurch, N.Z in 1860 with his wife and children. An extensive family tree, courtesy of Dion Tilley, is in the last chapter.

FAMILY NAMES OF HISTORICAL IMPORTANCE:

SMYTH family, they saved the Royalty of England when the King was beheaded. They took the King's son, dressed him as a female and put him on a horse. Riding during the night and hiding during the day they got him to France and protected him until they could get a crown on his head at a later date, thus changing the course of history.



King Charles I and Queen Henrietta Maria with their eldest children - Charles, Prince of Wales (Charles II) next to his father and Mary, the Princess Royal, in the arms of her mother. Circa 1632. By Anthony van Dyke. Royal Collection. Public Domain. It was this little prince whom the Smyth family saved.

ELIZABTH GEORGES:

Hugh SMYTH 1st husband

Ferdinando GORGES 2nd husband, was responsible for colonizing Canada. He asked his son in law Hugh, several times to lend him money for his expedition, but Hugh did not like the idea and kept refusing. Ferdinando wrote many letters back to Hugh about his experiences. Dion Tilley has copies of these historical accounts.

POULETT and ASHBURNHAM families are direct descendants of French royalty. They and the SYMTH'S married to keep strength of money and royal bloodlines.

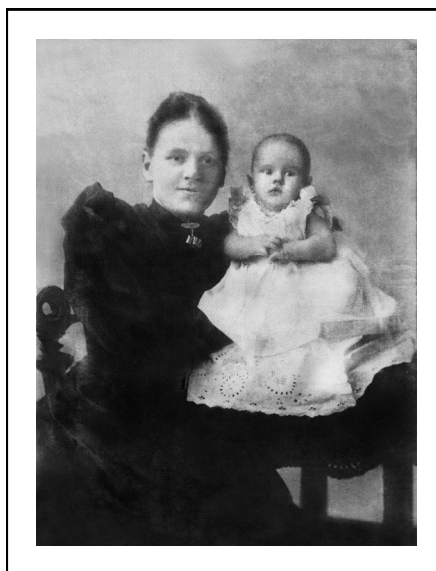
Du PONTET's are an ancient part of the French royalty and married into the SMYTHES.

De La HARPE and MALAN all have French Royal lineage. These families all had to leave France during the French Revolution, or risk losing their lives. César Malan (1787-1864) was a famous hymn writer and Evangelist in France. He is Corinne (Payne) Tilley's 4th great grandfather. The family tree is recorded in the last chapter of this book. Jean-François de Pontet who was equerry of the King of France and governor of the Médoc.

SMITH:

Dion Tilley said that there is a book written about the Smith family in Christchurch, which has a picture of the family gathering for Annie and James Wood's wedding, at their home in Ōpōtiki. Kate Sheppard (Katherine Wilson Sheppard) the original Suffragette is in the photo, as she was part of the family and lived with them for many years after she left her first husband in England. So Kate Sheppard would have become Kate Lovell-Smith after marrying Annie Fry Wood's brother William Lovell-Smith. The family are proud to have Kate Sheppard in their family and their involvement with the woman's voting rights campaign. Kate Sheppard could not have done her work campaigning for women's right to vote without family support. She lived and worked with them and died with the family in the homestead.

FRY: Annie Fry Smith was born circa.1833 and died 18.10.1918 at Ōpōtiki. Her brother William Lovell-Smith married Kate Sheppard (the lady on the New Zealand \$10 note.) Kate lived with the Smith family in their homestead in Christchurch for many years, so Annie grew up with Kate in the same house. This photo of Annie Fry Smith with her child Eleanor Dorothy Du Pontet as a baby, sitting on her knee, the photo was taken in 1892.



Annie Fry Wood (nee Smith) with her daughter
Eleanor Dorothy (known as Dorothy) 1892.

This lovely child grew up into a beautiful lady. See next photograph.
Courtesy of Dion Tilley.

Dion Tilley, one of Jon and Corinne's sons said, "In honor of the lifetime work my mother's parents (William) Bill and Marguerite Payne gave towards the founding of St. Johns in Ōpōtiki and world-wide, their three girls, including Corinne my mother, were each given a gold Huguenot Cross and chain, the symbol of the St. John Ambulance Service. My mother's Cross was stolen when she kindly took home a patient released from hospital because he had nowhere to go and he stole it. Mum was very upset because she had helped the man out of kindness and compassion. She had nursed him in hospital, cared for and fed him and even given him a roof and bed in her own home. Sadly the other families also had their Cross's stolen at different times.

My grandfather, Bill Payne died in 1968. My dad, Jon Tilley, bought half of the Ōpōtiki News shares and George Cooper the other half from his mother in law Marguerite Payne. Marguerite was the treasurer for St. John Ambulance from the day she and her husband Bill Payne set it up, until the day she had a stroke and could no longer do it. Then Corinne's sister Lynette took over as treasurer until she died.

My mother Corinne started nursing when she left school and excelled getting first equal (in N.Z) in her exams. She was a nurse of the highly qualified and renown for her caring. Her kindness and compassion touched many. Even today when people recount how Corinne was the best nurse and cared for them with such compassion; she was always smiling and genuinely cared. Corinne's grand-mother Dorothy Du Pontet, also put others first and had a heart worthy of a legend. Many still talk about Dorothy Du Pontet and how she cared for the sick families during the epidemic. When her own children were also sick with fevers she made sure they were fed and warm in bed, then would rush around the neighborhood attending to other families and then hurry home to her children; make more food for the next round of sick people. Caring for others was firmly and generously in Corinne's blood from both her parents Bill and Marguerite."



(Eleanor) Dorothy (nee Wood) Du Pontet
Corinne (Payne) Tilley's maternal grandmother.
Courtesy of Ōpōtiki The Women's Stories,
by Kath Connor, Narena Olliver and Annabel Allan. Page 24.

The Selfless Courage Of Jon Tilley
Courtesy of Warwick and Dion Tilley.

Warwick and Dion Tilley will always remember their dad, Jon, telling them about the time he nearly drowned while trying to save a helicopter pilot, with no thought for his own safety. 'Only a very few people have the courage that our Dad had, to be prepared every second of his life to save another, no matter how dangerous,' said Dion.

One day after Jon Tilley had been deer hunting and was heading home along the *Waioeka gorge, he came across a few cars and several people on the side of the road. They waved him down, telling him that a pilot was trapped in a helicopter which had crashed into the river. The pilot was in the water for twenty minutes before Jon had arrived and none of the bystanders attempted to get him out, as the helicopter had crashed in a very dangerous part of the river.

Jon, an off duty St. John's Ambulance officer, later described the incident to his family. 'I had to go up river a bit as the current was too strong to dive in directly at the crash site. It was winter and very cold. I looked down and saw the helicopter was completely under the water in the corner of a swift and deep part of the river. I knew this would be a huge risk to my life, but stripped down to my undies, went down the bank as fast as possible, jumped into the water and swam down to the pilot.

The current was very strong and the river was very cold and deep. The pilot's seat belt was jammed and I tried everything to free him, but eventually ran out of air. Between breaths I kept going down to free him, over and over again, until eventually I managed to get him out. Unfortunately the pilot was dead. I was so exhausted that had it taken one more attempt I would have died myself. I managed to get the pilot's body back to shore. The onlookers grabbed him, but left me in the water! I had no more energy to get myself out - nothing. I was even too exhausted to hold onto the rocks and nearly drowned a second time; I simply drifted away, half in the process of drowning. Fortunately I managed to grab a rock further down stream and hold on, until I regained enough energy to get myself out of the water.'

Jon Tilley received the bronze medal of bravery for his attempts to save a life. During his 25 years of service to St. Johns as a volunteer he saved many lives. Most of the victims he knew personally; many were dead by the time he arrived at the accidents and many were close friends. Even with Jon's steely character the emotional stress of seeing his friends dead, mangled or burnt from the many helicopter crashes finally caused him to resign; the nightmares eventually taking their toll. His children witnessed his emotions each time he arrived home from an accident.

'I don't think any other ambulance officer could have done what Dad did during all those years. Even his senior officers had to turn away and often vomited and so the burden of the worst accidents always fell on Dad. It was frequently made even more traumatic if he discovered the accident victim was someone he knew. Ōpōtiki was a small town at the time and he knew almost everyone.'

After Jon resigned from St. Johns he kept hunting until arthritis in his knees and hips became too painful, then he spent more time doing fishing. When he eventually retired as owner of the Ōpōtiki News, he bought a farm up Paerata Ridge and turned it into a deer farm where he and Corinne (nee Payne) lived until they died.

*Waioweka has two different spellings. Waioeka is the older version.



Jon Warwick Tilley
Bronze Medal.

Presented by Barry Cowley 23rd June 1985 at Rotorua.
Award for recovery of helicopter shooter from Waioweka River crash
26th June 1984

Photographs courtesy of the Dion Tilley.



For Services In The Cause Of Humanity



Queen Victoria Service medal To Humanity



St. John's 25 Years Service medal



Jon Tilley's St. Johns

HANNAH BOND KENNEDY
1880 - 1937

Ancestors of Hannah Bond (Kennedy) Williams
Compiled by Jill Kemp from information supplied by Samantha Barrington
Complete ancestry Chapter 22



Hannah Bond (Kennedy) Williams.
Courtesy of Mike Barrington.

HANNAH BOND KENNEDY

The youngest daughter of Joseph Bond and Ngāhiraka Kennedy, Hannah Bond Kennedy, was born in Gisborne on 30th November 1880 and registered by an authorised agent, Mary Browne, on behalf of her parents, on 14th December 1880. Her father was at sea and Ngāhiraka could not read or write. She probably had dyslexia.

When Hannah was 8 years old she was saved from drowning by a fourteen year old boy. He was recommended for bravery award:-

HONORS LIST

TEMUKA LEADER, ISSUE 1935, 27 AUGUST 1889

A list of awards made by the Council of the Royal Humane Society Of Australasia, includes half a score of names of persons in New Zealand who have been the recipients of Honors:-

Bronze medals are given respectively to...
Herbert Hyam DeCosta, fourteen years, Gisborne, rescued **Hannah Kennedy**, eight years. Some girls were bathing, when Kennedy was carried away by the current. DeCosta, who was 100 yards away, plunged in and brought her to shore.

Poverty Bay Herald,
Volume XV1, Issue 5488, 31st May 1889.

The Royal Humane Society of Australasia sat at a Court of Directors held in Melbourne on the 15th instant awarded an honorary Certificate of merit to Herbert Hyam DeCosta, for his humane exertions on the 9th of February, 1889, and this will be presented by the Governor at the general distribution of awards next month. Master DeCosta, it will be remembered, pluckily swam into the Taranganui river near the wharf, and brought to safety little Hannah Kennedy, who was being swept rapidly down by the current and was drowning.

Hannah's rescue was a big event in Gisborne, after a musical concert held in the Theatre Royal in September, the Mayor of Gisborne presented her rescuer with a Certificate of Merit. Young Hannah would also have been the centre of attention! Poverty Bay Herald 11th September 1889, page 3:-

To conclude with a presentation by His Worship the Mayor to HERBERT HYAM DE COSTA with Certificate of Merit of the Royal Humane Society of Australasia for rescuing **HANNAH KENNEDY**, 9th February, 1889.

Hannah's mother, Ngāhiraka, died in 1890, when Hannah was only ten years old and she was raised by her older sisters, Mary Reed and Harriet Kennedy, in the family home in Harris street near Kaiti Hill. When her father, Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy, re-married his new young wife didn't want any contact with the half Maori children from his previous marriage to Ngāhiraka.

Twenty six year old Hannah Bond Kennedy married Alfred Herbert Williams, a 36 year old Englishman who was born at Westfield Farm, Bloomfield Road/Moorfield Road, Lyncombe with Widcombe, Bath, Somerset, England.

CERTIFIED COPY OF AN ENTRY OF BIRTH

GIVEN AT THE GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE,
SOMERSET HOUSE, LONDON
Application Number 1160 8806473

REGISTRATION DISTRICT Bath

1873 BIRTH in the Sub-district of Lyncombe-Widcombe in the County of Somerset

No.	When and where born	Name, if any	Sex	Name and surname of father	Name, surname and maiden surname of mother	Occupation of father	Signature, description and residence of informant	When registered	Signature of registrar	Name entered after registration
448	<u>Joseph Bond Kennedy</u> <u>September 1893</u> <u>Westfield Farm</u>	<u>Alfred Roy</u>	<u>Male</u>	<u>Charles Ambrose Williams</u>	<u>Elizabeth Marchant</u>	<u>Farmer</u>	<u>C. A. Williams</u> <u>Father</u> <u>Westfield Farm</u> <u>Bath</u>	<u>18th</u>	<u>William</u>	<u>18th</u> <u>1893</u> <u>Registrar</u>

CERTIFIED to be a true copy of an entry in the certified copy of a Register of Births in the District above mentioned.
Given at the GENERAL REGISTER OFFICE, SOMERSET HOUSE, LONDON, under the Seal of the said Office, the 8th day of October 1973

This certificate is issued in pursuance of the Births and Deaths Registration Act 1953. Section 24 provides that any certified copy of an entry purporting to be sealed or stamped with the seal of the General Register Office shall be received as evidence of the birth or death to which it relates without any further or other proof of the entry, and no certified copy purporting to have been given in the said Office shall be of any force or effect unless it is sealed or stamped as aforesaid.

BX 998272

CAUTION:—Any person who (1) falsifies any of the particulars on this certificate, or (2) uses a falsified certificate as true, knowing it to be false, is liable to prosecution.

Form A502M (S.336335) Dd.001406 9999 9/72 Hw.

Alfred Herbert Williams' birth certificate.
Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.

The 1881 Census records that Westfield farm was 85 acres and his father Charles Ambrose Williams (aged 36) employed a boy and a man. Arthur's brother, Joseph, was 5 years older than him and both the boys were scholars. His mother Elizabeth (Marchant) was 2 years older than her husband and they employed a 14 year old girl as a domestic servant and a 16 year old boy as a domestic farm servant. They would have been a hard working family. In 1891 Census Joseph Charles Williams was a commercial traveller and 17 year old Arthur worked on the farm. Arthur emigrated to Australia in the next decade.

Charlie, Gwen and John Williams,
the children of Arthur's older
brother -Joseph Charles Williams
(Salesman) 1919.

He emigrated to San Francisco.
Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.



Hannah Kennedy and Alfred Herbert Williams, an Englishman from Somerset, married on 16th March 1910, at the Te Rau College Chapel in Gisborne. She would have been a beautiful bride as she walked down the aisle on the arm of her proud father, who was well able to afford to pay for her wedding. She probably wore the photograph of her mother, Ngāhiraka, in the gold locket her father Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy had made for all his girls after their mother died and a piece of greenstone jewellery that had once belonged to her mother. Alfred, a bachelor, was a storeman and Hannah's occupation was recorded as being domestic duties. Within a few years of their marriage Alfred and Hannah Williams moved to Sydney, Australia about 1910, where it is believed Alfred Williams worked in a Drapery store, but this is unconfirmed. Their only child, Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams, was born in Sydney, Australia on 2nd October 1910. Hannah and Alfred Williams and their daughter Elizabeth, known as Betty, returned to Auckland, New Zealand from Australia, in the 1920's. From a young age Betty, an only child, was a vivacious, talented young girl, who obviously had a talent for dancing and acting.

The girl on the right is
Betty Williams.
Circa 1920's.



PROPERTY VALUATIONS OBJECTIONS HEARD -
ASSESSMENT COURT SITTING

Poverty Bay Herald, Volume LV., Issue 17515.
9th July 1931.

For the purpose of hearing objections to the valuation of properties in the
Gisborne Borough and Cook and Waikohu.

Mrs. Hannah Williams 34 D.P. 209 of Whataupoko 6A Ormond Road,
32 perches, Capital Value £840, unimproved £300, improvements £540.

Capital value reduced to £815, unimproved value to £275,
Value of improvements sustained.

In 1923 Alfred Williams was employed by the Shaw Savill Shipping Company, at the Auckland wharf, to watch the unloading of cargo from the Steam Ship Karamea, which travelled between London to New Zealand. It was his duty to see that none of the cargo was breached and watch out for pillaging. Theft of goods from cases damaged in unloading was common. About 1927 the family moved to Gisborne and Hannah got a job nursing the elderly, working up to become head nurse at the aged residential care Memorial Home in Upper Ormond Road, Gisborne, which opened in 1924. She worked there for ten years and became Head Nurse. She was held in high regard by residents and staff. The family lived at 6A Ormond Road, right on the corner. The property was in Hannah's name and may have been gifted to her by her father Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy.



Above: Beautiful (Elizabeth) Betty Williams,
January 1932.

Courtesy of the Barrington family.



Left: Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams,
known as Betty, father Alfred Herbert
Williams and mother Hannah Bond
(Kennedy) Williams. In spite of dam-
age to the photograph, it is obvious
that (Elizabeth) Betty Williams was a
very attractive young woman.

Courtesy of the Barrington family.

* The only known photograph of Han-
nah Kenney's husband.

DEATH

WILLIAMS.—At Gisborne, on June 21, 1937; Hannah, wife of Mr. A. Williams, aged 54 years.

A short service will be held at No. 110 Ormond Road to-morrow (Wednesday), at 1.45 p.m., prior to leaving for Taruheru Cemetery.

T. N. Cochrane, Funeral Director.

DEATH OF A NURSE UNUSUAL OCCURRENCE

CONCLUSION OF INQUEST

A very rare occurrence, a rupture of the main blood vessel of the heart, was ascribed as the cause of the death of Hannah Bond Williams, head nurse at the Memorial Home, when the inquest was concluded before the district coroner, Mr. E. L. Walton, S.M., this afternoon.

Evidence given by Dr. R. J. B. Hall, medical superintendent of the Cook Hospital, was that when he visited the deceased on June 20, the day prior to her death, she complained of internal pains, but he was unable to diagnose the trouble, and when she died on the following day he was unable to certify the cause of death until a post-mortem examination was performed on instructions from the coroner.

The verdict was in accordance with the medical testimony.

After evidence of identification had been taken this morning in connection with the inquest into the death of Mrs. Hannah Bond Williams, who died last evening at the Memorial Home, the coroner, Mr. E. L. Walton, S.M., adjourned the hearing sine die. Evidence of identification was given by Henry Matthew Choveaux, a brother-in-law of deceased. He said she was a married woman and had been employed at the Memorial Home for the past 10 or 15 years. Deceased had been separated from her husband for several years and witness understood that the husband was residing in Wellington. Deceased was 54 years of age and as far as he knew she enjoyed good health.

Poverty Bay Herald Issue 19358.
23rd June 1937.

Hannah Bond Williams is buried
at Taruheru cemetery, Gisborne.
Section 1, Plot 273.

EXTRACT FROM AUCKLAND MINUTE BOOK VOLUME 23 FOLIO 126

Place : Auckland Date: 15 October, 1962

Present : M.A. Brook, Esq. Judge
P.J. Roberts, Clerk and Interpreter

37 ERUETI MERIANA NGĀHIRAKA REID (Deceased) Succession

Alexander Teece Smith m. on oath applicant, deceased was half sister of my mother, died in Porirua approximately 30 years ago. Unmarried, no issue. No will. Father Captain Reid = Mother Ngāhiraka Waitangi Deceased. Mother married 3 times.

1st Marriage = Thompson

Issue : 1. Thomas Thompson m.d.s.p.
2. Maria teo f.d. issue unknown

2nd Marriage = Reid

Issue : 3. This deceased
(one only)

3rd Marriage = Kennedy

Issue: 4. Edward Kennedy m.d. one issue
5. Harriett Kennedy f.d. issue 9 (my mother)
6. Maria " f.d. issue 4
7. Kate " f.d. one deceased, left issue
8. Hannah " f.d. issue one

Issue of No. 4

9. Arnold Kennedy m.a. Hamilton

Issue of No. 5

10 Albert John Smith m. New Lynn
11 Witness, 10 Newell Street. Pt. Chevalier
12. Percy Smith m. State Flats, 33 Greys Av. Akd.
13. Irene Clayton (Mrs) f. 8 Newell St. Pt. Chevalier
14. Moana Banning (Mrs) f. Australia
15. Thora Sutton (Mrs) Hamilton (c/- No. 14)
16. Stanley Smith m. New Lynn
17. Trevor Smith m. New Lynn
18. George Smith m. c/- Atta Taxis, Auckland

Issue of No. 6

19 Nigel Choveaux m. Gisborne
20 Kitty Choveaux f. Gisborne
21 Chuck Choveaux f. Gisborne
22 Name not known f. Gisborne

Issue of No. 7 - Ngāhiraka f.d. one child

23 Walter Wells m.a. Gisborne

Issue of No. 8

24 Betty Barrington (Mrs) Hamilton area

Court

Above entitled

Interests small and Court will apply £10. rule. Total value of interests is £40. only.

(Orders (Sec. 130) as follows:

To applicant, solely, (No. 11) in Opape No. 1E No 2 value £26.
No. 9 " " 10 " 9
No. 23 " " 15 " 1.
and " 1A No. 19 " 4.

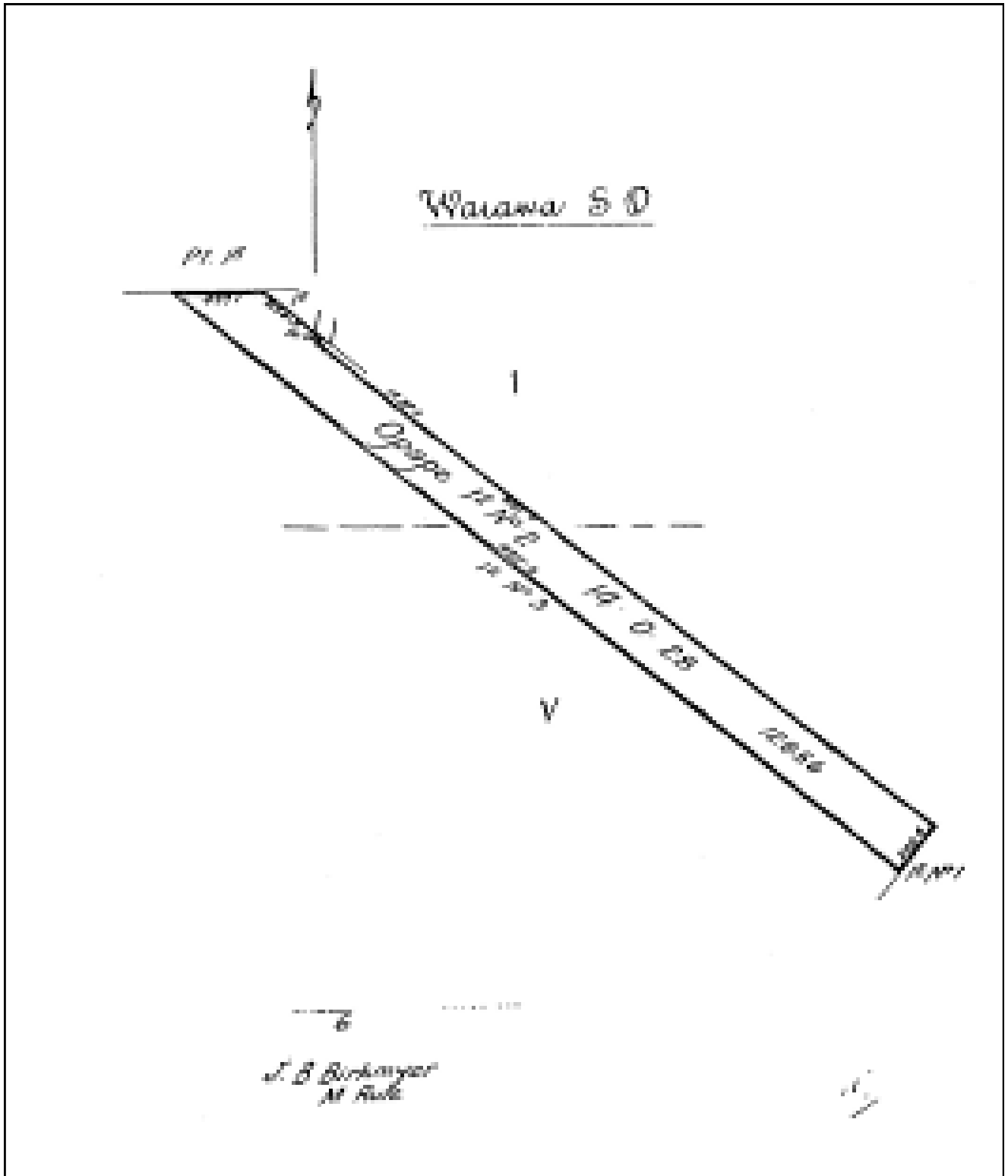
Order (Sec. 32) for payment to applicant of £9.4.3. held on
B.C. 10817.

Deceased was Mary Reid, daughter of John and Ngāhiraka Reid,
half sister of Harriet Kennedy, the mother of Alexander Teece Smith.
(Erueti Meriana Ngāhiraka Reid).

Location of the land at Opape.

Courtesy of Mike Barrington.

* Elizabeth Barrington, being the only child of Hannah Bond Kennedy, held Maori Land interests inherited from her Grandmother Ngāhiraka Kennedy. See No. 8.



A map of the location of the land at Opape.
Courtesy of Mike Barrington.

The family have some heirlooms which were inherited from Ngāhiraka, including a greenstone Tiki (Heitiki) and a stone adze.

Dr Thomson, Ngāhiraka's first 'husband,' mentions in his book published in 1859, 'The heitiki was considered the most valued of their (Maori) ornaments'. These were very likely handed down to Ngāhiraka from her mother Matarena. The family still have their family land at Opape.

BARRINGTON GREIG BROWN known as BARRY BARRINGTON and
ELIZABETH ADA BOND WILLIAMS.



On 5th June 1939, just two years after her mother Hannah (Kennedy) Williams passed away, 28 year old Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams (Betty) met and married 25 year old (Barry) Greig Barrington, a Motor Mechanic. He was born in Parramatta, Australia. His father was Colin Greig Brown. They met while he was working in Gisborne. He was living in Gisborne when they married and probably working at H.S. Motors (see photograph which had his name on the back.) His father was Colin Greig Brown, a Buyer. Born Barrington Greig Brown, he kept his mother's surname when his parents separated and was known as Barry Barrington. His mother was Eliza Barrington Brown. The bride's aunt, May Bond Choveaux, was witness at their marriage.

NEW ZEALAND.

[R.G.—12.]

COPY OF REGISTER OF MARRIAGE BY OFFICIATING MINISTER.

1939. Marriage in the District of Gisborne.

No.	When and where married. (Date, Description of Building, and Locality.)	Names and Surnames of the Parties.	Ages.	Rank or Profession.	Condition of Parties— 1. Bachelor or Spinster or as one may be. If Widower or Widow, 2. Date of license of former Wife or Husband.	Birthplace.	Residence. 1. Present. 2. Usual.	PARENTS.	
								(1) Father's Name and Surname. (2) His Rank or Profession.	(1) Mother's Name. (2) Her Maiden Surname.
3	June 5 1939 Holy Trinity Church Gisborne.	Greig Barrington Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams	25 28	Motor Mechanic	1. Bachelor 2. Spinster.	Parramatta Sydney N.S.W. Sydney N.S.W.	1. Gisborne. 2. Wellington. 1. Gisborne. 2. Gisborne.	1. Colin Brown. 2. Buyer. 1. Alfred Herbert Williams 2. Clerk.	1. Eliza Barrington Brown. 2. Barrington. 1. Hannah Bond Williams 2. Kennedy.

MARRIED, after the delivery to me of the Certificate required by the Marriage Act, 1908, by

This marriage was solemnized between us,

In the presence of us,

Greig Barrington

Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams

May Bond Choveaux

Charles Gray Corbett

Gisborne Domestic Duties

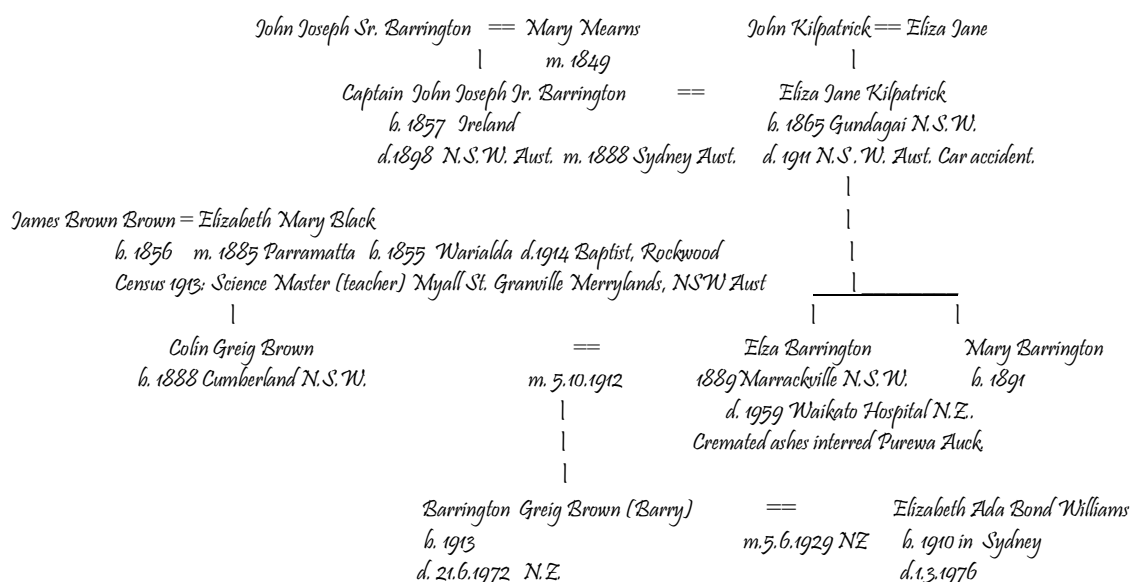
Gisborne Foreman

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the above is a true copy of the entry in the Register-book of Marriages kept by me at GisborneRegistrar's Certificate No. 1070District of GisborneDenomination: Church of England

Marriage certificate of Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams and Greig Barrington who married at the Holy Trinity Church in Gisborne. The groom's father was a Buyer and Alfred Barrington, the bride's father, was a Clerk. Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.

BARRINGTON GREIG BROWN (known as BARRY BARRINGTON).

Irish Ancestry:



JOHN JOSEPH BARRINGTON Jr.

1857 - 1898

Born in the town of Milton, in the Parish of Mullingham, in County Clare in Southern Ireland. British Army Service No. 1957. Records give a few details about him. He joined the 27th Regiment Attached to 2/23 Royal Welch Fusiliers and rose to the rank of Private. John was 5 ft. 8 inches tall, with a blue scar in the middle of forehead and smallpox marks. Aged 22 years, he was discharged in 18th July, 1878, as being medically no longer fit for Service and received a Chelsea Pension WO 97.

<https://www.findmypast.co.uk/transcript?id=GBM/WO97/1882/399678>

He married Eliza Jane Kilpatrick, who held a Bachelor of Arts Degree. In civilian life he became an Accountant. They had two daughters, Elza, born 1889 and Mary, born 1891. In 1898 Captain John Joseph Barrington became ill and sadly ended his life, aged 41 years. Elza was 9 years and Mary 7 years old when he died.

INQUEST THE DEATH OF CAPTAIN BARRINGTON

An inquiry into the circumstances surrounding the death of Captain J.J. Barrington was held yesterday morning before Mr. J. C. Woore, J.P. City Coroner, at the deceased's residence, South Sea Cottage, Osbourne Road, Kogarah. Eliza Jane Barrington, wife of the deceased, disposed that her husband, who was 41 years of age, and an Accountant by profession, had recently been suffering from bad health, in consequence of which he partook of more stimulants than usual. He had been in constant employment until a few weeks ago, when he resigned, owing to the state of his health. He had been very despondent, and remarked to witness, 'I am a burden to you.' On Monday last deceased remarked, 'It would be better for you if I were gone; I don't want to be a shock to you; but I must go.' Upon the same day he went to Sydney and returned about 8 pm. He retired early, but about 3:30 am on the 6th instant, began to vomit violently. Witness sent for Dr. McLeod at 6 am. The latter found a bottle (produced) which had evidently contained arsenic and showed it to the witness. Deceased died at 7:30am. Dr. J. McLeod when he visited the witness and he asked what was the matter. Mr. Barrington replied, 'I have taken arsenic,' at the same time producing a bottle, containing traces of arsenic, from under the mattress. The cause of death was arsenic poisoning. The bottle was not labelled. The Coroner found the deceased died from the effects of Arsenic poisoning, self administered by the deceased, while suffering from ill health.

8th Dec. 1898. The Trove. Findmypast.



Written on the back it reads: 'Elsa seated.'
Elza Barrington was a nurse at the Hospital For
The Insane, Callan Park, Sydney, Australia, when
she married. She also nursed in New Zealand.
Courtesy of the Barrington family.



The back reads, 'Ruth (Brown) and her mother,' (Elza Barrington.)
The Domain at Auckland Museum.
Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.

ELIZA JANE (KILPATRICK) BARRINGTON

1865 - 1911

Eliza Barrington (Barry Barrington's grandmother) was a remarkable woman, who, after the death of her husband in 1898, concentrated on the education of her two daughters. Elza became a mental health nurse and Mary a Library Officer at Warringah, Mosman in 1935.

After witnessing the plight of wives of non-union members 'locked out' during industrial strikes, the injustice gave her the motivation to become involved in the Australian Liberal Women's League. It wasn't women's rights that inspired her, but 'justice for all'. From 1904 she lectured, not without opposition, in Melbourne and New South Wales. University educated with a B.A. degree (she wore her cap and gown to meetings) and became the organizing lecturer of the Australian Women's National League. Elisa Barrington was held in the highest regard and a leader of women of all classes, 'working shoulder to shoulder, for the good of all the community.' Mrs E. J. Barrington drowned in the Hunter river in a car accident on her way to a lecture.

Excerpt from The Coroner's report:

... went back to the scene of the disaster about 7 o'clock that (Thursday) morning; on his arrival saw the body of a woman lying well out in the stream where the channels divide; had the body conveyed to the bank and searched; the body was the subject of that inquest; on searching the body found the sum of £1/5/1, a small silver coin, a brooch, a pocket knife, keys, scent, sachet for gloves, spectacles, a lady's gold watch, which had stopped at 10 30; sundries and a first class railway ticket from West Maitland to Tenterfield. There were no marks on the body, other than a slight scratch above the left temple; the body was fully clothed when taken from the water, with the exception of a hat. Informed the Senior Sergeant of Police at Muswellbrook of the occurrence; two of the bodies had not then been recovered; had handed the body of deceased over to the Coroner; there were three gold rings on the fingers of the deceased, which the Coroner told witness he would be answerable for, also a leather wallet; the property enumerated he then handed over to the charge of the Coroner.

Ethel May Flanders, married woman, living with her husband, Herbert Robert Flanders, Bridge-street, Muswellbrook, licensee of Eaton's Hotel, knew the deceased, Mrs. Eliza Jane Barrington, the subject of that inquiry very intimately; she had that day viewed the body, and assisted in preparing it to be placed in the coffin, and identified same as that of the late Mrs. E. J. Barrington; the deceased arrived at the hotel on the 24th July by the 2.30 p.m. by tram, staying until the morning of the 26th inst, having had breakfast at the hotel before leaving by motor car for Merriwa; her intentions were to go by the Albion motor bus, but she altered her mind, having been offered a seat in Mr. Tindale's motor car by the deceased, Thomas Falvey, accompanied by the deceased, James Mackay, and the motor driver Suess, leaving the hotel at 10 minutes to 8 o'clock a.m.; heard afterwards that another gentleman from the Railway Hotel accompanied them, the deceased intending to remain at Merriwa for three or four days, but for reasons which witness did not know she must have altered her arrangements, and was returning to Muswellbrook by the same motor car; the deceased had left instructions with me to reserve a bedroom for her on the following Tuesday night; she left in witness's charge all her luggage, consisting of hamper, hat box, sundry letters and papers.

The Coroner then adjourned the inquiry sine die.

THE LATE MRS. BARRINGTON
HER WORK FOR THE LIBERAL ASSOCIATION

Mr Archdale Parkhill, secretary of the N.S.W. branch of the Liberal Association and Reform Association, this afternoon received the following telegram from Denman. :-

'Mrs. Barrington, Liberal Organizer, with others, was drowned in the Hunter River last night near Denman. Her body has been recovered. Please communicate with relatives. The body is at Denman awaiting Inquest.' Messages containing similar information were also received from Muswellbrook and Scone. Mr. Parkhill, in referring to the unfortunate lady said, "Mrs. Barrington was first connected with this association in the 1904 election. Shortly after that, she took up work with the Australia Women's League in Melbourne, but returned here for the campaign in 1907. Since that time she had been continually engaged in organizing work connected with the Association. As a matter of fact, I only wired the Muswellbrook yesterday morning, instructing her to proceed to Quirindi, but received word that she had left, no doubt apparently, to go to Merriwa to address the Liberal branch there. The news of her death has come as an inexpressible shock to me and all others of the association with whom she had been in contact. Mrs. Barrington was a particularly bright and cheerful woman; a very capable organizer and a good speaker. Her death is a distinct loss to the Liberal Association. I understand she was a widow with two daughters. One is a nurse at the Hospital For The Insane at Callan Park, while the other is a student at the University of Sydney, where she won a bursary. She was a comparatively young woman and when in Sydney, stayed with one of her daughters at Dowling Street, Moore Park. "It is exceedingly sad," concluded Mr. Parkville, "to think she was cut off suddenly in the midst of her active work, in which she took a particular delight." Evening News (Sydney N.S.W.) 27 July 1911.

AUSTRALIAN WOMANS NATIONAL LEAGUE.

Address by Mrs. Barrington.

Excerpt: 'Mrs. Barrington wishes to distinctly define the position and aims of the League. While, personally, she had not wanted to vote and had fought hard against it, she recognized that now the franchise had been granted to women it was their duty to use it wisely. There were four planks to their platform:- loyalty to the throne - combating Socialism - educating young women on political subjects - and defending the purity of the home.'The lectures said that she herself was a widow with a family, and she was working very hard for a living.

'The late Mrs. Barrington B.A. was better known In Victoria and Riverina than in Sydney. She was a woman of vast energy and considerable platform ability, and it was largely through her efforts that the Labour Party was not backing the southern State at the Federal elections of 1907. Mrs. Barrington carried out remarkable organising work throughout the whole of Victoria in association with the late Lady Janet Clarke. At the following Victorian State elections she also proved a tower of strength to the Liberal Party. For a time the late Mrs. Barrington was also known as an anti-socialist lecturer.'

Wed 2 Aug 1911 - The Muswellbrook Chronicle (NSW : 1898 - 1955)

'The Secretary of The Liberal Association invited contributions towards the cost of completing the university education of the late Mrs. Barrington's youngest daughter [Mary] who had been entirely dependant of her mother. It was explained that about \$200 would be required.'

Thu 27 Jul 1911 - The Sun (Sydney, NSW : 1910 - 1954)

No doubt Eliza Barrington influenced her daughters to become hard working, well educated and informed in politics; with a strong social conscious. A year after her mother died, Elza Barrington married Colin Greig Brown and had two children, Colin Greig Brown born 1913.

Ruth Barrington born 15 February 1915 N.S.W Australia. Married Mr. Menge.
Died 4th July 2009 in San Diego, California.

No. 21
St 4419

NEW SOUTH WALES.

No. *X 2*

N^o. B. 6016

IN MINISTER'S REGISTER.

REGISTRAR'S No. _____

SCHEDULE.

MARRIAGE ACT, No. 15, 1899.

CERTIFICATE OF MARRIAGE.

Insert Christian and Surname in full of Minister or Registrar. I, *Thomas G. A. Bagley*

Insert Designation. *Minister of Church of Christ-*

Place. do hereby Certify that I have this day at *The City Temple, Campbell St. Sydney. N.S. Wales* duly celebrated Marriage betw

Insert Christian and Surname of Bridegroom at full length. *Colin Greig Brown; Draftsman.*

Insert Designation, Residence, and Condition of Bridegroom. *"Kingston" Marylands N.S. Wales. Bachelor*

Insert Christian and Surname of Bride at full length. and *Elza Barrington; Nurse*

Insert Designation, Residence, and Condition of Bride. *"Kingston" Marylands N.S. Wales. Spinster*

N.B.—"Condition." Bachelor—Spinster, Widower—Widow, Divorced, or Divorced (Petitioner), as the case may be.

after Declaration duly made before me as by law required.

DATED this *5th* day of *October* 19*12*

Thos. G. A. Bagley {Signature of Minister or Registrar

Signatures of Parties to Marriage. { *Colin Greig Brown* (Bridegroom)
Elza Barrington (Bride.)

Signatures of Witnesses. { *Mary Barrington*
G. D. Ansell
James B. Brown

vide Sections 5, 23, and 24, Marriage Act, No. 15, 1899. "The declaration on the back hereof must be duly made and signed, otherwise the parties and the officiating Minister or Registrar are liable to punishment by law provided in that behalf."

Marriage Certificate 5th October 1912.

Colin Greig Brown aged 24 years and Elza Barrington, a Nurse, aged 23 years.
They are parents of Barrington Greig Brown - known as Barry Barrington.

Colin Greig Brown was a Draftsman.

His father, James Brown Brown, was a Science Master (Teacher) Myall Street, Granville, Marylands, New South Wales.

Elza Barrington was a Nurse.

Her father John Joseph was a Clerk.

They lived in Kingston, Marylands, N.S.W. Australia.

Colin Greig Brown's War records are easily accessible online.

Colin Greig Brown

Born in Cumberland, New South Wales, Australia in 1888, he was a son of James Brown Brown, a Science Master (teacher) and Eliza Mary Black. His paternal grandfather was Irish. He married nurse Elza Barrington on the 5th October 1912 and their son Barrington Greig Brown (Barry Barrington) was born in 1913 at Granville, New South Wales, Australia. The First World War broke out in 1914 and Colin, an Engineer, enlisted in the Army in 1916. The couple separated. Elza reverted to her maiden name and moved with their son, to New Zealand.

AUSTRALIAN IMPERIAL FORCE--NOMINAL ROLL--continued.														
Regtl. No.	Names (in full).	Rank.	Age.	Trade or Calling.	Married or Single.	Address at Date of Enrolment.	Next of Kin and Address.	Religion.	Date of Joining.	A.M.F. Unit Serving in at Date of Enrolment.	Pay.			
											Before Embarkation.		After Embarkation.	
											Rate per Diem.	Date to which Paid.	Daily Rate, excluding Deferred Pay.	Allotment in Australia per Diem.
											s. d.		s. d.	s. d.
5th DIVISIONAL AMMUNITION COLUMN.														
7th REINFORCEMENTS.														
(EMBARKED AT SYDNEY, NEW SOUTH WALES, PER H.M.A.T. All, "ASCANIUS," 25th OCTOBER, 1916.)														
28097	Adamson, Robert Charles	Driver	21	Warehouseman	S.	G.C.C., Liverpool, Sydney, N.S.W.	J. Adamson, father, "Malvern," Liverpool-road, Ashfield, Sydney, N.S.W.	C. of E.	6.9.16	39th Infantry	6 0	24.10.16	6 0	4 0
28098	Brown, Colin Greig	"	28	Engineer	M.	College-street, Stockton, Newcastle, N.S.W.	Mrs. E. Brown, wife, College-street, Stockton, Newcastle, N.S.W.	C. of E.	18.6.16	7th A.L.H.	6 0	"	6 0	4 0
28099	Cunliffe, Frederick Herbert	"	20	Mercer	S.	"Blink Bonny," Chester	J. R. Cunliffe, father, "Blink Bonny," Chester	C. of E.	4.10.16	10th Battery A.F.A.	6 0	"	6 0	4 0

Australian Imperial Forces 5th Division W.W.1.

HONOURS AND AWARDS (RECOMMENDATION)

Colin Greig Brown

Service number	28098
Rank	Bombardier
Unit	101st Australian (Howitzer) Battery
Conflict/Operation	First World War, 1914-1918
Recommendation	Military Medal
Date	30 September 1918

1st Aust. Fld. Arty. 1st Australian AUSTRALIAN

6266

Date Recommendation passed forward. Rec'd. 29/9/18. Passed. 1/10/18.

Brigade 50/9/18
Division
Corps
Army.

101st Howitzer Battery, 28098 Australian Field Artillery. Bombardier Colin Greig BROWN.

Not recommended in connection with New Year's Gazette.

Near JEANCOURT on 18th September, 1918, Bombdr. BROWN did excellent and gallant work in running a line to the front posts regardless of hostile machine gun and constant shell fire. By his fearlessness and gallantry in patrolling and mending a line which was often the only one available for both artillery and infantry messages he maintained touch with the infantry and B.H.Q. throughout the advance until the final objective was reached.

G.R.A. M.H.
1st Aust. Division.

Major-General,
Commanding 1st Australian Division.

[Form A.—30.]

APPRENTICESHIP CONTRACT.

THIS Deed, made the 14th day of October, 19 29
 between Gilberd-Mitchell Ox-weld Company
(Full name of employer.)
 of 114 Taranaki Street, Wellington, Oxy-acetone Welding
(Address and occupation.)
 (hereinafter called "the master"), of the first part,
Elza Barrington
(Full name of apprentice's parent or guardian.)
 of 10. Graydon Rd Roseneath St. Salisnuoman
(Address and occupation.)
 (hereinafter called "the guardian"), of the second part, and
Greig Barrington
(Full name and address of apprentice.)
 a minor born on the 2nd day of September, 19 13 (hereinafter
 called "the apprentice"), of the third part: Witnesseth as follows:—

1. The master hereby covenants with the apprentice and also as a separate
 covenant with the guardian that he will take the apprentice as his apprentice in
 the trade of a Engineering trade known as
Oxy-acetone Welding],
 and the apprentice and the guardian hereby jointly and severally covenant with
 the master that the apprentice will serve the master as such apprentice for the
 term and upon and subject to the conditions hereinafter set forth.

2. The term of the apprenticeship shall be 5 years, commencing
 on the 21st day of June, 19 28 and shall be
 served at Wellington
(State place.)

3. The master shall pay to the apprentice during the said term wages at
 the rates hereinafter specified, to wit: during the first year, 15/-
per week; during the second year, 22/6d
per week; during the third year, 30/- per week; during
 the fourth year, 37/6d per week; during the fifth year,
45/- per week; during the sixth year, per week.

4. The provisions of the Apprentices Act, 1923, and the Regulations made
 thereunder, and the general order of the Court of Arbitration, dated the 30th
 day of December, 19 24, governing the conditions of apprenticeship
 in the Engineering trade, are, save
 as hereinafter expressly provided, deemed to be incorporated in these presents.

5. The period of probation referred to in section 12 of the said Act shall be
4 months.

Greig (Barry) Barrington's Engineering apprenticeship contract.
 This document is almost 100 years old. His mother, Elza, signed contract.
 Courtesy of the Barrington family.

After her husband, Colin Greig Brown, returned from serving overseas during the W.W.I. Elza Barrington and her son Barrington Greig (Barry) Barrington) emigrated from Australia prior to 1929, when as a 16 year old, he applied for a Engineering apprenticeship in Wellington. Being a minor his mother, Elza Barrington, signed the contract. They were living at Roseneath, Wellington and she was working as a Saleswoman. Her courageous decision to emigrate to New Zealand changed family history! Elza Barrington's last known address was Bairds Road, Tokoroa and she died 'an invalid' in Waikato hospital in 1959.



Above: In the summer of 1939, handsome young welder, 25 year old Barry Barrington, enjoyed a game of golf with a group of friends. He was attracted to the vivacious Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams (Betty) and the couple married in Gisborne, in June that year.



Left: Betty (Elizabeth) Williams with friends.
Right: Barry Barrington, summer of 1939.



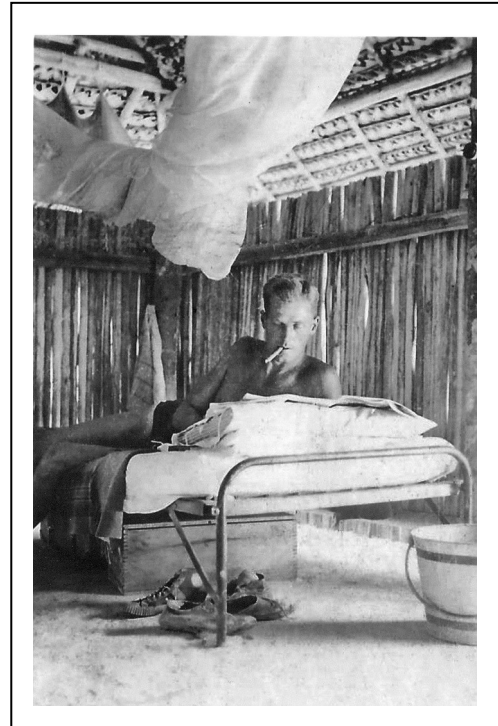
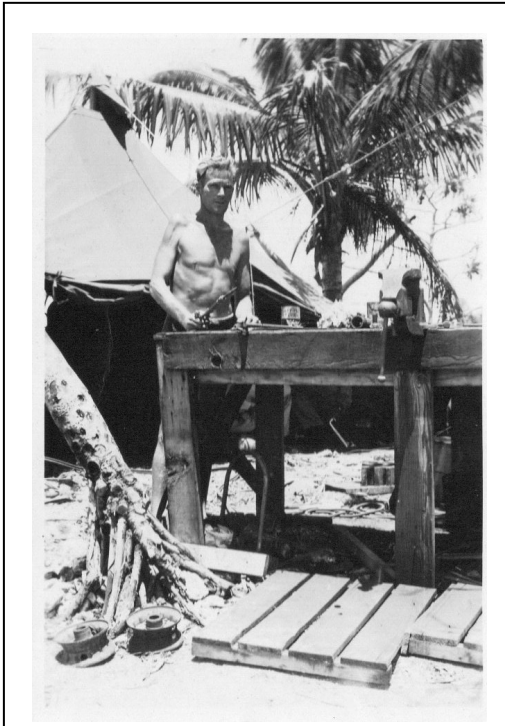
Left: Ruth Brown (Greig's sister) baby Judith, Betty and (Greig) Barry Barrington. Judith Bond Barrington, was Christened at the Holy Trinity church Gisborne, June 5th 1940. Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.

Mike Barrington shared memories of his father's wartime experiences and recalled, "When World War 2 broke out, most young men jumped at the chance of adventure and signed up for service and (Greig) Barry Barrington was no exception. He was turned down for medical reasons because of an old shoulder injury which left him unable to salute. He tried unsuccessfully to join up several times but eventually was accepted by a government program called Man Power. As a skilled welder he was sent to Aitutaki in the Cook Islands to build an airstrip for the Americans."

The War spent on a tropical island was paradise, in spite of the mosquitoes! Because of the News Black Out (to protect national security) was in place during the war, information about the operation was difficult to find, but fortunately there was an account recorded on the internet: 'The US Engineering firm Sverdrup and Parcel were given approval to build Aitutaki's airfield. It was referred to as 'Amuri Field'. Sverdrup's engineer, De Will C. Wolfe, described the construction: "We didn't build from plans; we just knew what we wanted, how long and how wide, and we just went in there and built them with what we had. We were building coral surface airstrips, before the Seebies were even organized, can you believe that? The base course was made up with large hunks of coral which we ran over with tractors until they came down to size and then we topped it with coral sand. Coral has a lot of lime in it and we kept it wet with sea water so it could pack down. We'd wet it and roll it, wet it and roll it again - it got almost like concrete. Our equipment came down from Honolulu by way of tugs and barges - the stuff started moving about six months after war was declared. The New Zealand Public Works department provided us with skilled labour and engineers. We hired native labour whenever we could. We paid them with money advanced to us by the US Army Corps of Engineers. Once the strips were completed we drew as built plans. These were the only plans that ever existed. Amuri field was completed by the end of August 1942 when a 16 man unit of US military engineers arrived to begin making preparations for the arrival of Task Force 8408 on the 14th November 1942."

Two airstrips were constructed on what was previously a low lying and partially swampy peninsular. One landing strip 6000 feet (1829 meters) by 299 feet (61 meters) ran North-South. The other strip of 5100 feet (1555 meters) by 200 feet (61 meters) ran in an East-West direction at the Northern end of the field. ... Eight revetments, or bunkers, were constructed randomly along both landing strips. These were to house and camouflage aircraft parked on the ground. Several of these are still evident. A large dispersal area was formed along approximately 300 meters of what is today the main road leading to Arutanga from the intersection at the East-West strip. The air base on Aitutaki is reputed to have cost the US four and a half million dollars. (Friday 1945.) '

<https://www.aitutakiww2.com/amuri-field>

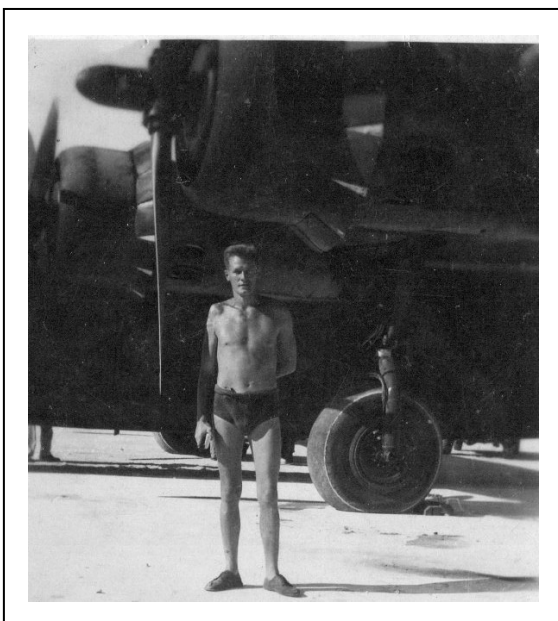


Some of Barry Barrington's personal photographs from his time at Aitutaki. Photographs of this time are rare. Courtesy of the Barrington family.

Left: At the work bench - no fancy workshops here!

Right: Barry's haven - a place to read Betty's letters and think about home.

(Grieg) Barry Barrington A.P.O. 721, Aitutaki, Rarotonga, Cook Islands, 2nd Sept. 1942.



'The first plane to land on Aitutaki in the Cook island group was R.N.Z.A.F. Lockheed Lodestar N.Z. 3508, captained by Flight Lt. Tom Mounsey, on 25th November 1945. The airport was constructed by the New Zealand Services branch and was a gift to the Cooks from N.Z. Prime minister Peter Fraser. This was reported (with photos) in NZ Wings magazine in August 1966.' Dave Homewood - Wings Over New Zealand Forum.



X

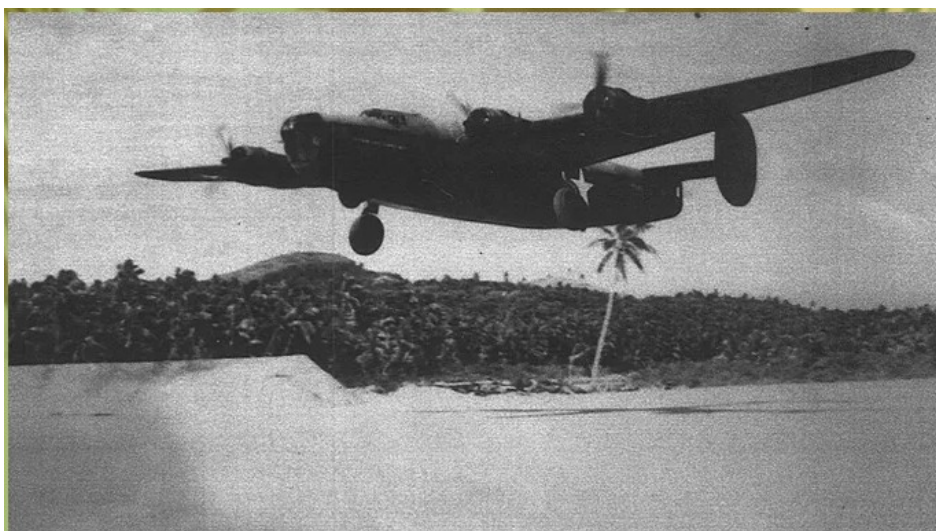
Airfield construction team from New Zealand Public Works. Aitutaki, Cook Islands 1942.

<https://www.aitutakiww2.com/amuri-field>

Aitutaki steam rollers



<https://www.aitutakiww2.com/amuri-field>



<https://www.aitutakiww2.com/amuri-field>



H.S. Motors Ltd. Grey Street, Gisborne.
Specialising in Packard, Morris and Hudson.
Terraplane Sales and Service. 1912-1930.
On the back it reads: Mr. Greig Barrington. (Barry)
Courtesy of the Barrington family.

This is a rare photograph. Hudson cars were a top selling brand at the time. In 1932, Hudson car manufacturers launched a new line on July 21, 1932, with a promotional christening by Amelia Earhart, and began phasing out its Essex nameplate for the Terraplane brand. The Terraplane (car) was renamed the Hudson 112 in 1938. Greig (Barry) Barrington would have learnt his trade on these cars. He was a motor Mechanic at the time of his marriage.

After he returned from the Cook Islands Barry Barrington worked at various Ministry of Works projects around the North Island, New Zealand. He and Elizabeth had two more children, Michael and Chris. He worked on the Piripaua hydroelectric power station, and Kaitawa Hydroelectric station which began operation in 1947. It was the last of three power stations built between 1929 and 1948, making up the Lake Waikaremoana scheme, living in a small ministry of work house with his family. These work camps were often described as "nappy valley", with so many young children there. Strong friendships and communities were established, but the houses were cold and poorly insulated.



Judy and Michael Barrington,
Piripaua 1945.



Judy 8 years old and 4 year old
Michael Barrington.



23rd June 1942.
Left: Betty's aunt, Kate Wells, Judy (centre)
with her mother Betty (right).
Courtesy of the Barrington family.



The Barrington family lived at the Ministry Of Works camp
at the Hydroelectric power station, Winter in Kaitawa,
1946-1947.
Courtesy of the Barrington family.



(Greig) Barry Barrington (Brown) with his children:
Judith, toddler Chris and Michael.



A beautiful portrait of
Ngāhiraka Kennedy,
drawn by Samantha Barrington in 2019,
a daughter of Mike Barrington.
Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.

Left:(Greig) Barry Barrington
(Brown) off to the Ellerslie
races in Auckland..



'Elizabeth Ada Bond
(Williams) Barrington.
Courtesy of the Barrington
family.

Samantha Barrington writes: 'Elizabeth Ada Bond (Williams) Barrington passed away in Tokoroa. Aunty Judy and her daughter Janine, lived downstairs. Dad (Mike Barrington) and I came back from Australia when she was ill and we stayed for a while before she died. I remember sitting on the couch with her and watching Basil Brush (a children's T.V. programme). My grandmother was a very good business women and operated a trucking business in Tokoroa. She sold it to her head driver before her death on 14th March 1976.'

DEATHS IN THE DISTRICT OF <i>Wairoa</i>				DURING THE QUARTER ENDING THE <i>31st</i> of <i>Decemr</i> , 19 <i>42</i>				REGISTRATION		
No.	DESCRIPTION OF DECEASED.		CAUSE OF DEATH.		PARENTS.		IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED.		INFORMANT.	REGISTRAR.
	1. When died.	1. Name and Surname. 2. Rank, Profession, or Occupation.	1. Name and Surname. 2. Rank, Profession, or Occupation.	1. Name and Surname. 2. Rank, Profession, or Occupation.	1. Name and Surname of Father. 2. Name and Surname of Mother. 3. Rank or Profession of Father.	1. Name and Surname of Mother. 2. Rank or Profession of Mother.	1. Where married. 2. At what Age married. 3. To whom married. 4. Age of Widow, if living	1. Where married. 2. How long married. 3. To whom married. 4. Age of Widow, if living	1. Signature of the Informant. 2. How long married. 3. To whom married. 4. Age of Widow, if living	1. Signature of the Registrar. 2. Date of Registration.
(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)	(10)	(11)
36	(1) 1942 5 Decemr (2) Public Hospital Wairoa for Femr	(1) Alfred Herbert Williams (2) Labourer	(1) Carcinoma of Stomach (2) 5 months (3) Secondary Anemia (4) E.C. Gardner (5) Decemr 1942	(1) Charles Ambrose Williams (2) Elizabeth Williams (3) Marchant (4) Farmer	(1) Charles Ambrose Williams (2) Elizabeth Williams (3) Marchant (4) Farmer	(1) 8 Decemr 1942 (2) Wairoa (3) 8 Decemr 1942 (4) Wairoa (5) 8 Decemr 1942 (6) Wairoa (7) 8 Decemr 1942 (8) Wairoa (9) 8 Decemr 1942 (10) Wairoa (11) 8 Decemr 1942 (12) Wairoa	(1) Unknown (2) Unknown (3) Unknown (4) Unknown (5) Unknown (6) Unknown (7) Unknown (8) Unknown (9) Unknown (10) Unknown (11) Unknown (12) Unknown	(1) Unknown (2) Unknown (3) Unknown (4) Unknown (5) Unknown (6) Unknown (7) Unknown (8) Unknown (9) Unknown (10) Unknown (11) Unknown (12) Unknown	(1) A.C. Wilson (2) Undertaker (3) Wairoa (4) 1942 9 December	(1) H. James (2) Registrar (3) 1942 9 December

1942/folio number 30842

Alfred Herbert Williams, 69 years. (born circa 1873).

Details from Alfred Herbert William's Death Certificate:

Died in Public Hospital Wairoa, New Zealand, on 8th December 1942, aged 59 years.

Cause: Carcinoma of the stomach and Secondary Anemia.

Occupation: Labourer.

Born: Westfield Farm, Bath, England.

Parents: Charles Ambrose Williams Farmer and Elizabeth Marchant, born in Wiltshire.

Children unknown by informant, the Undertaker.

Alfred Herbert Williams, Hannah Bond Kennedy's husband, was a retired labourer living in Piripaua, Wairoa, Hawkes Bay. He died of Cancer of the stomach at Wairoa Public Hospital, in 1942. Just before he died he made a Will, witnessed by one of the nursing staff. He left his daughter Elizabeth as sole Heir. After her husband, (Grieg) Barry Barrington died, Elizabeth kept their trucking business going, very successfully. Before she died, Elizabeth sold the whole business to her head driver.

Courtesy of the Barrington family.

This is the last Will and Testament of me
Alfred Herbert Williams of Piripaua in
the Provincial District of Hawkes Bay District
I appoint my daughter Elizabeth Ada Bond
Barrington of Gisborne married woman
to be the Executrix of this my will I give
devise and bequeath all my estate both real
and personal of whatsoever kind and wherever
situate unto the said Elizabeth Ada Bond
Barrington absolutely and lastly I revoke all
testamentary instruments heretofore made by me
and declare this to be my last will and Testament
In Witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand
this thirtieth day of November One thousand nine
hundred and forty-two.

Alfred H. Williams

Signed by the testator as and for his last will
and Testament in the presence of us together
present at the same time who at his request in
his sight and presence and in the presence of
each other have hereunto subscribed our names as
witnesses

L. K. Lambert.

Nurse
Wairoa

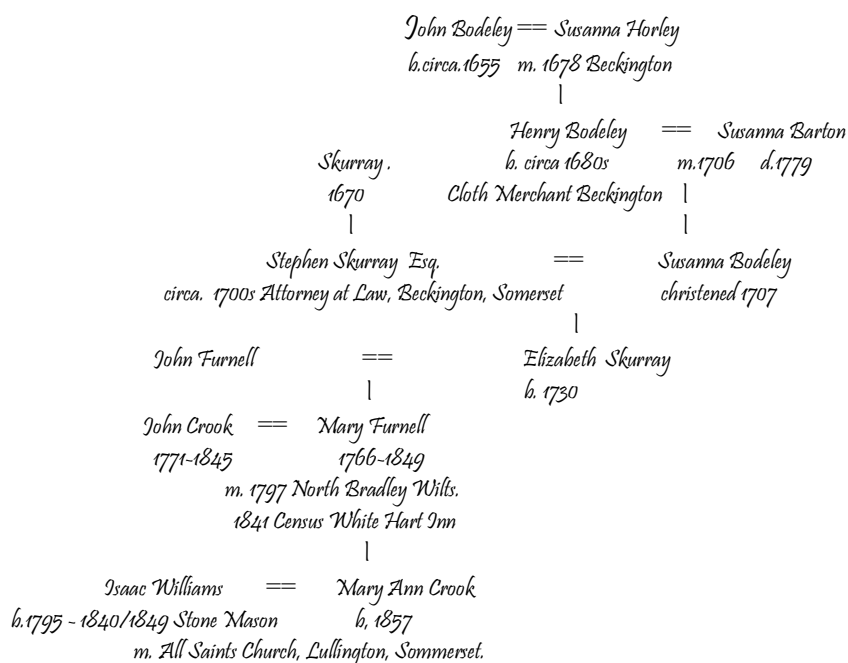
Clara R. Samsby
Solicitor
Wairoa.

ANCESTORS OF ALFRED HERBERT WILLIAMS

Three branches of Alfred Herbert William's ancestors, researched and compiled by Jill Kemp, with the help of Samantha Barrington, are recorded in Chapter 22. The family history is indebted to the extensive family tree collated by John Rowland Ambrose Williams in 1948, courtesy of the Barrington family. It is too large to include in full, but gave a basis for this research and include the BODELEY and SKURRAY ancestors (see below) going back to 1670's. C.A.W. is Charles Ambrose Williams. His descendants can be proud of their heritage. He was from a line of educated, wealthy merchants and Inn keepers; professionals - lawyers, surgeons and men of cloth (Anglican ministers.) Many were of 'independent means,' having inherited fortunes, land and houses, or married heiresses.



The only known photograph of Alfred Herbert Williams circa 1937 taken on the engagement of his daughter. (This engagement ended.)
Courtesy of the Barrington family.



SKURRAY Family of Somerset, dating back to 1670:

SKURRAY b. 1670

Somerset and Wiltshire were famous for their woolen industry, which saw the rise of other associated business opportunities. The Skurray family originally made their money as Clothiers (involved in the making and marketing of cloth) in the Somerset village of Beckington, three miles north of Frome. Their hard work and business acumen enabled them to live very comfortably and educate their children; one of whom became a Surgeon, at least two Lawyers and a Reverend. Several were Gentlemen of 'independent means' and highly respected in their communities. Their lives revolved around family, community and church. Several married heiresses. A book could be written just about them.

Stephen SKURRAY Esq. of Beckington 1700 - 1762

Married in 1715 Susanna BODELEY (heiress) of Beckington, born circa 1695 died 1754.

Will in Probate 11-877-30

Susana Bodeley was the daughter of Henry Bodeley, a wealthy Clothier Merchant from Beckington, whose ancestors were in the Fabric industry in Wiltshire, generations before manufacture of cloth was industrialized. Elenor Chandler, of Radford, left valuable property i.e. Ilford, Wittesham, Rowley, Westwood Manor-houses and Hinton Charter House to her only daughter and **bequests** to four descendants of persons who had loaned her money, including Susanna Bodeley, wife of Stephen Skurray Esq. Susanna's father, Henry Bodeley had loaned Elenor Chandler the owner of these estates, money. Elenor lived in Hinton House and died before the loan was repaid.



Ilford Manor
Wikipedia



Wittesham Manor
Wikipedia



Rowley Manor
Wikipedia



Westwood Manor
Wikipedia



St. Georges Church, Beckington,
Somerset. Wikipedia.

Many of Alfred Herbert William's Skurray and Bodeley ancestors were christened, married and buried at St. Georges Anglican Church, Beckington.

Child:

FRANCIS SKURRAY Esq. Attorney at Law.

Married 1768 MARY HALES 1741-1826 - heiress of her grandparents - their portraits:



Hinton Charter House
Wikipedia

London Chronicle 1762

May 22-25

To be Let unfurnished, and entered upon immediately,

THE Capital or Mansion-house, with Appurtenances (Insurance) late belonging to and occupied by JON HARDING. Esq. deceased, situate at CHARTERHOUSE HINTON in the County of SOMERSET: Consisting of Hall. A withdrawing Room, two Parlours (living area) a Servants Hall (servants dining room) two Kitchens, and all convenient Offices, eight Chambers (bedrooms) Besides those for Servants, and Rooms over the Offices, two Garrets (rooms under the roof) Coach-Houses, Stabling for 20 Horses, and a very pleasant Garden of about two acres, together with, or without, about 15 Acres of Pasture Ground.

For further particulars enquire of Mr. Clutterbuck of Bath;
or **Mr. SKURRAY of Beckington** in the said country, Attorneys at Law; or of **Mr. Stephen Skurray, Attorney at Law in Symond's Inn, Chancery-Lane, London.**

N.B. Hinton is four miles from Bath, to which place there is a Turnpike Road from it, and an Opportunity of sending every day.

Note: This advertisement shows a connection between the Skurray Lawyer of London and the Skurray's from Beckington.



Mrs. Francis Hales.
By Thomas Worlidge 1700-1766
Victoria Art Gallery



Francis Hales Mayor of Bath.
By Thomas Worlidge 1700-1766
Victoria Art Gallery

Francis Hales was born in Bath in about 1700's. His father, Samuel Hales was a Tal-low Chandler (Candle Maker) and Francis served his apprenticeship in candle making under him.

Hales, Francis circa 1700-1766
Councilman 1732-49
Constable 1733-34
Bailiff 1735-36, 1745-46
Chamberlain 1746-49
Alderman Feb 1749-66
Mayor of Bath for 5 Terms: 1751-52, 1759-60, 1762-63
J.P. 1752-53, 1755-56, 1760-62, 1763-65

Francis Hales had two houses in Walcot Street; another near the river, and a share (with Evans Thomas) in properties in St James's parish and north of the George Inn. He leased the lower Avon fishery in 1742 and the Upper fishery in 1754.

He died on 2 Oct 1766.

Bath Council Members 1700-1835 compiled by Trevor Fawcett.

This snippet gives a glimpse into the ceremonial pageantry of the Office:

The Story of the Bath Pageant in Poetry, Prose and Picture - Page 72:

'The Mayor of Bath (Alderman Francis Hales), attended by his Chaplain, the Rev. Duell Taylor, Rector of Bath and Six Aldermen in red gowns, headed by Ralph Allen with Ten Common Councilmen, in blue bombazine gowns and the Sheriffs of Bath (two) ...'

As Mayor, Francis Hales laid the foundation stone of Bath FREE Grammar School in 1752. (Gentleman's Magazine 183). Their sons were educated at Bath Grammar School and Oxford University. Their daughters probably had private tutors. Mary Hales, the wife of Francis Skurray, was the granddaughter of Mayor Francis Hales and inherited house and properties from him. (Hinton Charterhouse)

* Esq. (Esquire) indicates Attorney at Law.)

Children of Francis SKURRAY and Mary HALES:

Thomas SKURRAY 1769-1769
Thomas SKURRAY Esq. 1770-1836
Elizabeth SKURRAY 1771-1773
Rev. Francis SKURRAY 1774-1848 of Hornington, Wiltshire.
Stephen SKURRAY Esq. 1775-1830 Beckington, Somerset
Mary SKURRAY 1775 -

Stephen SKURRAY Esq. 1775 - 1830

Married 1799 Sarah CLEMENTS 1780 - 1835

Children:

Harry Clement SKURRAY 1800

Charles Francis SKURRAY 1803 - 1859

Emma Catherine SKURRY 1807

Harriot Hillyard SKURRAY 1808

Thomas Clement SKURRAY 1810 - 1858

Francis Hales SKURRAY 1812 - 1836

Before Stephen Skurray married heiress Sarah CLEMENTS, they signed a prenuptial agreement which can be found in the Chapel Books: [Skurray=Clement document] Marriage Settlement. This 1799 settlement was drawn up in contemplation of a marriage between Stephen Skurray of Beckington, Somerset and Sarah Clement of Frome. **It is overwhelmingly a Skurray item.** containing much contemporary and background detail on various members of the Skurray family. It is in manuscript covering 4 large parchment sheets and is signed by all parties. (ref 3403). infor@chapelbooks.co.uk

VALUABLE FREEHOLD INVESTMENT

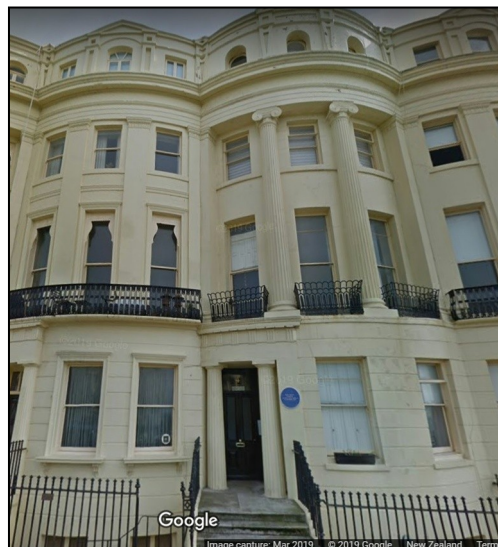
Brunswick Square Marine Parade and Pool Valley

Brighton Lewes Observer May 1856.

Messrs. WEBB will sell by Auction at the Public Saleroom, 10 Ship Street Brighton, on Tuesday May 27th 1856, at Two for Three o'clock, by direction of the Devises in trust for the late Francis SKURRAY Esq., A DELIGHTFUL MANSION of elegant elevation, with balcony, being No. 5, the preferable part of BRUNSWICK SQUARE, containing two noble drawing rooms en-suite with folding doors, two conservatories, boudoir, breakfast room, library, and large dining room, a principal and secondary staircase leading to 9 bedchambers, and excellent domestic service, well supplied with water. In the rear is an excellent four-stall stable, with harness room, double coach house, loft, men – servant rooms with entrance into the Mews.

MESSRS. WEBB beg to notify that they have been favoured with instructions from Devises in Trust of the late Francis Skurray Esq., to sell by auction on the premises, on Thursday the 25th September, and following day, the excellent HOUSEHOLD FURNITURE, prints, pictures, small cellar of choice wine and effects, of No.5 Brunswick Square, Particulars of which will be published in future advertisements. Auction and Estate Offices 1. Marine Parade.

5 Brunswick Square,
Brighton.
Google Maps



BATH CHRONICLE

22nd March 1832

Pleasant Retired Situation in the Healthy Village of Beckington, Somerset.

To Be LET

A Comfortable & well arranged DWELLING HOUSE with an entrance hall, dining and drawing rooms, six cheerful bedroom, good kitchen, laundry, cellars, Gig-house, Stable, extensive Workshops, and every convenient domestic office, suitable for a small genteel family. Also an excellent Walled Garden, containing half an acre, profusely planted with a variety of fruit trees of the choicest sorts; together with a very productive Orchard of upwards of three acres; all adjoining and situated at Beckington, aforesaid, in the occupation of Mrs. STEPHEN SKURRAY, leaving England. ... The very Neat and Useful HOUSEHOLD FURNITURE, Linen, China, and other effects in the above mentioned Premises, will be SOLD by AUCTION by Mr. HARROLD, on Monday and Tuesday, the 26th and 27th March 1832.

* (After previously been unsuccessful in selling the property.)

Even though Rev. Francis Skurray (1774-1848) was only an early great...uncle, rather than a direct ancestor of Alfred Herbert Williams, this painting (now in the Victoria and Albert Museum) of the private gallery in the Horningsham Parsonage shows the wealth and lifestyle enjoyed by his Skurray ancestors.



Oil painting -

Interior of the Parsonage,
Horningsham, Wiltshire

Object: Oil painting

Place of origin: Wiltshire
(painted)

Date: ca. 1840 (painted)

Artist/Maker: Sergeant, John
(artist)

Materials and Techniques:

Oil on millboard

Credit Line: Purchased, 2005

Museum number: E.407:1, 2-
2005

Gallery location: In Storage.

Public access description: On the back of the painting is a label which describes the subject as a 'Gothic room' and identifies the paintings as a group of Italian and Dutch Old Masters, including works by Guercino, Titian, Francesco Solimena, Sassoferrato and Ruisdael. The room was built in 1839 by the Rev. Francis Skurray (1774-1848), evidently as a private gallery for his distinguished collection; 'This painting, executed in 1839-40, provides a highly detailed record of a room in the Parsonage at Horningsham, Wiltshire. The room was built in 1839 by the Rev. Francis Skurray (1774-1848), evidently as a private gallery for his distinguished collection. Skurray is shown in the painting with his niece, Miss Kitty George. The label also records that a portrait of Skurray hung above the entrance door, not visible in this view. Skurray was best known as a poet, the author of the rural and descriptive poem 'Bidcombe Hill', as well as a volume of sonnets and a metrical version of the Psalms. Little is known about the painter John Sergeant; he is probably to be identified with the artist who exhibited at the British Institution in 1824-39 and at the Royal Academy in 1828-33.' © Victoria and Albert Museum, London.

CROOK, MARCHANT and WILLIAMS ancestors.

Robert Jones == Sarah
1771- d. after 1841 1771- d. after 1841 Census
Merchant. Quay, Water Bridge Somerset; 2 female servants and housekeeper.

Isaac Williams = Mary Ann Crook
b.1795 - 1840/1849 Stone mason b.1799 bapt. 1809 d. 1857
m. 1818 All Saints Church, Lullington, Somerset.

Daniel Cross == *Sarah Jones (heiress)*
1795-1874 *b.1806 Hulse, Somerset*
Publican Rummer Tavern Bath m. Countess of Huntington's Private Chapel
| Retired Publicans, Winsor Cottage, Sham Castle Lane, Bathwick Bath.

Joseph Ambrose Williams	==	Elizabeth Cross
b.1820 Lullington, Somerset		b.1819 Bath
m. 1844 Anglican		Milliner & Dressmaker
1841 Cen. Painter employing 3 men + apprentice		Northampton St.

Francis Marchant == Elizabeth Clark
 b. 1801 b. 1798
 1841 Census: Gatekeeper Monkton m. 1824 Walcot, Bath
 d. before 1844 from Hassage Farm Faulkland Frome. d. 1867

Charles Ambrose Williams ==

*b. 1845 Bath Census 1851 Scholar 1861 Painters Apprentice m. 1867 Frome
Farmer Williams/Westfield Farm, Lyncombe, Widcombe, Bath, Somerset, England
Donated Moses Pickwick's clock to Dicken's Museum. d. 1918 Wincanton Somerset
Census 1871 Charles Ambrose Williams was a farmer at William's Farm
Bloomfield Road -50 Acres. Employing 1 man and 1 boy.
Son Joseph Williams 2 months*

1

Elizabeth (known as Eliza) Marchant
b. 1839 Lower St. Monkton Fairleigh Wiltshire
d.

Alfred Herbert Williams == *Hannah Bond Kennedy*
b. 1873 (*Westfield Farm, Bath, England*) *m.* 16.3.1910 *Gisborne* *b.* 30 Nov. 1880
d. 1942 (*Wellington*) *d.* 21.6.1937 *Gisborne*

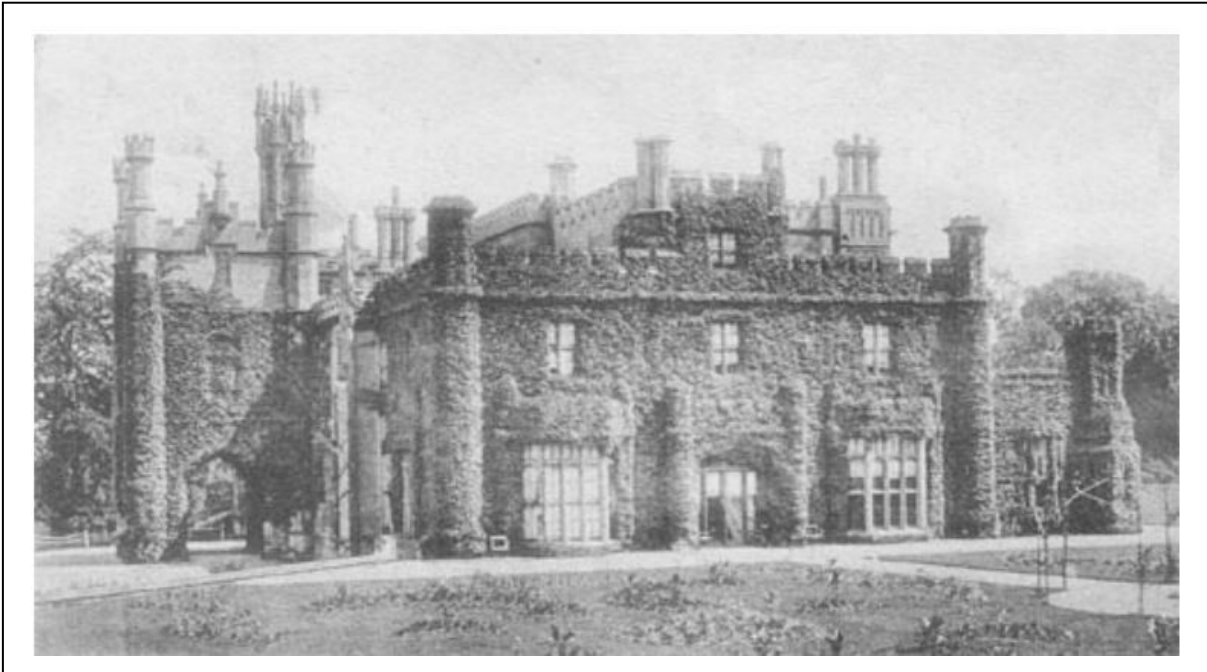


Isaac Williams, Stone Mason, married Mary Anne Crook
at All Saints Church, Lullington, Somerset in 1818.
Wikipedia

Isaac Williams must have been a strong man. Lifting stones was heavy work. Being a stone Mason required skill and patience. From Census records it is known that both he and his wife lived until their mid seventies. Mary Ann's father, John Crook, was also a Stone Mason in Lullington, Somerset and he and his wife Mary Furnell, seventy years of age at the time of the 1861 Census, lived in the White Hart Inn with the assistance of a 15 year old help. Isaac and Mary Ann Crook's son, Joseph Ambrose Williams, became a painter, employing 3 men and a boy. Imagine him working at the Rummer Tavern, when the Inn keeper's beautiful daughter, a dressmaker and milliner, caught his eye in her Sunday best bonnet! Their son, Joseph Ambrose Williams, started his employment painting for his father and later became a farmer. His son, Charles Ambrose William's sons emigrated after their father died; Joseph to San Francisco and Alfred Herbert Williams to New Zealand.

Francis MARCHANT married Elizabeth CLARK
1881 - died before 1867 - 1798 - 1867

Francis Marchant was Gamekeeper at Rood Ashton Manor in the 1841 Census, Some incorrectly transcribed his occupation as Gatekeeper. It would be his responsibility to keep away poachers and keep the Cook supplied with game from the estate:- pheasant, rabbit, grouse, deer etc. He would have owned dogs and lived with his family in the Game Keepers Lodge which came with the job. His daughter Elizabeth was born in 1839 and married Charles Ambrose WILLIAMS in 1867.



Rood Ashton Manor

The estate included 17 farms, 21 small holdings, 100 cottages, two public houses including The Long's Arms at Steeple Ashton, and a square mile of woodland. 2,500 acres (10 km²). It was in continuous ownership by the Long family for 333 years.

Wikipedia.

WILLIAMS—MARCHANT—March 14. at Hemington Church, by the Rev. C. Down, M.A., Charles Ambrose Williams, of Westfield Farm, Cottage Crescent, eldest son of Mr. Joseph Williams, of Bath, to Elizabeth, youngest daughter of the late Mr. Francis Marchant, of Hassage Farm, Faulkland.

Marriage of Charles Ambrose Williams and Elizabeth Marchant in Frome, 1867.
Wilshire Times March 1867.



St Mary's Church Hemmington. North aspect.



The Plaque reads: MOSES PICKWICKS CLOCK
Presented by SIR JAMES ROLL BART
President of the CITY PICKWICK CLUB 1926.



John Bunyan replica chair.
modes.org.uk

Above: The Moses Pickwick clock was originally donated to the City Pickwick Club by Charles Ambrose Williams (Alfred Herbert Williams Father). When the Dickens Museum opened at 48 Doughty Street, London W.C.1, the Club they donate it to the museum which is located in the house where Charles Dickens wrote The Pickwick Papers. This clock would have been in the William's farm house and is mentioned by John Roland Ambrose Williams in the extensive family tree he compiled in 1948.

Right: A replica of John Bunyan's chair, donated by Joseph Charles Williams to the Bunyan Meeting House in Bradford. These replica chairs were produced in actual size and had a printed label pasted beneath the seat. They were popular in many Victorian homes. One can imagine the family gathered by the fireside on a Sunday evening, while Father read Pilgrims Progress; a Christian allegory published in 1668, written by John Bunyan, inspiring faith, piety and endurance into the hearts of his children. Sunday was a day of rest and life very much revolved around the local church.

J.R.A.W. = John Rowland Ambrose Williams - compiler of large family tree.

J.C.W. Joseph Charles Williams.

C.A.W. Charles Ambrose Williams.

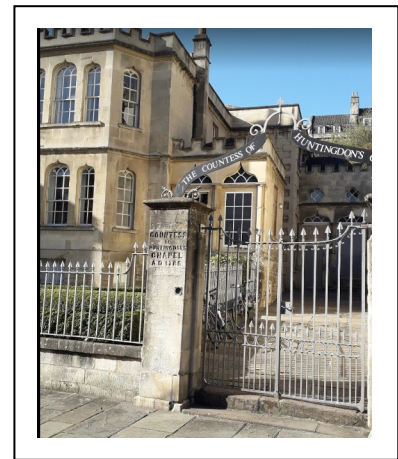
NOTES	
DOCUMENTS, COPY WILLS, PROBATES, MARRIAGE SETTLEMENTS, ETC. NOW IN POSSESSION OF J.R.A.W.	◇
FURNITURE ETC IN POSSESSION OF FAMILY OF J.C.W. AND FORMERLY BELONGING TO	—
KNOWN FAMILY AUTHORS: REV FRANCIS SKIRREY ELIZABETH MCPHERSON JOSEPH MCPHERSON	A
MOSES PICKWICK CLOCK FORMERLY OWNED BY C.A.W. NOW IN DICKENS MUSEUM 48 DOUGHTY ST LONDON W.C.1	Ⓜ
REPLICA OF JOHN BUNYAN CHAIR GIVEN BY J.C.W. IN 1928 NOW IN BUNYAN MEETING HOUSE BEDFORD	Ⓜ
KNOWN LIVING BRANCHES OF TREE AS AT 13.5.48	

*John Rowland Ambrose Williams
Windy Whistle,
Fairview Road,
Stevenage,
Hertfordshire,
England. 13.5.19.*

48

The signature of authenticity of the author of The Williams Skurray Family tree
compiled by John Rowland Ambrose Williams in 1948.
Courtesy of The Barrington family.

Right: The Countess of Huntington's private chapel,
attached to the right of her home, where
Daniel Cross and Sarah Jones (heiress)
married in 1843. Her father Robert Jones was a
wealthy Merchant in Hulse, Bath.
Photo by Rodger Bannister.



The Rummer Tavern, Bath.
6 Newmarket Road, Bath,
Somerset, England.

Publicans:

Daniel Cross and Sarah (Jones).

Photo by awashwithale.co.uk.

Census records show that they
owned the Rummer Tavern in
Bath. Accommodation was up-
stairs. A Rummer is an extra large
glass used to serve Rum.

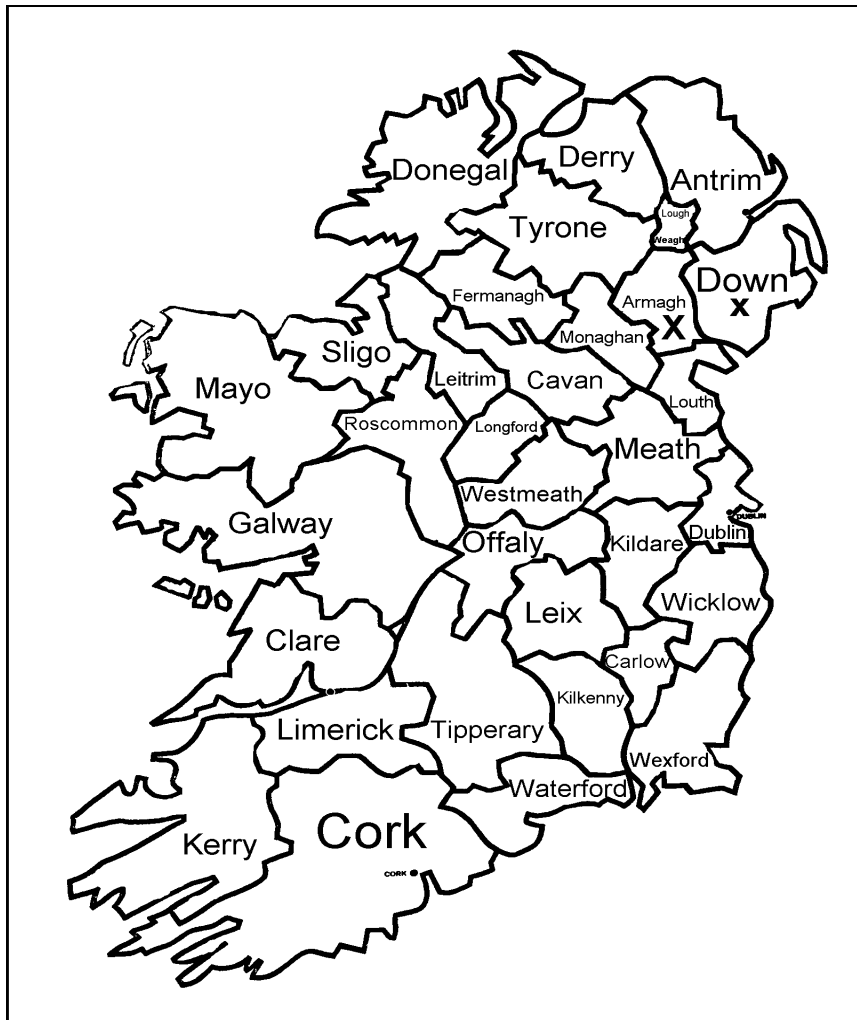


Chapter 16 IRISH ANCESTORS BEGORRAH! SMITH

HARRIET KENNEDY eldest daughter of Joseph and Ngāhiraka Kennedy,
married GEORGE SMITH and we record his Irish ancestry.

George and Harriet had 9 children.

The Smith and Metcalfe families and many others
descend from Alexander Smith.



Counties of Ireland Map.
Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.

A 'Chelsea Pensioner.'

In Northern Ireland, on 8th November 1825, ROBERT SMITH, a labourer, married MARGARET GREGG. Their son ALEXANDER SMITH was born about 1835 in the Lurgan Parish of Donacloney, County Down. He, like his father, worked as a labourer, before enlisting with Her Majesty's Imperial Army, 10th October 1857 at 18 years of age and served overseas during the Indian Mutiny (1857 - 8) as Private Alexander Smith No. 149 of the 27th Regiment of Enniskillen. After serving 5 years 8 months he was discharged, 'being Unfit for further Service and not likely to be able to gain a lively hood because of his medical condition.' His conduct was reported to be good.

He was in possession of one Foot Soldier's Badge and was discharged at Gonah, India, 18th December 1863. Alexander was admitted to the Royal Victoria Hospital in Netly. His discharge papers describe him as being 5 feet 5 inches, of fresh complexion, with grey eyes and brown hair. Medical Report: Attacked 1860 at Umballa, with Remittent (fever i.e. Malaria) and again in Gwalior (India) and spent about two months in hospital as his spleen became greatly enlarged and now extends on greater part of left side of abdomen, accompanied with some Ascites Disease (accumulation of fluid in the abdominal cavity) the result of climate influence and is wholly unfit for duties of a Soldier. His family were later to comment that it may have been the cause of his ill temper! The opportunity to go to the Colonies as a Labourer presented itself and 24 year old Alexander was in need of a good Irish wife to accompany him to New Zealand!

THE ROYAL INNISKILLING FUSILIERS

Being the history of the Regiment from December 1688 to July 1914

Published by the Naval & Military Press.

The descendants of (Private Alexander Smith No. 149 of the **27th Regiment of Enniskillen**) are fortunate to be here! He was one of the few soldiers, in his Regiment, to survive the rigors of India. Alexander Smith joined the Regiment on 10th October 1857.

Until the month of December the right wing of the Enniskillen's remained at Peshawur where the left wing had joined them in October. Amongst other duties they frequently formed the guard at Mackeson post, high plateau from which two nine pounders, permanently manned by volunteer gunners from the TWENTY-SEVENTH, commanded several of the gates of the city of Peshawur.

This post connected the cantonment with the fort, and also protected the Government elephants, camels and bullocks, the preservation of which was vital to the existence of the army. On December 2nd the REGIMENT returned to Nowshera, so enfeebled by the hardships and exposure which they had undergone that a large number of the men were unable to march, and were carried on elephants and gun carriages. (Many of them never recovered; the deaths amongst the non-commissioned officers and men during 1857 amounted to one hundred and fifty-seven).

The sergeant-major gives some interesting details about the health of the regiments while quartered at Attock and Nowshera. 'At Attock Fort the accommodation was very bad, the place having been constructed for native troops only, consequently the inconveniences to which the left wing were subjected were many and frequent, and the men suffered very much from apoplexy (cerebral haemorrhage; a stroke).

We were much impressed with Peshawur and its surroundings when we first arrived there, and thought it strange that the other regiments should have so many men in hospital. But sickness and death very soon compelled us to change our impression, as the place proved to be most unhealthy, and the Regiment suffered much, principally from fever and ague - a fever such as malaria, marked by paroxysms of chills, fever, and sweating that recur at regular intervals. So severely, indeed, had that sickness attacked you, that it was no uncommon sight to see private soldiers performing the duties of non-commissioned officers, and companies represented on parade by half a dozen men.

Every indulgence for the men's comfort was granted by our kind hearted chief, Colonel Kyle, who, before we left Peshawur, was himself taken from us by death. Sickness had played such havoc with the Regiment that the band was unable to play at the funeral of our late chief, and the music was supplied by members of the Seventieth and Eighty-seventh Regiments, who were stationed with us at the time. These regiments also suffered very much from sickness during their stay at Peshawur.'

This account of the state of the European regiments at Peshawur is fully borne out by the Lieutenant - General's words: 'From incessant work in excessively hot weather, and constant night watching, they soon became so weak in numbers and condition that they could not be exhibited on parade without giving encouragements to be disaffected.'

In April 1860, during the hot weather of that year, when the Twenty-seventh was at Gwalior, cholera broke out, and in three months two officers, the Paymaster, John Urquart, and Lieutenant Sterman and one hundred and ninety three other ranks fell victim to this plague of India.

50.837 26/5/63 95
W. G. Form 88.

HER MAJESTY'S
Whereof Lieut. General Sir Gilbert H. C. B. is Colonel.

[Place and Date] Grand, Dec 18 1862

PROCEEDINGS OF A REGIMENTAL BOARD, held this day, in conformity to the Articles of War, for the purpose of verifying and recording the Services, Conduct, Character, and cause of Discharge of No. 1144 Private Charles Smith of the Regiment above mentioned.

President.
H. Major H. C. B.

Members.
Capt. H. C. B.

THE BOARD having examined and compared the Regimental Records, the Soldier's Book, and such other Documents as appeared to them to be necessary, report that Private Charles Smith by Trade a Soldier was BORN in the Parish of Grand in or near the Town of Grand in the County of Down and was ATTESTED for the 1st Regiment of British in the County of Down on the 1st of Jan at the Age of 18 years, 22 days as shown by the detailed Statement on the 2nd page; during which period, he served Abroad 1 years, viz. — at Grand in 1861 years; and further, that his DISCHARGE is proposed in consequence of being unfit for service

[In cases of Disability, the Regimental Medical Officer will write his Report on the 3rd page hereof.]

With regard to the CHARACTER AND CONDUCT of Private Charles Smith the Board have to report, that upon reference to the Defaulter's Book, and by the Parole testimony that has been given, it appears that he has been found

[Here insert Character, G. C. B. and other Honorary Distinctions, as required by Adjutant General's Circular Letter, 20th September, 1858, and Circular of 27th August, 1859.]

[Here give particulars relating to Courts Martial, required by Circular of 5th March, 1859, No. 186.]

Ballymacarrig - 4 Miles from Portadown

Alexander Smith's Discharge papers.
Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.

GEORGE VAUGHAN, of Ballydonagh, was a Weaver of the famous Irish linen. His daughter, (CAROLINE) MARY JANE, born on 1st October, ^a1845, was weaving from a young age to help supplement the family income. It was a hard life and the family were not well off. She often told her children about the fateful day, when she was seventeen years old; 'she was upstairs making the beds when her father came in and told her she was to be wed to ALEXANDER SMITH!' (He did present rather a dashing figure in his red uniform and there would be one less mouth to feed!) So it was, that on August 9th 1863, they married at the Protestant Parish Church of England, Knocknamuckley in County Armagh, Northern Ireland. The Bride, Groom and witnesses, Thomas and Letitia Vaughan, were unable to write and signed their names with an 'X.'

^a Gladys Mary Taylor's Birthday book.

2	Paul Hackett	23	Antrem	From Sabour	26	12	0	14	16	12	2	12
	Mary do	23										
	Alice Smith	24	Armagh	From Sabour	26	12	0	14	16	12	2	12
2	Mary Jane do	18										

ASSISTED EMIGRATION
CANTERBURY, NEW ZEALAND,
by the Ship Tiptree.



The Protestant Parish Church of Knocknamuckley, in County Armagh.
Courtesy of Derek Porter.

The couple crossed to England on the 'Laughing Waters,' and sailed from the port of Plymouth, for the new colony of New Zealand, on the 'Tiptree' on the 20th October 1863. The cost of the passage for the couple, as Assisted Immigrants, was £26:12:0. The weather on the voyage was remarkably favourable, but Mary Jane was expecting her first baby which was delivered stillborn and registered on arrival at Dunedin, the first Port of call, in New Zealand. They arrived at the Port of Lyttleton, in the South Island, on 20th January, 1864. The ship anchored just outside the breakers, while passengers were ferried ashore on a Surf-boat, which was swamped by a huge wave, along with all their possessions. Mary Jane lost all her precious mementos from home, a loss she lamented all her life; all her Irish linen and silver spoons were gone forever. Coming on top of the death of her baby, it must have been hard to bare and a very dark time for her, far from the comfort of home and family.

Otago Daily Times
21st January 1864

This vessel arrived in Camp Bay yesterday at 1pm. The Immigration Commissioners left the jetty at 3 o'clock and passed the ship at half past 5. Our Reporter having been admitted on board, the Captain and Officers very courteously gave all the information in their power. The ship left Plymouth 28th October (1863) 78 days from land to land. The weather was remarkably favourable, the topsails being only once reefed during the voyage. Eight births and seventeen deaths occurred on board. The Tiptree is a very fine ship; her cabins are fitted up with every possible luxury to be obtained on board ship. The hospital for the sick is very commodious. The Surgeon-Superintendent, Dr. Sheil is very well spoken of for his kind attention to the passengers, who have all arrived in good health.

FIFTY ACRES OF LAND FREE,-

Military Settlers in New Zealand. A number of Married Men with their families are required to proceed to Auckland (passages free); also, a limited number of Single Men to complete a settlement. None need apply who cannot produce testimonials of industry and sobriety. Lieutenant STEEL will, on and after Monday, 18th January, be in attendance to make arrangements and give any information that may be required. For the present apply to SOPER and STEELE, Market Wharf. 21st January 1864. This vessel arrived in Camp Bay yesterday at 1pm. The Immigration Commissioners left the jetty at 3 o'clock and passed the ship at half past 5. Our Reporter having been admitted on board, the Captain and Officers very courteously gave all the information in their power.

The Waikato Maori Land Wars were in progress when they arrived. His emigration documents say he intended to work as a Farm Labourer, but when this advertisement appeared in the Otago Daily Times it was too good an opportunity to miss! So, on 19th February 1864, at 26 years of age, Alexander Smith enlisted in the Hamilton Militia 4th Regiment No. 240, at Canterbury. (His eyes had now gone from grey to hazel!)

He was issued with:

Rifle No. 797	2 pr of boots
2 pr of trousers	2 blue serge shirts
A forage cap. These articles to be renewed each year.	

Plus an Entitlement Grant of 50 acres and a Town Lot, at 196 Hamilton East in Brookfield street, which was situated safely near a Stockade, to be erected at the expense of the Provincial Government; and subject to his serving a minimum of three years, he would be entitled to a Crown Grant of his land (too good an opportunity to worry about his medical condition!) Many other enticing allowances were granted to those enlisting; guaranteed wages of at least 2/6 per diem. (Alexander was still on a temporary Chelsea Pension of 6d) daily food rations for he and his wife, which would be continued for a year after discharge and having taken possession of their allotment. He was even permitted to keep arms and accoutrements with a years free ammunition provided!

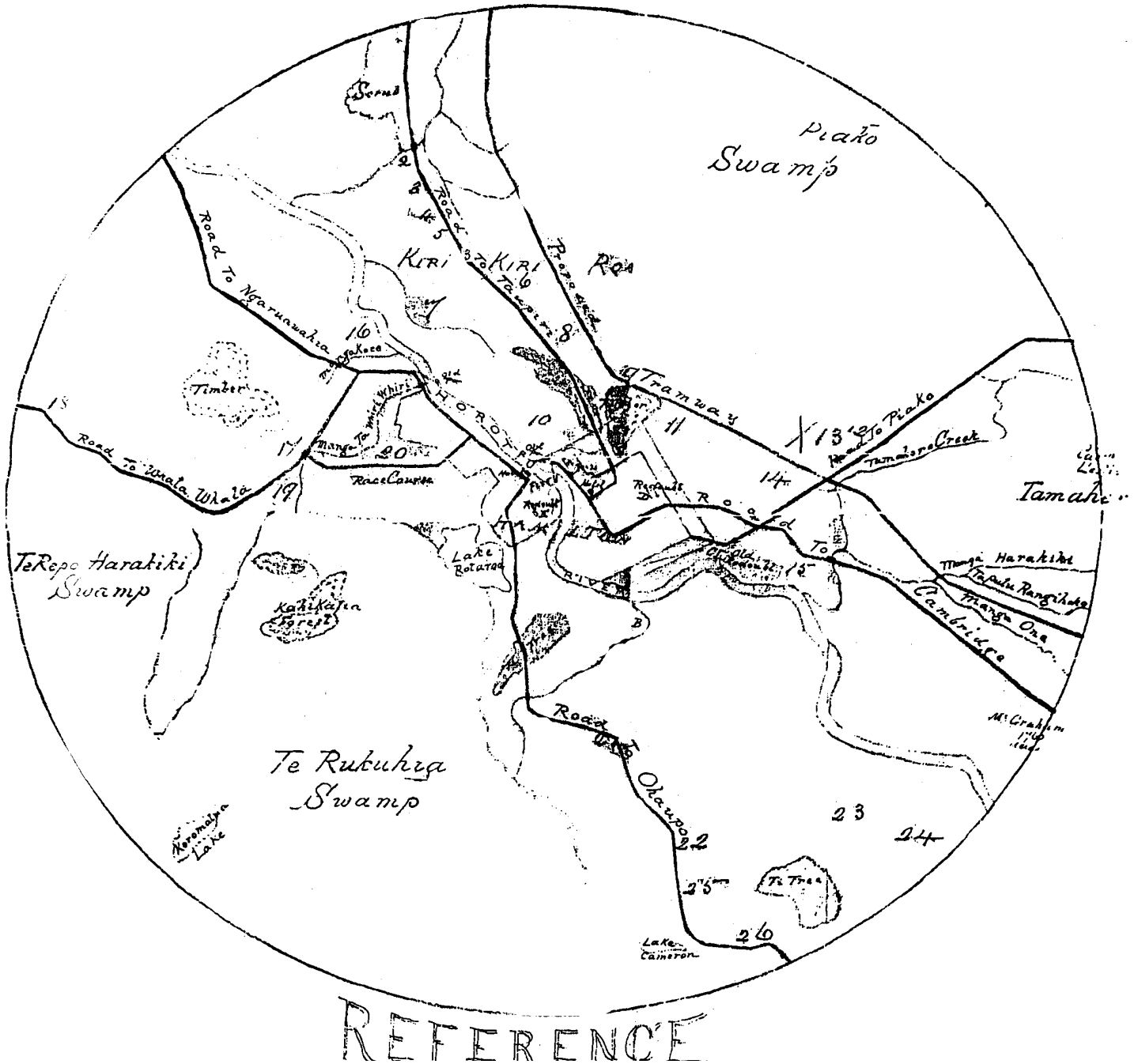
Private A. Smith of the 4th Regiment and his wife, sailed from Lyttleton, in the South Island, on the coastal ship, Phoebe; then via the Waikato Heads, down river to Waiuku and on to Kirikiriroa (Hamilton) on the gunboat Rangiriri, arriving on 24th August 1864. The first camp was on the eastern bank of the Waikato, near where the eastern end of the present traffic bridge is. The first company of the settlers who established a permanent garrison here numbered 118 men of the Fourth, under Captain William Steele.



Chelsea Pensioners 'Sons Of The Brave.'
Courtesy of Bob Stevenson.

Old soldiers, in the uniforms of the day; widows and a band of orphan boys raising money for the retired Chelsea Pensioners and their families. This print was brought back from Ireland by Alexander Smith when he returned home in the 1890's.

The Land was distributed by Ballot system and Lot 360 Graham's Third Survey (50 acres) East Hamilton, on the corner of Silverdale and Morrinsville Roads, became his. Here the couple settled, built a 4 roomed cottage with kitchen and raised their family. The Smith's original, four roomed house with kitchen, is still there, although now surrounded by houses. By the time the Waikato Land Wars ended, 17th May 1865, Alexander had risen to Armed Constabulary Sergeant. He received the New Zealand Medal and was placed in possession of his land, being struck off the pay in June 1865.



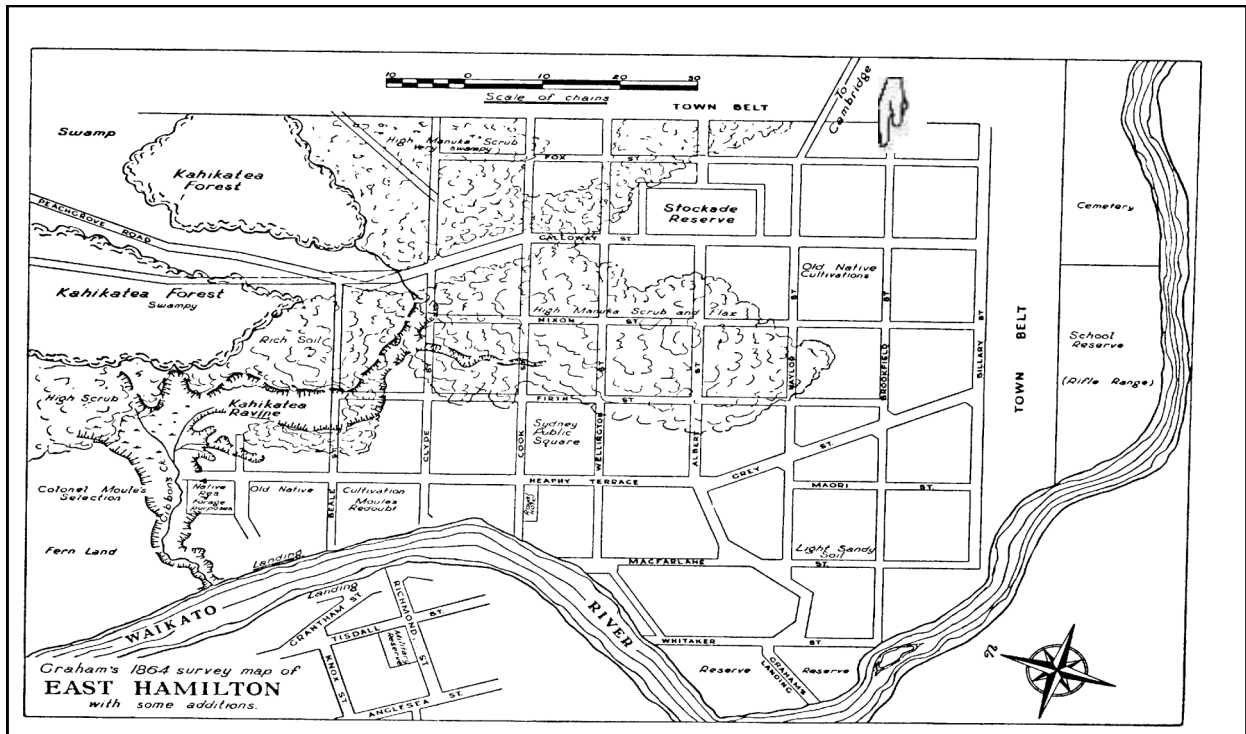
Alexander Smith's land is indicated X 13 in top segment on the Tramway Road corner.
Note reference to Captain Steel's 2000 acres!

Unoccupied Farms	Acres	Occupied Farms	Acres	Occupied Farms	Acres	Occupied Farms	Acres	Occupied Farms	Acres	Occupied Farms	Acres
Johnson	250	4 Mr Henry	50	9 Mr Coats	200	14 Edm Steele	2000	19 Mr Thompson	80	24 Mr Raines	
Millions	50	5 Primack	50	10 Zarelin	400	15 McPherson	300	20 Jolly	400	25 Knox	
Burgell	600	6 Casbie	80	11 Liddon	350	16 Beere	300	21 Hammond	2000	26 Atkinson	
		7 Wolley	700	12 Palmer	50	17 Lieut Stokes	200	22 Rothwell	130		
		8 Sizc	300	13 Smith	50	18 Mr Maudsels	150	23 Lane	150		

A quote from the book 'Armed Settlers,' By H.C.M. Norris.

'A militia man who was farming his fifty acres was Alexander Smith. He was a short man, an old soldier who had been at the mutiny in India. He had a small pension to keep himself and his wife and family. They milked a cow or two, cropped a little wheat and oats and kept a few sheep on their fifty acres. Peach trees planted by their Maori predecessors eked out the bill of fare.'

Below: the town allotment in Brookfield Street indicated with arrow.



nvd. Bd. 1st August 1871
No. 30

Late a temporary pensioner.

Chelsea number 50837

This is to Certify, that

Alexander Smith

late of the 27th Foot

is an OUT-PENSIONER of Her Majesty's

Royal Hospital at Chelsea, at the rate of

6d pence per diem.

(Original date of Admission 26th May 1863)

Given under my Hand, this 1st

day of August 1871

Signed George Hutt.

Secretary and Registrar,

Royal Hospital, Chelsea.

Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

Alexander Smith was a 'Chelsea Pensioner,' and received a small pension for life.

Irish Soda Bread was a traditional bread made on a daily basis in many Irish homes and was usually cooked, in a pot, over a turf fire. It would stay fresh into the second day and after that made excellent toast. Inspired by stories about her Irish ancestry, this song was written by Wendy Webster, great, great, grand-daughter of Mary Jane Smith. Mary Jane must have often been homesick, especially in the hard times.

THE IRISH BREAD SONG.

Written By Wendy Webster.

I go to Ireland
When I taste your bread,
I hear my mother singing
And the words my father said
'Gather your things girl,
You're leaving us behind.
You're sailing in the morning,
Before we change our mind.'
That is what my father said
As he cut another slice
Of Irish bread.

Oh Irish bread,
You always smell
Like home to me,
Home to me.
Oh Irish bread
You always smell
Like home to me.

My mother's in the kitchen,
With flour on her hands.
She wasn't one for speeches
But her wisdom it was grand.
She said, 'When you get lonely,
Bake some Irish bread
And count up all your blessings child,
And think on those instead.'
That is what my mother said,
As her fingers gripped that loaf of bread.

(Chorus)

Ireland.. never was cold there,
Its my land.... and I'll always go there
When ever I
When ever I
When ever I bake bread.

Alexander Smith was an abusive husband and his poor wife suffered both at his hand and through the embarrassment of newspaper publicity, when her husband was brought before the Courts. There was no help for women who were abused. No doubt the children suffered as well. The family remembers that sympathetic Maori often left boxes of vegetables and food on their doorstep. Mary Jane was also a midwife in the community, but life must have been extremely hard as she worked selflessly to provide for her children. Poor Mary Jane Smith was further humiliated when, in the early 1880s, Alexander became involved with a Maori girl.

Waikato Times. 9/3/1881

At the Police Court Hamilton 22nd December 1881. Yesterday before His Worship the Mayor and Mr. S.T. Siddons J.P. a man named Alexander Smith, a settler residing on the Piako Road near Captain Steele's, was charged on remand with violently assaulting his wife Jane Smith on the 14th instant by attempting to strangle her with a rope. Prisoner had been remanded from Monday for medical treatment. His conduct when arrested being such as to lead to the belief that his mind was unsound. Drs. Carey and Beale now certify that the man was insane and the bench committed him to the asylum. After hearing the medical evidence Sergt. McGovern withdrew the charge of assault.

Waikato Times. 28/2/1882

For Sale or Lease. 50 acres adjoining the Estate of Captain Steel and the farm of Mr. Hinton. Four roomed house with kitchen the whole under cultivation. Also 1 town acre in Hamilton East. Apply Alexander Smith.

Waikato Times. 2/3/1882

Police Court Hamilton. Breach of the Destitute Persons Act.

Alexander Smith a settler residing near Hamilton was charged on the information of his wife, Mary Jane Smith, with wilfully failing to provide her and her four children with adequate means of support. Sgt. McGovern conducted the prosecution and Mr. W. M. Hay defended. Before the case was proceeded with, Mr. Hay said the informant had handed in a memorandum withdrawing the complaint. The hearing of the case would involve the disclosure of very unpleasant matters which ought not be made public. Sgt. McGovern said if the complainant wished to withdraw the charge he had no objection. Mary Jane Smith, was placed in the witness box and sworn in. She said her husband had promised her to be better in the future. Mr. Hay said the husband's house had never been closed to the complainant. Mr. Northcroft said that the complaint the woman made, when she laid the information was certainly a very serious one. The defendant had used her very badly, and if he had not turned her out of the house had frightened her away. The witness said her husband had not turned her out. She wished now to withdraw the charge. Withdrawn accordingly

Waikato Times. 9/3/1882

Resident Magistrate's Court. Breach of Destitute Person's Act.

Alexander Smith was charged on the information of his wife Mary Jane Smith, with having brutally ill-treated her, and with neglecting to provide for herself and her four children. Sergt. McGovern prosecuted and the accused was defended by Mr. W. M. Hay.

The plaintiff sworn, said she remembered having brought a similar case before the court on the 28th ult. It was withdrawn at her request. She did so because Mr. Hay assured

her that her husband would be kind to her and take her and the children home. She would have gone home that day, had he not used threatening language to her. Accused himself did not ask her to go home and denied having authorised Mr. Hay to say so. It was over two months since she left his house. She did so because she was afraid he would strangle her. He once put a rope around her neck. He was never very kind to her. He told her to clear out and take the children with her. She ran away once before because she was afraid accused would do her an injury. Mr. Hay about to ask the witness a question touching her fidelity to her husband, when His Worship said that would not mend the case, and he would not compel the witness to answer such a question. In reply to the bench, witness said she had four children under 14 years of age, but accused had taken away three of them the previous day. She prayed for an order compelling her husband to support her and the children. This closed the plaintiff's case.

Mr. Hay said he hoped to show cause why the court should not grant the order prayed for. The information was bad because it disclosed more than one offence. One offence was brutally ill treating, and the other of neglecting to provide, etc. Moreover neither the names or the ages of the children were specified. One complaint should have been lodged on behalf of the wife, and another for the children. The Bench considered the objection good, and dismissed the complaint. Mr. Hay said he hoped some arrangement would be come to between the parties. The accused was willing to take his wife home and behave well to her. Mr. Northcroft said the woman had already with drawn two charges, and unless she had been greatly provoked it was not likely she would come forward a third time. The parties had only just left the court on the previous occasion when the accused commenced to use foul and threatening language towards his wife.- Mr. Hay:

Accused denies all that your Worship.

Mr. Northcroft: If he denies it five hundred times I would not believe him.

The parties then left the Court.

Waikato Times. 9/5/1882 (Letitia).

A little child belonging to Mrs. Alexander Smith, had a narrow escape last evening. The child was playing on the road near Captain Steel's, when Mr. Raynes of Cambridge, drove down the hill from Hamilton. The child tried to run across the road in front of the horses, but was knocked down. Mr. Raynes promptly put on the brake and thus brought the buggy to a standstill before the wheels could pass over the child, whose leg and foot were much lacerated by contact with the horse's feet. Fortunately no bones were broken. Mr. Raynes behaved in the most humane manner, first conveying the child home, and then returning to Hamilton for a doctor. He procured the services of Dr. Beale, under whose care the little sufferer now is. A few days later the newspaper reported: We are glad to learn the little girl Smith (Letitia) who was injured by a buggy near Captain Steel's on Monday night, is progressing very favourably under the skilful care of Dr. Beale. Mr. Raynes paid the Doctor and hospital. He became very fond of Letitia and left her a sum of money in his Will, but she never received it.

Waikato Times. 31/5/1883

At the Police Court, Hamilton on Tuesday, before Mr. Northcroft, R.M. Mary Jane Smith, wife of Alexander Smith, a settler residing at Kirikiriroa, made an application for a protection order against her husband, on the grounds that she had not received any assistance from her husband for the last twelve months, and that he was constantly coming to her house at Hamilton East, and removed such articles of furniture and food as she was able to procure for herself and her family. Sergt. McGovern fully corroborated the woman's statement, and added that the man's behaviour had been most gross. The order was granted.

Waikato Times.
26/8/1884

The usual monthly meeting of the Kirikiriroa Road Board.

A letter was received from Mr. A. Smith complaining that he had no legal road to his farm, and could only get to it on sufferance from Captain Steele. The Engineer stated one or two days work would make the bridle track fit to take a dray. It was resolved to instruct the engineer to report on the matter. Mr. Steele donated land for the public convenience and the Board agreed to allow the road to be 'laid off.'

In a small community gossip spreads rapidly. The newspaper articles reporting Alexander Smith's treatment of his wife would have made him very unpopular and he would have been ostracised. No one would like to be seen associating with 'a wife basher.' Even his children would have sided with their mother.



Alexander Smith.

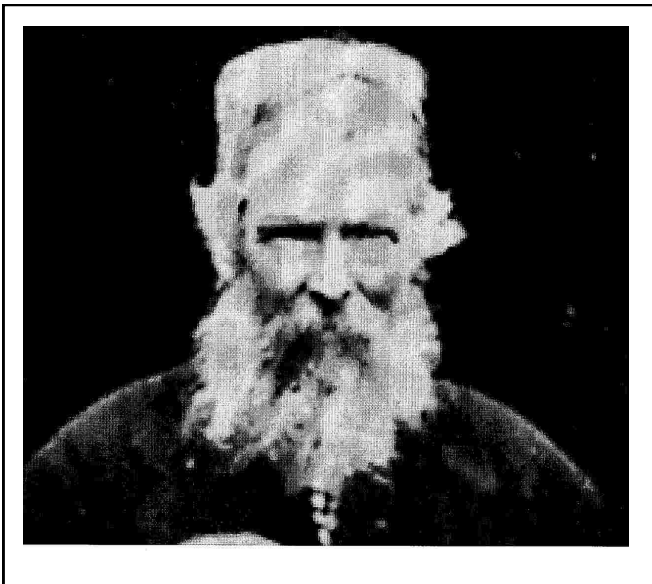
Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.

This hat is still in the family, along with his tin trunk which he brought from Ireland.



Original settlers who planted Oak trees at Sydney Park, renamed Steel Park,
26th August 1889. Hamilton Library.
being the 25th Anniversary of the 4th Waikato Militia landing in Hamilton.
The plan is near the toilets in the park. Alexander's named tree is still there.

Back from Left: J. Knox, H. Mullians, J. Davis, A. Vincent, Alex. Smith, T. Kelly,
D. McIntyre, Sam. Teas, J. Atkinson, Sam. Coombes, W. Alexander, J. Reid,
T. Cassidy, E.J. Pearson, W. Andrews, D. Munro.
Front: G. Mayes, S. McGuire, D. Hyde, J. Crosby, Capt. McPherson, Capt. Steele,
Dr. Carey, J. Odlum, H. Warr, D. Henry, W. Peacock, J. Hinton, W. Murliss.
One name missing.



Left: Alexander Smith from above group.
Right: Alexander Smith after his religious
conversion to Plymouth Brethren. Although
the quality of the photograph is poor, the dif-
ference is obvious.





Above: Queen Victoria's Jubilee 1897. The 4th Waikato Militia.

Alexander Smith second left seated.

The 4th Waikato militia paraded, in Hamilton, on all important public occasions.
On the 25th anniversary of Hamilton these pioneers each planted a tree, in commemoration.



Alexander Smith centre and to the right Captain Steele.

SYDNEY SQUARE

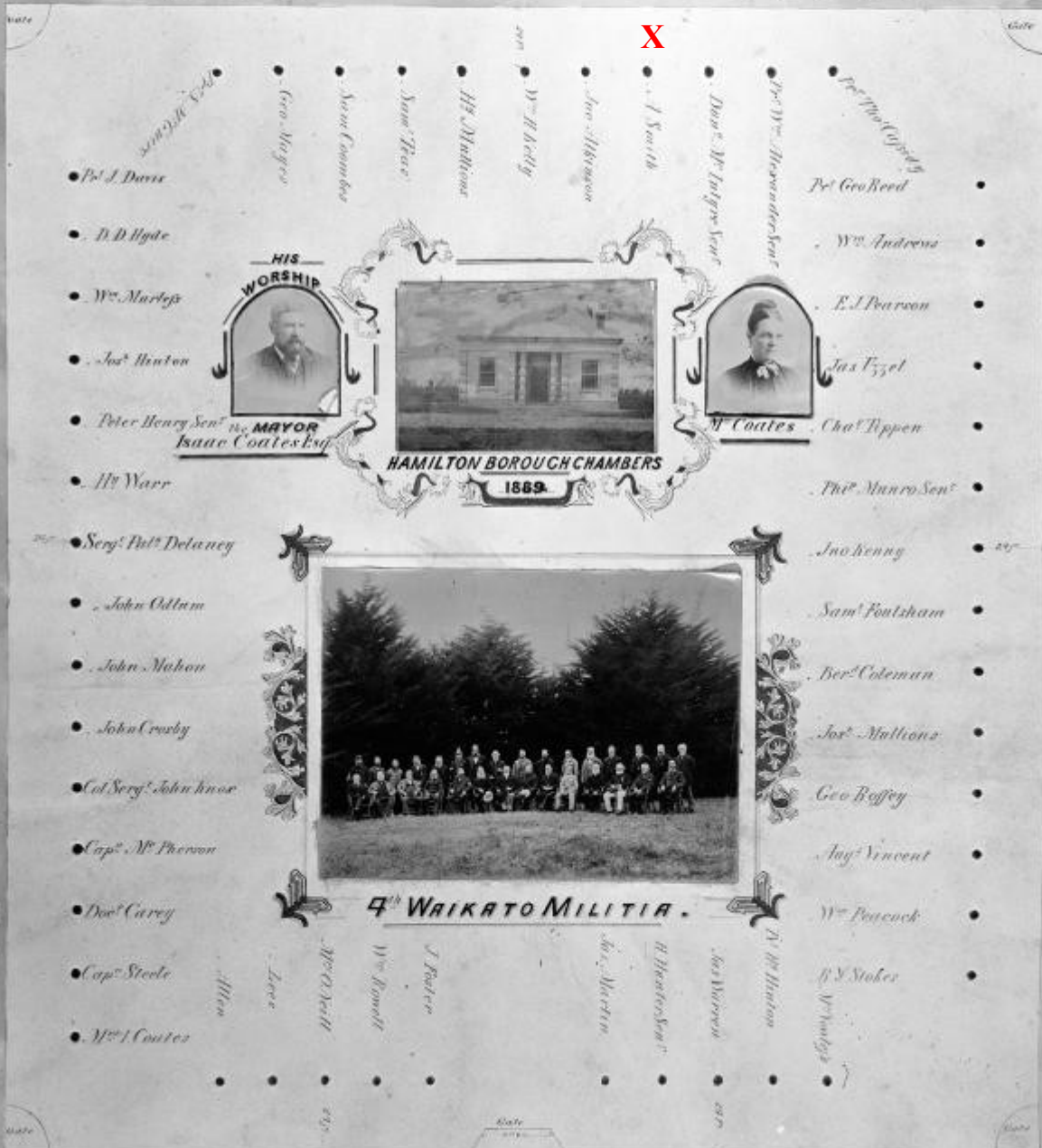
showing the *Names* of those who planted Oak Trees on
the 26th of Aug^r 1889 being the 25th ANNIVERSARY of the
4th WAIKATO MILITIA landing in HAMILTON

S T R E E T

S T R E E T

W E L L I N G T O N

S T R E E T





Alexander and Mary Jane Smith's original house at Silverdale Road.
The farmland of 50 acres runs to the right of the picture, down to Morrinsville Rd.

In 1890 Alexander returned home, alone, to Ireland on the Tongariro, 'to attend to his parents estate.' While he was in his home town of Lurgan, County Down, he purchased an 18 Carat gold Fob Watch, beautifully engraved with his initials 'A.S.' from the Lurgan watchmaker, Samuel Charles. It is a half hunter and the front cover has a hole, which allows the time to be seen without having to open the case. When opened, the whole watch face can be viewed. The case and workings have the serial number 217812 D18 E.D. plus other stamps. It is still in its original case with the maker's name and 'Lurgan' clearly visible and shows hardly any wear (unlike the silver one which Alexander always wore. On his return he gave the watch to his daughter Annie because they had the same initials. Annie had breast cancer at the time and died a few years later. The watch is mentioned in her Will. It is currently in the possession of Hazel McDonald. He also brought back a large Silver Service, which has since been dispersed through the Hayes descendants and a silver bracelet of Shamrocks. It is unclear when Alexander returned from Ireland and was known to be in Gisborne where George was living there in 1893. While he was away Mary Jane Smith died. Alexander seems to have come home with money.



Alexander Smith's Gold watch. Initials A.S.
Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

In those days the Smith boys would have had to leave school and start working at a young age. George worked at a men's barber shop, learning the trade and in 1895 he opened his own business in Gisborne. It is not known when, or why, he moved to Gisborne, but to learn the trade he must have had an apprenticeship. George had a charismatic personality and had inherited a bit of the Irish blarney as well! His father, Alexander Smith, having returned from settling his family's estate, may have helped him financially to set his own business.

Poverty Bay Herald
19th October 1893

G. SMITH
BARBER & HAIRDRESSER
Has commenced business
Opposite the British Empire Hotel, and hopes,
By attention and civility,
To merit a share of the patronage
Of the residents of Gisborne
And surrounding districts.
Note the prices:
Haircutting 6d Shaving 6d

His brothers Alexander, Charlie and young Tom (adopted) were working for George, in Gisborne in 1895 and their youngest sister, Letitia and husband Herb Good, were all living in Gisborne in the 1890's. This is the likely reason Alexander would have gone to Gisborne on his return from Ireland and made peace with his children. It is very probable that he gave George the money to set up his own Barber shop (monies he must have got in Ireland) as George would not have been able to afford the set up costs himself.

In 1893 Edwards and Klein, English Evangelists, from the Plymouth Brethren, held a Crusade at Gisborne and Alexander Smith became a soundly converted Christian! It is worth mentioning that no collection was taken at these crusades. The local churches and community, in Gisborne, provided the venues; churches finishing their Services early so that their congregation could attend. But after the Crusade churches became antagonistic towards the style of evangelism and threatened by the enthusiasm with which the message was received. This was probably the largest public event ever held in Gisborne, up until that time.

It appears that the newly converted Alexander Smith returned to Hamilton in 1894, or 1895 and that he, Alexander Smith and Lewis and Martha Blackman were the pioneer members of the Hamilton Brethren Fellowship. Lewis Blackman was the manager of the Hamilton gasworks and they met in his house for Christian fellowship for several years. In 1902 there were only 5 or 6 in the Brethren Fellowship - they had probably been joined by Exelby and Jull by then. Alexander lived with William and Caroline Hayes at Naylor Street, probably in the little cottage by the stables. The fact that he continued to be associated in fellowship with Lewis Blackman, whom it is known was an upright, Brethren Christian, for the last ten years of his life, indicates that his conversion was genuine. That fact that Mr. Lewis Blackman's family also recorded that 'Mr. Smith lived with his daughter Mrs. Hayes and that her father, Mr Blackman, had broken bread (had communion) with Alexander Smith,' confirms his identity. Alexander was definitely back in Hamilton in the winter of 1904, as he is in the photograph of pioneer families of Hamilton. Whether he ever made things right with his wife, Mary Jane, is not known.

The Gisborne Mission

1st - 26th June, 1893. They left Gisborne on July 10th.

Messrs. Rowland Edwards and Arthur Klein, English Evangelists, conducted an afternoon Bible Study and Mission Crusades on Sundays and mid week over the month of June.

GISBORNE GENERAL MISSION

It is a matter of astonishment to many to view the great congregation that assemble each night at the mission services. Last evening the Theatre was filled in every part, and many were unable to gain admission. Mr Edwards spoke on Pardon, and after the meeting several confessed Christ.

The missionary announced that his colleague, Mr. Arthur Klein, would arrive in from Gisborne South and take part in that day's and the following meetings, but since then it has been ascertained that he is on board the Manapouri, which has been delayed, and will not be here until Monday morning. Mr. Klein is B.A. of Cambridge University, and some four years ago, after taking his degree, decided to engage in evangelistic work. He has recently visited the South Island, and met with great success in several places. He is reported to be an attractive speaker, his address on Christian holiness being particularly powerful.

The Sunday program is as follows:-

In the afternoon, at 3, a children's special service in the Theatre, conducted by Mr Edwards, and in the evening at a quarter to eight, the evangelist will be at the Theatre. The Church of England and the Presbyterian church commence their service at 6:30 in order to allow of all to be in time to attend the mission service.

The meetings tomorrow (Friday) are in the Theatre at 3, and a quarter to eight and on Saturday at 8:30 a.m. in the Church of England schoolroom, at 3 in the Theatre and at quarter to 8 for men only in the Theatre.

On Wednesday Mr Edwards spoke at Waimata.

MISSION SERVICES

5th June 1893

Judging from the crowded meetings in the Theatre yesterday, it is evident that the interest in the mission is increasing. The special service for the children was a great success. The young folk evidently appreciated their meeting, and it must be cheering for the various Sunday School teachers to see the interest shown by their scholars in the address, and to behold one after another, rising to confess Christ as their Saviour. The teachers have sown and now the reaping time is present, and sower's and reapers rejoice together. Last night's service was the largest of the kind ever seen in Gisborne. The theatre was thronged in every part, and scores were unable to gain admission. Mr Edwards spoke on the Pharisee and the Publican. Hundreds stayed on to the after meeting, and about one hundred and thirty persons testified to blessing received during the mission. The news of Mr Klein's arrival this morning to assist his colleague is welcomed by all interested in the work and his address on Holiness, tomorrow afternoon is eagerly looked forward to. Both evangelists will conduct the service tonight at 7:45. Poverty Bay Herald, 5 June 1893



(Caroline) Mary Jane Smith

One of the few photographs.

Died 28th July 1901, aged almost 57 years.

Cause of death: Acute Rheumatism and heart Syncope.

Unfortunately, violence is often a learned experience and it was several generations before some of the boys learned how to treat their wives properly. The love they had for their mother is evident in the photo of them around her grave side. The saying is true, 'a picture tells a thousand words.' Look at all the flowers! And don't they all look smart? She must have been proud of the way they had risen above their humble beginnings.

According to her death certificate, Mary Jane Smith had lived in New Zealand 37 years and had nine children living. Their first baby, Eliza, was stillborn on the voyage out to New Zealand and was registered on arrival in Dunedin.

1. Eliza Still born 1864 (Born at sea and Registered in Dunedin)
2. Caroline Jane 17/1/1866
3. George Smith 19/12/1868
4. Alexander Smith abt. Jan 1870
5. Isobella Smith 25/11/1870
6. Anne Smith 16/4/1872
7. Elizabeth Smith 1873
8. Charles Smith 7/10/ 1876
9. Letitia Smith 26/9/1878
10. Thomas Smith (adopted) abt. 1881



IN LOVING MEMORY
of
MARY JANE SMITH
WHO DIED JULY 28th 1901
AGED 57 YEARS.
DEAREST MOTHER THOU HAST LEFT US
WE THY LOSS MOST DEEPLY FEEL
BUT 'TIS GOD WHO HATH BEREFT US
HE WILL ALL OUR SORROWS HEAL
ERECTED BY HER LOVING SONS AND DAUGHTERS.
Hamilton East Cemetery. Block AA. D3. Row G. Plot 204



Left: Herb & Letitia Good, Dave & Isabella Pretty, Charlie Smith, Annie and Edmund Taylor, young Elsie Hayes, Bill and Caroline Hayes.

Reminiscences of Hazel McDonald, granddaughter of Annie Smith. 'My mother, Gladys Mary Taylor, daughter of Annie Smith and Edmund Taylor, was born in 1897, at the Silverdale Road, in the original four roomed house of Alexander and Mary Jane Smith. Annie and Edmund married, at the Registry Office, in 1896. Mary Jane Smith, suffered severe pain and immobility from rheumatism and she may have moved to the family's town acre with the younger children, leaving Annie and Edmund to manage the bigger property. Gladys Mary Taylor was born in 1897 and was four years old when her grandmother, Mary Jane, died in 1901, aged nearly 57 years. Gladys never mentioned her grandmother to her own children, which she probably would have had she lived with them. The Taylor family were still living at the Silverdale road property when Gladys started school. It was too far for a young child to walk to Hamilton East school alone, so five year old Gladys was enrolled at St. Mary's Convent, on the corner of Grey and Clyde streets, until the next sibling, Norman, turned five when both children walked the extra distance to Hamilton East School.'

On 11th August 1904, Annie (Smith) Taylor purchased the Knighton Street Estate, on Knighton Road, from Messrs. Russell and Campbell; 20 acres, for the sum of £30 per acre. Edinburgh Road now runs through the middle of the farm. Where did Annie get the £123 deposit to buy the property, which was in her name and not her husband Edmunds? It seems to reinforce the theory that her father, Alexander Smith, received some inheritance from Ireland and gave Annie the deposit. The photograph of the early pioneers, with their wives, taken in the winter of 1904 (note the bare trees) confirms Alexander Smith was in Hamilton at that time, but Mary Jane had died. In Annie's Will she stipulated that her husband, Edmund, could live on the property for the duration of his life, but should he sell it, the monies was to be divided between the children. This severely restricted Edmund from being able to buy himself a larger farm, the twenty acres not providing a good income. That Annie had already received her inheritance, in this deposit, also explains the seemingly unfair Will made by her father as some children (including Annie or her heirs) are not mentioned at all.

Caroline Jane Smith, the eldest Smith daughter, worked at Le Quesne Hotel in Hamilton before she married builder, William Hayes. Bill Hayes bought land at 33 Naylor Street, Hamilton East in 1883, when he was only 20 years old and became a successful business man. The property was bound by Firth street, Naylor street and Grey street up to the back of Knox Church. In 1887 he built a four roomed house, where all but one of the Taylor children were born. Eventually he built horse stables and a cottage aside the house. This cottage is probably where Caroline's father, Alexander Smith lived in his final years, when he resided with the Hayes family. The house remained virtually untouched until 2007, when it was sold out of the family and extensively renovated. The original stables have since been removed. William Hayes also leased what is known as 'Hayes Paddock,' bound by Wellington street, and Grey street, down to the river, which was taken for State housing at the end of the 1940 – 1945 war.

Caroline Jane Smith and William Nelson Hayes had 8 children

Amy Jubilee 1887 –1985

Mervyn Leslie 1890 - 1965

Alvin Alfred 1891 - 1980

* Elise Hayes 31.3. 1894 - 1.8.2003

Robin Hayes

Miriam Mabel 1901 - 1996

Norah Isobel 1905 - 2005

Alick Nelson 1906 - 1986

*Elsie Hayes married Fred Dunbar, a Bank Manager. She lived in three centuries and died aged 109 years and is the little girl in the photograph of the funeral of her grandmother, Mary Jane Smith.



* Alexander Smith (widower) stands in middle row behind and between Mrs. Mullins and W. Kelly.

LEISURE TIMES.

From Waikato Times 27th Feb, 1976.

Taken in 1904, when Hamilton's population was under 2000, this picture shows some old Hamilton's identities of that time. Fifth from the left, in the back row is Mrs Steele, widow of Captain William Steele who had died in 1898 and was the Officer in command of the first group of military settlers (4th Waikato's) to disembark from the gunboat Rangiriri on 24th August 1864 and lay the foundations of the future city of Hamilton.



Back row: Mesdames J. Davis, Thomas, S. Coombs, Dent, Steele, Munro, Mullions, W. Kelly, McGuire.

Front Row: Mesdames D. Hyde, McKenzie, (Caroline) Hayes, Hinton, O'Neill, Duffy, Murless.



Above: After renovation the property was advertised as: 'The magnificent Corner Gabled Villa extensively renovated sympathetic to its Victorian era.'

The original four roomed house extends to the chimney.

Insert: The original Victorian stables and cottage.

Waikato Times 6.3.2010.



The marriage of Amy Hayes to Harold Stone.

25.8.1909

Left to right: Robyn Hayes, Harold Stone, Amy Hayes, Miriam, Elsie and unknown.

Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.



William and Caroline Jane (Smith) Hayes family, circa 1911.

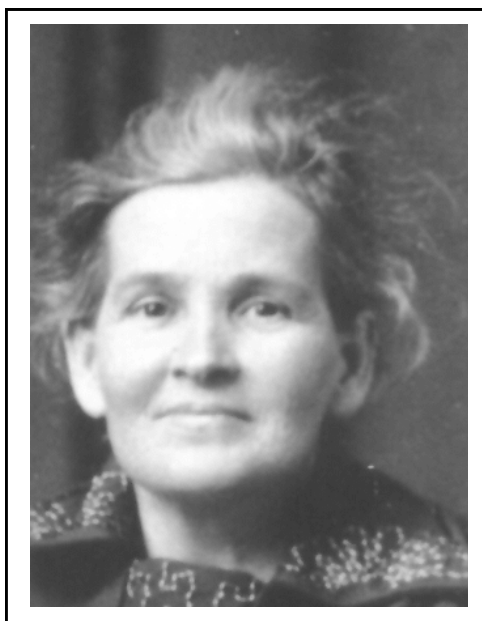
Left to right standing: Robin, Mervyn and Alvin.

Seated: Amy, William, Miriam, Caroline Jane and Elsie.

In front: Norah and Alick.

Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

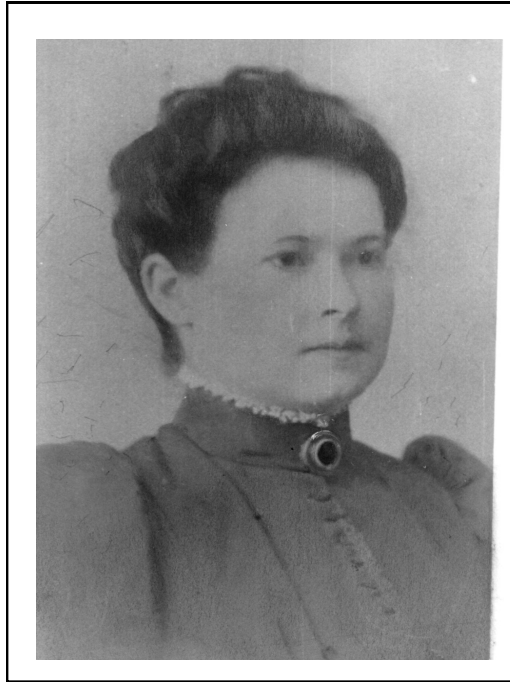
Miriam Hayes, born 1901, was a little girl who was very fond of her doll. When her grandfather, Alexander Smith, returned from Ireland and lived with the family, he thought she was too old to be taking a doll to bed. So, as a way of making her grow up, he hid it. When it was time for bed, imagine the fuss when Miriam's doll wasn't on her pillow! The child couldn't be placated until everyone searched the house. When the doll was found and returned to its rightful owner, peace ensued. All her life Miriam remembered the traumatic experience when 'Grandad hid her doll.'



Left: Letitia ('Lovie' Smith) Good.

Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

It isn't known when or why George and some of the other older Smith boys moved to Gisborne. George was a men's hairdresser and must have had an apprenticeship in Gisborne. It has been suggested he was an illegal Bookmaker on the side. The rest of the family didn't approve of the boys lifestyle and social circles at Gisborne, so, in the early 1890's Herb and Letitia (Smith) Good went to in live Gisborne themselves, to 'keep a sharp eye on her brothers!' On their way, Herb and Letitia were 'chased all around Lake Waikaremoana by Te Kooti and friends.' The family were against George's marrying a Maori woman, Harriet Kennedy. (They didn't know what a treasure she was!)



Annie (Smith) Taylor died 17th November 1913.
She did return home after writing this and had a
further three years with her precious children.

Knighton.

Feb.1910

My Dear Children,

I am going to town tomorrow, not on a pleasure trip, but a very sad one. I may never see your faces again. I pray tonight I do & God wills so. I trust you are kind to one & all your brothers and sisters & try & agree better, don't use bad words nor keep mixing with bad company. Do all the good you can, help one another, there's good children. I have only you and Dad to miss me. Do not live in Gisborne, keep to the Waikato. You will find plenty to do and a living for all. Do not have boys about home & be ware of men when you are a little older. Be honest & straight forward. Learn all you can at school. Be kind to Frank and little Cecil, don't let him go near the horse.

Gladys - my Gold watch

Eunice - my gold earrings

Blanche- my locket & chain & pair of silver ear rings
& silver broach that has no pin in

Norman - my gold pence

Sonney - the gold locket - you will see it in the box.

Frank - my broken ring

Cecil - my plain band ring

Dad - my wedding ring

Cecil - my mother's photo

Frank - childhood happy days

Eunice- my bracelets

Dorothy - my one rube broach & earrings-silver

Frank - my small gold meshed broach to pin flowers in his coat

Give Blanche my little green work box

Divide my clothes as best you can- share and share alike.

Share amongst the boys any small article they might care to have.

So goodbye.

I hope you are all satisfied & don't fight about any things.

Love and kisses for give Cecil a lot of kisses for me.

Save my little photo to Cecil & give Frankie the little mirror.

Best love from Mother
& best wishes & good luck.

ALLEGED ASSAULT

Edited version.

Papers Past Poverty Bay Herald 15th April 1907

George Smith, hairdresser, told the Court that earlier on Saturday evening in question, he had a conversation with Henry Dixon over money that Dixon owed him. In that instance, a witness had seen George Smith standing in front of his shop with a saddle in his hand and seen an altercation between Henry Dixon and George Smith, during which George Smith struck Henry Dixon on the ear. The witness was not sure if the blow was with an open hand or fist, after which blood came from Dixon's ear. A short scuffle took place. Constable O'Hara came on the scene and separated them and Dixon went on up the street. A short time later, just after 10 pm, as George Smith and his labourer brother Thomas were leaving to go home from George's barber shop in Gladstone Street, they met Mr. Searle, the tailor and stood near Robertson's corner talking. George Smith was standing on the kerb with his arms folded and his back towards Peel street, when Henry Dixon came along from behind and struck Smith a blow on the jaw. Smith fell down and as he tried to get up he was struck a second time, which rendered him unconscious for an hour and a half. A doctor was sent for and Smith was taken home in an ambulance.

*Henry Dixon was fined 7 pounds 14 shillings or 30 day imprisonment on default.

* George Smith was charged with assaulting Henry Dixon and find 17 shillings.

MARRIAGE:

Papers past: Poverty Bay Herald 24th February 1912

SMITH ROBINSON

At Dunedin, on 29th January, 1912, by Rev. Mc Intyre, Charles Smith, of Gisborne, third son of Alexander Smith of Hamilton, to Mary Ann, 2nd daughter of the late Thomas Robinson, of Mount Cargill, Dunedin.

DEATHS IN THE DISTRICT OF <i>Hamilton</i> DURING THE QUARTER ENDING THE <i>thirty-first</i> OF <i>March</i> , 191 <i>4</i>														(4000-10000-10000)			
DESCRIPTION OF DECEASED.		CAUSE OF DEATH.		PARENTS.		IF BURIAL REGISTERED.		WHERE BORN.		IF DECEASED WAS MARRIED.		INFORMANT.		REGISTRAR.			
No.	When and where died.	1. Name and Surname. 2. Rank, Profession, or Occupation.	Sex and Age.	1. Cause of Death. 2. Duration of last illness. 3. Medical Attendant by whom certified. 4. When he last saw Deceased.	1. Name and Surname of Father 2. Name and, if known, Maiden Surname of Mother. 3. Rank or Profession of Father.	When and where buried.	Name and Religion of Minister, or Name of Witness of Burial.	1. Where born. 2. How long in New Zealand.	1. Where married. 2. At what Age married. 3. To whom married. 4. Age of widow, if living.	If issue living, state Number, Age, and Sex.	1. Signature of the Informant. 2. His or her Description. 3. Residence. 4. If Entry a Correction of a former Entry, Signatures of Witnesses attesting the same.	1. Signature of the Registrar. 2. Date of Registration.					
(1.)	(2.)	(3.)	(4.)	(5.)	(6.)	(7.)	(8.)	(9.)	(10.)	(11.)	(12.)	(13.)					
26.	<i>1914</i> <i>5th March</i> <i>Hamilton East</i>	<i>Alexander Smith</i> <i>Farmer</i>	<i>Male</i> <i>86 years</i>	<i>1. Morbus Cordis</i> <i>2. 1 year</i> <i>3. J. Spring</i> <i>4. 5th March 1914</i>	<i>1. Not known</i> <i>2. Not known</i> <i>3. Not known</i>	<i>5th March 1914</i> <i>Hamilton East</i>	<i>L. Blackman</i> <i>A. M. Cooper</i> <i>Witnesses</i>	<i>Lurgan, Ireland</i> <i>Residence of 35</i> <i>Pomahona's Mary Jane</i> <i>Ireland Vaughan</i> <i>x (Deceased)</i>	<i>Eight.</i> <i>4. males</i> <i>26. 44. 36. 23</i> <i>14. females</i> <i>25. 40. 38. 36</i>	<i>Under-taker having charge of the funeral</i> <i>Hamilton</i>	<i>J. S. Bond</i> <i>Registrar</i> <i>1914</i> <i>6th March</i>						
														<i>50 years</i>	<i>Clerical error corrected</i>		

Alexander Smith's Death Certificate. Courtesy of Allan Prestidge.

Alexander Smith died 5th March 1914, aged 86 years. Cause of death: Morbus Cordi (heart disease). Buried at Hamilton East Block AA. E3. Row C. Plot 674. The name of the witness of burial on Alexander's death certificate was his Brethren friend, Lewis Blackman.

Alexander Smith made his Will on 9th July, 1913, leaving his town section Brookfield Street) to two of his children, Isabella $\frac{1}{4}$ acre, and George $\frac{3}{4}$ acre. The rest of his estate was left to Caroline Jane, who kept the 50 acres for the rest of her life, but it was never used for anything other than grazing. On Caroline's death it went to Norah, who eventually sold it and it is now covered in houses.



Alexander Smith's grave.

Left: Bill Hayes, Herb. Good, unknown, Edmund (Ned) Taylor, *Merv Hayes, unknown, *Albert and father George Smith, unknown, unknown, unknown. The two far right, are possibly Lewis Blackman and Albert Cooper. * Merve Hayes & Albert Smith were grandsons - identity is unconfirmed. Floral tribute 'PEACE,' along front.

Alexander Smith learnt to write later in life and must have been very proud to be able to sign his name on his Will, which he made 9th July 1913.

SMITH.—On March 5, at his daughter's residence (Mrs. W. Hayes), Naylor Street, Hamilton, Alexander Smith, in his 87th year. By request of deceased, no mourning.

MARRIAGE.

SMITH-KENNEDY.—On December 5th, at the Presbyterian Church, Gisborne, by the Rev. R. M. Ryburn, George Smith, of Gisborne, eldest son of Alexander Smith, of Hamilton, Waikato, to Harriet Bond Kennedy, eldest daughter of Joseph Bond Kennedy, of Gisborne, Master Mariner.

This is the
LAST WILL AND TESTAMENT

Of me Alexander Smith of Hamilton lately a Farmer and formerly of the Fourth Regiment of Waikato Militia. I appoint my daughter Caroline Jane Hayes wife of William Hayes of Hamilton Builder to be the sole Trustee of and under this my Will. I direct that all my just debts and all funeral and testamentary expenses shall be paid as soon as conveniently may be after my decease. I give devise and bequeath unto my daughter Isabelle Pretty wife of David Pretty of Hamilton, Contractor absolutely all that piece and parcel of land containing one rood more or less being the north eastern portion of Allotment one hundred and ninety six of the town of Hamilton East. Bounded on the north east by allotment one hundred and ninety five - one hundred and eighty two links on the south east by allotment one hundred and seven (one hundred....thirty seven and five tenths links on the south west by.. another part of said allotment one hundred and ninety six. One hundred and eighty two links and on the North West by a street one hundred links wide. One hundred and .. thirty seven and five tenths links.

I give devise and bequeath unto my son George Smith of Gisborne Hairdresser absolutely ALL That piece and parcel of land containing three roods more or less being the south eastern portion of allotment one hundred and ninety six of the town of Hamilton east aforesaid Bounded on the north east by other part of said allotment one hundred and ninety six one hundred and eighty two links on the south east by allotment one hundred and ninety seven four hundred and twelve and five tens links on the south west by a street one hundred links wide. One hundred and eighty two links and on the northwest by a Street one hundred links wide four hundred and twelve and five tenth links.

I give devise and bequeath all the rest of my property both real and personal unto my trustee the said Caroline Hayes for her own use and benefit absolutely I hereby revoke all former Wills and Testamentary dispositions by me at any time heretofore made and declare this to be my last Will and Testament.

In Witness thereof I have hereunto signed my name this ninth day of July One thousand Nine **hundred and thirteen.**

Signed by the said Alexander Smith

as and for his last Will and Testament in the presence of us both being present at the same time who at his request in his presence and in the presence of each other have hereunto subscribed our names as witnesses.

Signed Emily ..I? .

Domestic Duties Hamilton

A. T. James

Solicitor Hamilton.

A. Smith

Chapter 17

HARRIET (KENNEDY) & GEORGE SMITH
a daughter of Ngāhiraka Kennedy



The Smith brothers. Circa 1895.
Courtesy Hazel McDonald.

Standing: Left Charlie, right Tom.

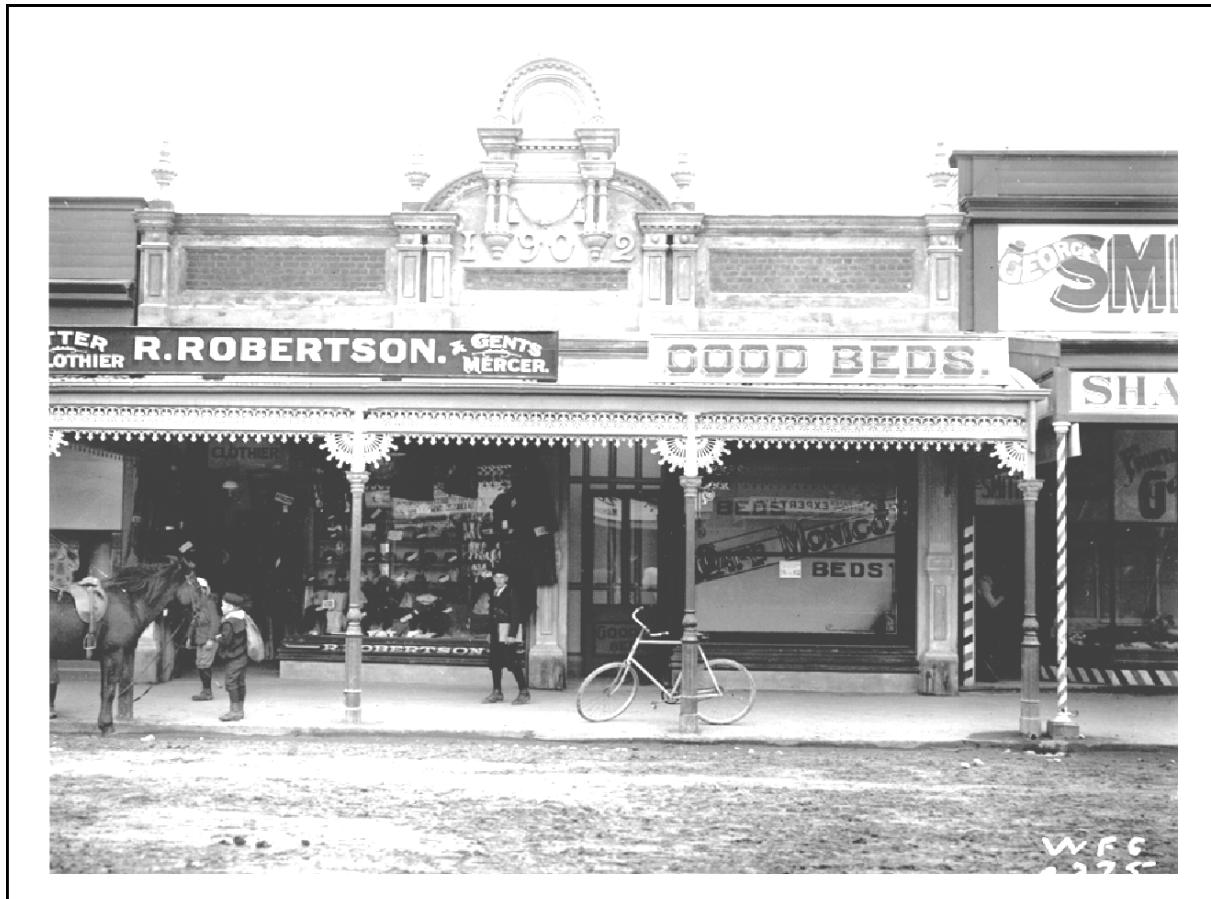
Seated left: Young Alex (a talented musician, playing both the violin and piano).

Seated middle: George Smith who married Harriet Kennedy.

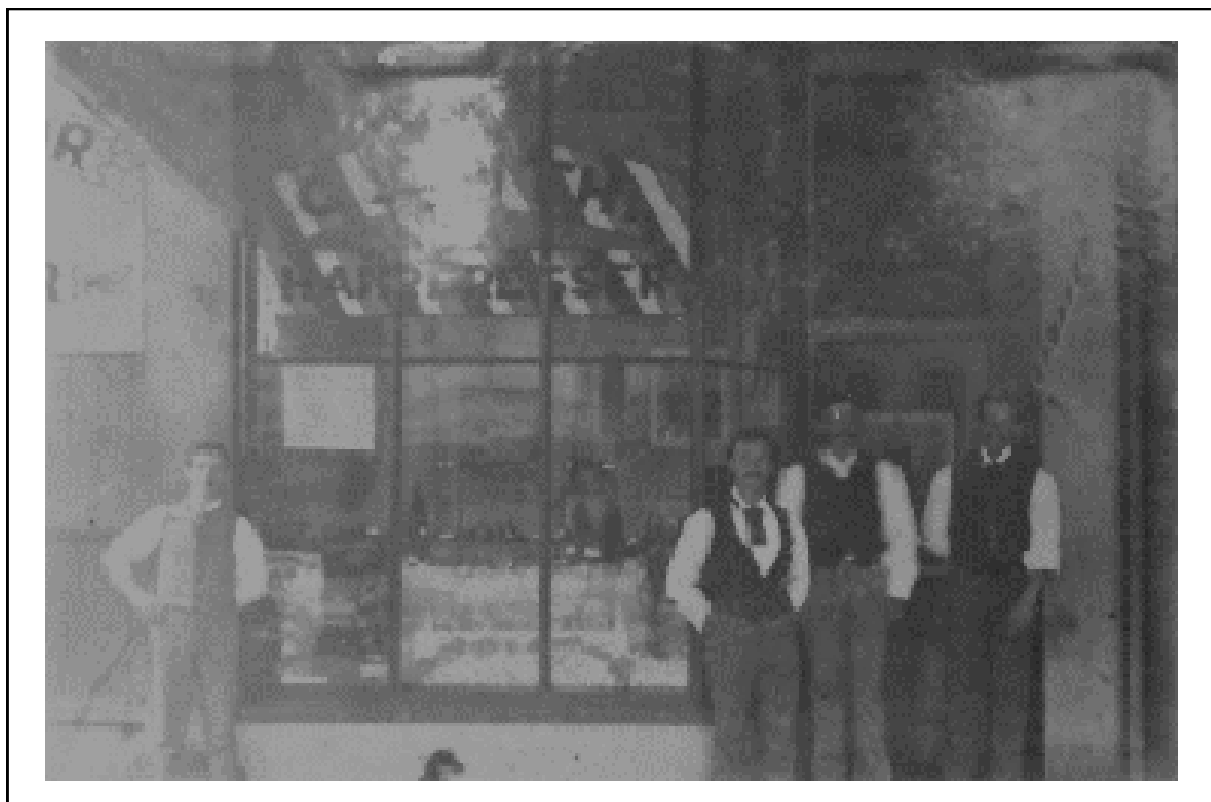
GEORGE SMITH

He had a Men's Hairdresser Shop at Gisborne and both Alex and Charlie worked in the business with him. One of George Smith's sons, Alex Teece Smith, later became his father's apprentice, starting when he had to stand on a box to shave customers, or cut their hair. George had several vocations recorded on his children's birth certificates: Hairdresser, Pawnbroker, Bookmaker and Saddler. The whole family were multi-talented.

These male establishments had a culture of their own; yarns were told, ribald jokes made (not in the presence of ladies), tips were given and received, local gossip was shared while men sat in the chair or waited their turn. These were the good old days, before two World Wars and the great Depression depleted the income from such flourishing businesses. Both George and Alex were recorded as Bookmakers on their children's birth records. They must have been hard cases as Letitia, their sister, concerned they were not behaving themselves, moved over from Hamilton with her husband, Herb Good, to 'keep an eye on her brothers.' She was worried about him being involved with Maori girls!



George Smith's Hairdressers, Gladstone Road, is on the extreme right.
Photo Courtesy Tairawhiti Museum Gisborne.



The Smith brothers, outside the shop.
Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

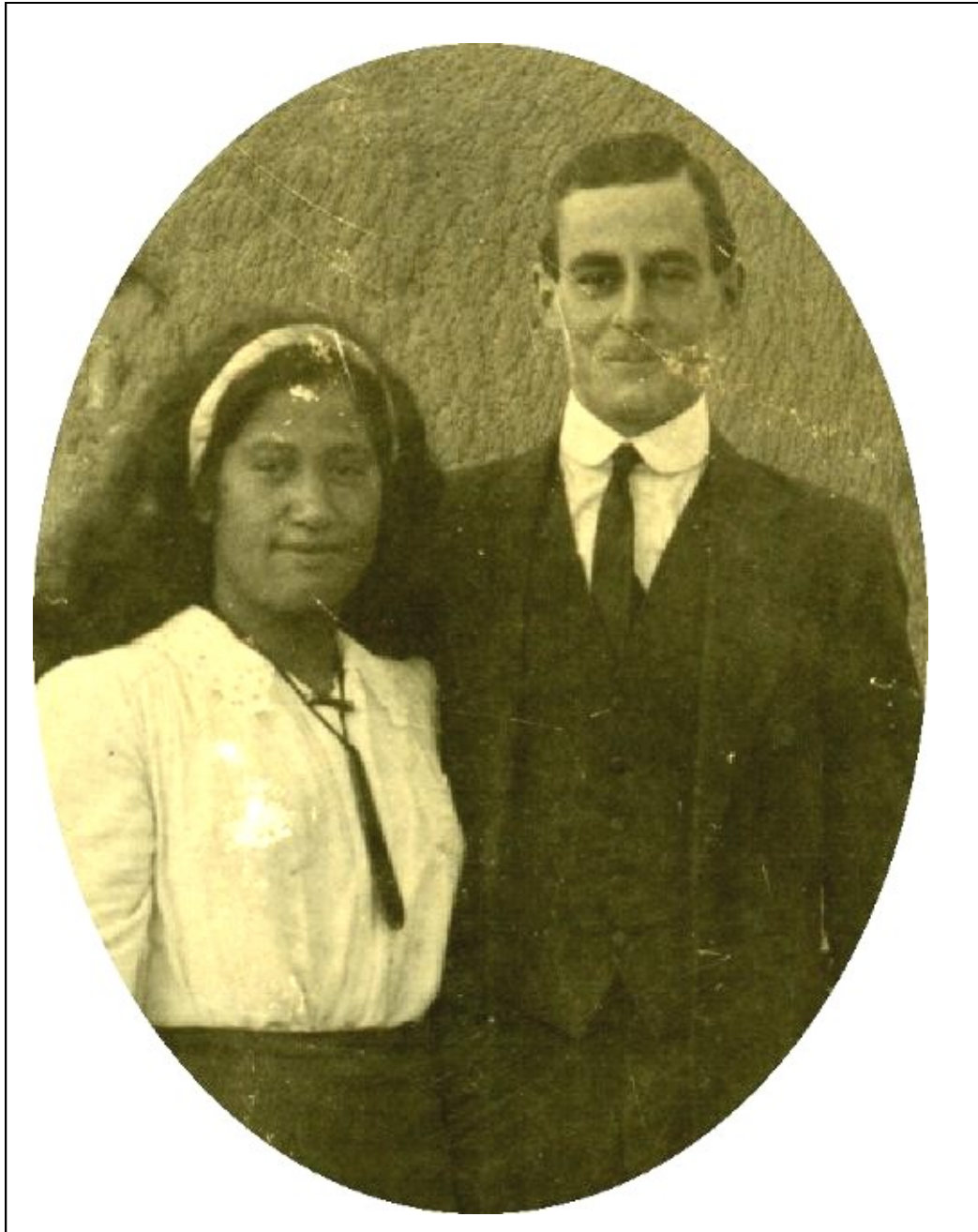


George and Harriet Smith's wedding, 5th December 1896.

Left is Kate Wells, 3rd from right may be her husband, Robert (Bob) Wells.
2nd from right is Harriet's half sister, Mary Reed. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald

From left: Kate (Kennedy) Wells, Robert Wells, young Alex Smith, Harriet Smith, George Smith, unidentified male, Mary Reed - Harriet's older half sister, unidentified male. The pendant Harriet is wearing belonged to her mother, Ngāhiraka, which may have been inherited from Matarena. It is still in the family. When the photo is enlarged, one can see that the skirt on the woman on the right (Mary Reed) is beautifully made and obviously this is a special occasion.

GEORGE SMITH fell in love with 24 year old HARRIET KENNEDY, an attractive, half-caste Maori girl, with big brown eyes and long, thick braided hair. She was a descendant of high ranking Maori Chiefs, on both her father and mothers side. Twenty nine year old George and twenty four year old Harriet, who's usual place of residence was Kaiti, married in the Gisborne Presbyterian Church on December 5th 1896. Harriet's mother, Ngāhiraka, had died and her father, Captain Joseph Kennedy, had remarried by this time. Harriet's father would have been aware of the reputations of the Smith boys and likely was none too happy. George Smith's father had not been a good role model as a husband. George Smith's irresponsible behaviour and recklessness with money, combined with the financial hardships of the depression and his womanising, was to break Harriet's heart. Harriet had been brought up in a secure and loving environment, being well provided for growing up. She was a kind and gentle person. The couple had nine children. In 1902 when their fourth child Stanley was born they were living in Whataupoto, a central suburb of Gisborne, located to the northeast of the business district and bordered by the city centre and the suburbs of Kaiti and Mangapapa. Unfortunately, their second youngest son, George, was born with club feet. Harriet sailed up to Auckland every three months, with her young son, to receive massage and therapy to help him. She constantly massaged his feet. Nothing which could be done for such a condition in those days. As Trevor was the youngest in the family, many of his older siblings were married by this time. Many families were under financial stress during the depression years, with work scarce and the men finding it difficult to adequately provide for their wife and children. Harriet left George when their youngest son, Trevor, was about 9 years old. Divorce was uncommon in those days.



Harriet and George Smith

1896.

Someone in the family may recognise her beautiful greenstone pendant,
inherited from her mother, Ngāhiraka.

The couple had 9 children:

Albert John Smith	30.7.1897 - 8.4.1970	unmarried.
Alexander Teece Smith	30.9.1898 - 28.11.1984	m. Rita Parkinson 15.10.1920
Percy Bond Smith	16.1.1901 - 28.9.1975	m. Joyce Skeates 11.5.1931.
Stanley Reid Bond Smith	2.3.1902 - 5. 8.1981	m. Evelyn May Pickett 1924 divorced 26th February 1932 m. Ivy Ruby Williamson 1933
Irene Waitangi Bond Smith	22.5.1903 - 13.12.1982	m. Edward Clayton 8.9.1928
Moana Katrina Bond Smith	23.11.1904 - 1981	m. Daniel Jackson Binning
George Dennis Bond Smith	2.7.1906 - 1988	1954 Deed Poll: Harold Sidney Jaques
Thora May Smith	17.12.1907 - 18.9.1978	m. Alec Sutton 4.5.1927
(Eric) <u>Trevor Bond Smith</u>	4.11.1911 - 9.9.1975	m. (Violet) June Peapell 9.6.1937



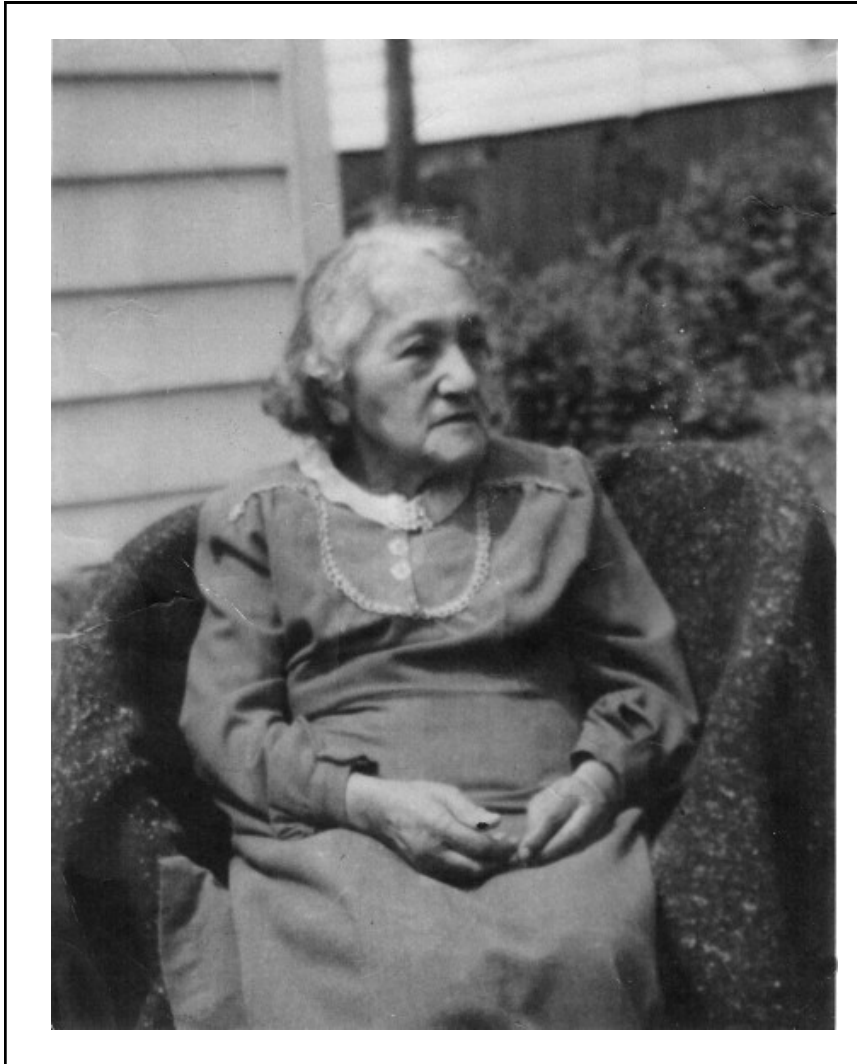
George and Harriet Smith's house. Peel Street, Gisborne.
Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

Harriet separated from George Smith and moved from Gisborne to Auckland, raising the family alone in Point Chevalier. Young Trevor took full advantage of being so close to the water, swimming and pursuing his lifelong passion of fishing, which helped keep food on the table and at nine years old he left school. Financially things were very difficult during those years, but fishing for any reason was a pleasure to Trevor! As a consequence, he never learned to read or write very well and bluffed his way through life. This probably contributed to an inferiority complex he hid under his extrovert exterior. The whole family loved their mother dearly and all gave their support, too.

Of her Grandmother, Harriet Bond (Kennedy) Smith, Olive Hartog writes: 'No. 10 Newell Street Pt. Chevalier was my Grandmother's home for many years. It always had the aroma of Sanitarium Coffee. Being Seventh Day Adventist, she didn't drink real coffee, but used a substitute derived from grain. It had a distinctive aroma and she was an excellent cook and housekeeper. As grandchildren she gave all of us turns at staying for weekends and holidays. We helped clean the oven range, do little messages, sweep the pathways and other small jobs. She always insisted we have our hats on during summer!'

Grandma was always neat in appearance and very softly spoken. In fact, I well remember a time when I had to call Uncle Albert to come in for tea. He was single and lived with Grandma. He was often working down the back of the property and Grandma's soft voice he never would have heard. She was well read and encouraged us to read. A favourite thing we loved to do was to have concerts. It seemed natural for the Smith family to do this and every child was encouraged to give an item. If we attended the movies we acted out the exciting or funny parts and it was always well received. We felt as if we had received the 'Oscar!' Two lead-crystal jars were always filled with cookies and they were displayed on a beautiful dresser in the front room. Harriet was devoted to her family and we are privileged to be her descendants.'

Harriet Smith died on 22nd February 1951 at Auckland, aged 78 years and is buried in the Waikumete Cemetery, Auckland.



Harriet (Kennedy) Smith taken at her home,
10 Newell St, Point Chevalier, Auckland.
Courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips.

This Kauri house and the one next door, were purchased by her second eldest son Alexander Teece Smith, who owned a men's Barber Shop in Queen St. Auckland. He bought the houses from Mr. Myers (Myers Park is named for). The deal was likely done in the barber's chair! His sister, Rene (Irene Clayton) lived at number 8 (still standing) and his mother, Harriet Smith, at number 10.

Mrs. Harriet Smith
Auckland

1:3:1946
Ōpōtiki,
Bay of Plenty.
Dear Mrs Smith,

I am returning here with your tracing & letter to your sister enclosed in yours of the 25:2:1946, together with information asked for. With regards the bush shown on tracing. - the edge of this was only drawn at the time of the original Survey done years ago by Mr. Wilson. The A/82 R/3 P/0 does not refer to the bush area, but is the total area of No. 1E. I do not think there is much bush of any value left, but could not say definitely as I have not been on the ground for years. Opape 1E. is divided into Lots 1E1, 1E2 & 1E3. Your land is 1E2.

*Her share in the land was eventually sold.

Harriet (Kennedy) Smith's Testimony.

Probate of Will of her late brother, Edward Bond Kennedy.

Transcribed by Jill Kemp

Native Court Wellington 27th Nov. 1942 Page 288

49. Edward Bond Kennedy.

Harriet Smith Called by Mr Hawkins, maiden name Kennedy, sister of dead. 68 years.

'Remember calling my sister Mrs Choveaux and telling her I had seen the authorities as she was wrong that we were *half Maori*. My sister wrote to me. I wrote answer telling her she was wrong - that we were *quarter Maori* - based my belief on what had heard on ancestry. Remember mother got out photo (produced yesterday) of Mr. Joseph Bond Kennedy her 3rd husband. Mothers' mother was Waitangi Matarena. She is supposed to be of full blood. Her father was Admiral (*Commander*) Woods (*Wood*) he had no Maori blood.

Mother's first husband, Dr. Thomson was a doctor in the Army – Maori War – they had two children Maggie and Tane. Her second husband was Mr. Reed – *half Maori* - a whaler - Miss Mary Reed of Gisborne, their child. My father was her 3rd husband. Photo produced was father - a good likeness. Father was one of younger sons of original Captain Kennedy who came out in Buffalo - had this from father and one of his brothers. Father's mother [Katerina Taurangi - Rangirauwaka] came from Ōpōtiki and as a child was taken to Harataunga of Kennedy's Bay - heard this from my uncle - the parents took her there and later she married original Captain Kennedy. She was *half Maori* - uncle said this. Mr. George Matchitt and his mother have also given me information to same effect. Mrs Matchitt was my mother's half sister. She (Mrs Matchitt) was married to Captain Gundry first. She was over 90 years when she died three or four years ago. She knew father's (Joseph Kennedy's) people well. **She was with my mother (Ngāhiraka) before mother's first marriage. They came to Auckland to attend mission school.** I believe these facts to be true. Always believed them since heard them.'

Cross examined by Mr. Kennard.

'I live in Auckland. Mrs Choveaux lives in Gisborne. Mrs Wells lives in Gisborne. Saw Mrs. Choveaux when I attended sitting of this Court on August 12th. I wrote to Mrs. Choveaux, before that I saw Mrs. Choveaux at Gisborne, after my brother died. We discussed family interests - this was after she had made her statement to Native Trust. I first wrote to Mrs. Choveaux. I had consulted my nephew who is a Barrister & Sol. at Auckland. He had a letter from Native Trust. He advised me to see Mr. Graham. I went. Letter from Mr. Graham had already been sent before I wrote to Mrs. Choveaux. I told Mr. Graham that information in her letter is wrong. Waitangi (Matarena) married several times - families of other marriages. Waitangi was a Chief's daughter. All her husbands Maori except for Woods [*Wood*.] I am convinced photos were taken of Mother and she was light in skin. Father and mother were about the same in this respect, except that father tanned by life at sea. Father's features more Maori than mothers - but his brothers were very European in appearance. Original Captain John Kennedy's wife was a *half Maori* - her father was a white man, but his mother a Maori. I never heard that her father was born with Maoris. It was my paternal grandmother [Katerina Taurangi - Rangirauwaka] - wife of original John Kennedy who was taken to Harataunga. Never heard of name of original John Kennedy's wife, so would not know names of his parents. Know nothing more of her than have told court today. Don't think it strange that Mrs. Choveaux did not know the degree of Maori blood possessed by us. Never discussed our I believe myself to be quarter caste – mother being half and father being quarter.

The Court: This union would have three eighths.

* Harriet was 18 years old and Mrs Choveaux was only 12 years old when their mother died.



Stanley Reid Bond Smith.

He married English born Evelyn Pickett in the Registry Office, Gisborne
8th March 1924. Stanley was a salesman and Evelyn a typist.

This photograph was possibly taken of the occasion of his brother
Alexander Teece Smith's marriage in 1920.

Photograph and marriage certificate courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.

3855 **COPY OF REGISTER OF MARRIAGE BY REGISTRAR.** [R.G.—12a.]

1924 Marriage in the District of **GISBORNE.** 1376

No.	When and where married. [Date, Description of Building, and Locality.]	Names and Surnames of the Parties.	Ages.	Rank or Profession.	Condition of Parties— 1. Bachelor or Spinster (or as may be). 2. If Widower or Widow, 3. Title of Deceased of former Wife or Husband.	Birthplace.	Residence. 1. Present. 2. Usual.	PARENTS.	
								(1) Father's Name and Surname. (2) His Rank or Profession.	(1) Mother's Name. (2) Her Maiden Surname.
	1924 ✓ 8th March Registrar's Office, Gisborne.	Stanley Reid Bond Smith Evelyn May Pickett	22 21	Salesman Shortland typist	Bachelor Spinster	Gisborne London England	Gisborne Gisborne	George Smith 2. Sawdusrocker	Harriet Smith 2. "Kennedy"
								John S. Pass Pickett 2. Builder.	Evelyn Pickett 2. "Moles"

MARRIED, after the delivery to me of the Certificate required by the Marriage Act, 1908, by H. B. Hill, Registrar.

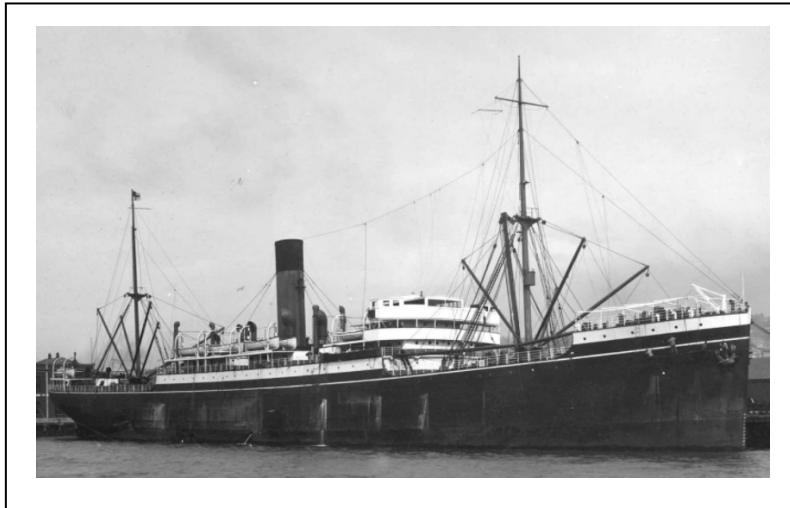
This Marriage was solemnized between us, Stanley Reid Bond Smith and Evelyn May Pickett In the presence of us, E. Hill R. Hill, Married, Gisborne
7 Cassin, Agent, Gisborne

I HEREBY CERTIFY that the above is a true copy of the entry in the Register-book of Marriages kept by me at **GISBORNE.** P. J. L. L. Registrar.

[N.B.—Copy of register of marriage is **NOT** to be issued to the public on this form.]

1376

John S. Pickett, aged 44 years, a Stone Mason by trade, emigrated to Wellington New Zealand with his wife Emma (Mole or Males) and four children, departing from Southampton on the Steam Ship Waimana on 16 March 1922.

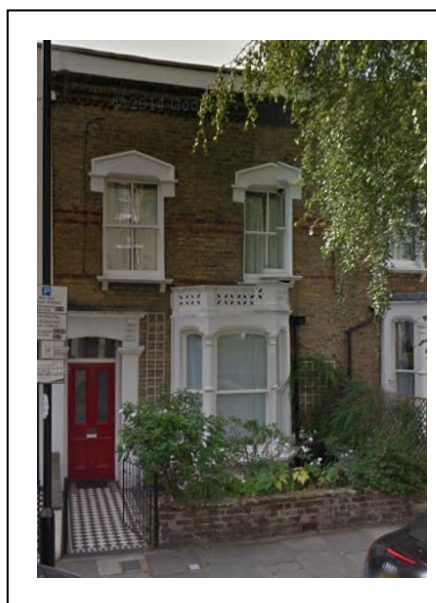


SS. Waimana at Dunedin 1922. Otago Harbour Board collection, S04-167a

The Pickett family eventually settled in Gisborne where John worked as a builder. Their eldest daughter Evelyn May trained as a Shorthand Typist. She met the handsome Stanley Smith and the couple married at the Gisborne Registry Office, 8th May 1924. The marriage lasted a short time and on 26th February 1932 their Decree Absolute was granted. In those days it usually took 7 years for a divorce. Stanley was known to have been violent towards women. His grandfather and father were not good role models in this regard.

From the S.S. Waimanas passenger list:

John S. Pickett 44 years a Mason	b. 1888 Finsbury Park London
Emma (Moles) 45	b. 1887 Kings Cross London
Evelyn May 19 years House Duties.	b. 1903 Finsbury Park London
Norman Arthur 15 Scholar	b. 1907 Finsbury Park London
Grace 13 "	b. 1909 Finsbury Park London
Jack 8 "	b. 1916 Finsbury Park London



In 1911 Census John Pickett was a Bricklayer, living at 20 Chatterton Road, Finsbury Park Islington, Middlesex London. This is one of the tenement houses in that row, it is difficult to read the numbers. Google Maps.



Percy Bond Smith, Alexander Teece Smith and Stanley Reid Bond Smith.
This is probably Alexander's wedding group, taken in 1920.
Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.

Less than a year later, on 4th November 1933, 28 year old Stanley Reid Bond Smith, a machinist, who was living with his mother Harriet Smith, at Point Chevalier, Auckland, married 20 year old Ivy Ruby Williamson, a typist from Avondale, in the Methodist church at Mt. Albert.



Mt. Albert Methodist Church, 831 New North Road, Mt. Albert.

Registration Number	Bride's Given Name(s)	Bride's Family Name	Groom's Given Name(s)	Groom's Family Name	Order Product
1933/10567	Ivy Ruby	Williamson	Stanley Reid Bond	Smith	
<p><i>Matarena Waitangi</i></p> <p>¹</p> <p><i>Ngahiraka Wood + Joseph Bond Kennedy</i></p> <p>¹</p> <p><i>Harriet Bond Kennedy + George Smith</i></p> <p>¹</p> <p><i>Stanley Reid Bond Smith</i></p> <p>¹</p> <p><i>John Scammell Pickett + Emma Moles</i></p> <p>¹</p> <p><i>1. Evelyn May Pickett m. 1924</i></p> <p><i>2. Ivy Ruby Williamson m. 1933</i></p> <p>¹</p> <p><i>Colleen Sallie Bond Laurence Stanley Lorraine Mary Brian Kenneth</i></p>					

This incident happened toward the end of World War 2 when families were really struggling. He was married and had four children. Stanley was working on the Auckland wharves as a labourer, as was his young brother Trevor.

FINED £10 FOR THEFT
LABOURER'S FIRST OFFENCE

The theft of a blanket and sheet, valued at £1 10/, the property of the United States Government, was admitted by **Stanley Reid Bond Smith** (41), a labourer, when he appeared before Mr. J. Morling, S.M., in the Police Court to-day.

Sub-Inspector Henderson said that at 6.5 this morning accused was accosted by Sergeant **Smith** as he was leaving Princes Wharf. Searching a bag which **Smith** carried the sergeant found the property mentioned in the charge. **Smith** admitted taking it from a ship and said the offence was the result of a sudden temptation. A married man with four young children, **Smith** had never previously been in trouble.

Mr. K. C. Aekins, for accused, suggested that the case was not one that called for imprisonment.

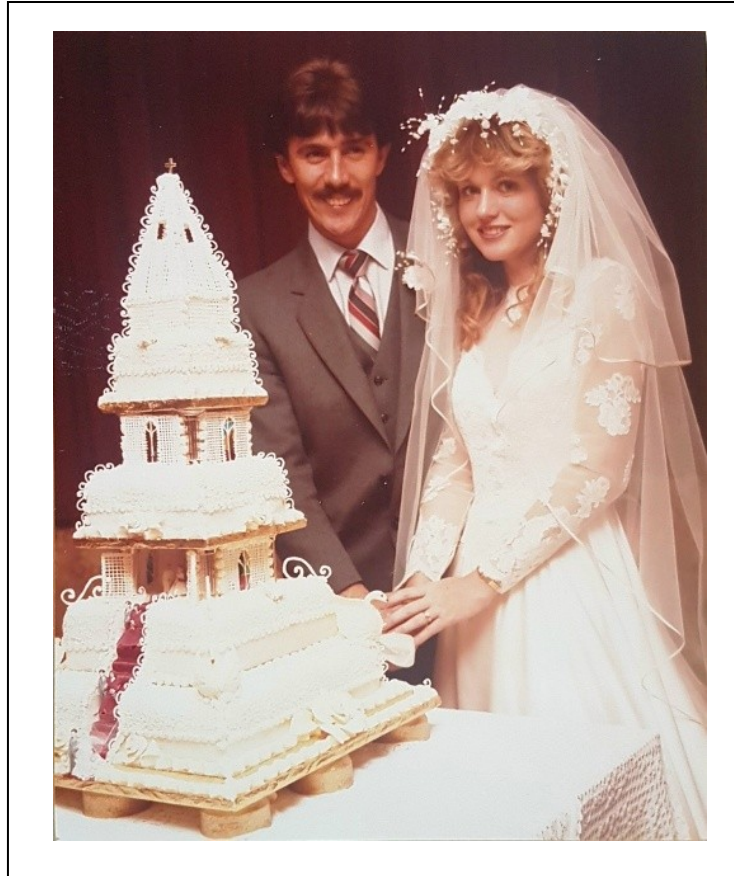
The magistrate imposed a fine of £10.

Auckland Star 1st August 1945. Papers past.

On Thursdays night, as soon as the knock off whistle sounded, the wharfies, with their pay packet in their pockets, would swarm out the wharf gates, heading for their favourite pub. In the smoke filled haze they would swill down jugs of beer; shout their mates a round and spin yarns, without any thought for how they would explain the spending of their wages to their 'Mrs.' The pubs closed at 6 pm in those days. So much alcohol downed in such a short time on an empty stomach, resulted in many intoxicated men staggering home from the tram ready for an argument.



Colleen dancing
with her dad,
Stanley Smith.
Courtesy of
Gayleen Guy.



Ivy made Bryce and Gayleen's cake.
Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.

Stanley and Ivy bought a house on Brandon Road, Glen Eden, next door Stanley's brother Trevor and his wife June. Ivy was a hard worker and managed their Milk Bar Dairy in Glen Eden shopping centre. She also catered for weddings on weekends and was a talented cake decorator. Her daughter's wedding cake was magnificent. Colleen remember the jellies, trifles and sandwiches her mother made for such occasions.



Ivy and Stanley's four children. From Left: Brian, Ivy, Lorraine, Colleen and Larry.
Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.



Stanley holding Larry and Ivy holding Colleen.
Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.



Four generations:
Gayleen, Ivy holding Mark and Colleen.
Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.



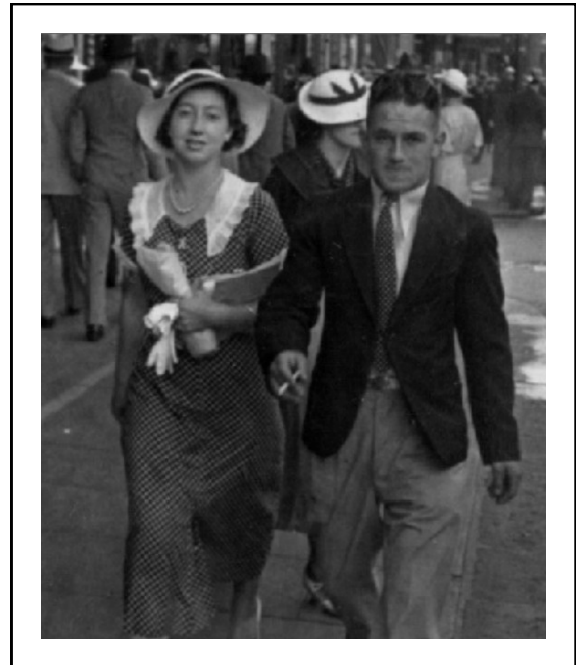
Left:
Ivy, Colleen and
Stanley Smith.
Courtesy of
Gayleen Guy.



Back left:
Larry and Brian.
Front left: Colleen,
Ivy and Lorraine.
Courtesy of
Gayleen Guy.



Above: Alexander Teece Smith and his wife
Rita (Parkinson).
Courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips.



Right: Is this Percy Smith and Joyce Skeates?
Courtesy Of Smith family.



Left: Moana Katrina Bond Smith
sixth child of Harriet and George.
Courtesy of Paul Smith.



Right: Thora May Smith and husband
Alex Sutton, Cedric, Keith and Ian.
Courtesy of Paul Smith.



Tikitapu or Blue Lake. 24th August 1915.

By Marsh Photographers.

George Smith 'X' with one of his brothers and friends.

This would have only been 30 years after the Tarawera eruption of 1886.

Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.



TREVOR BOND SMITH.

(Eric) Trevor Bond Smith was his mother Harriet's favourite child! He had plenty of doting siblings to mother him too and was a good looking, gregarious, the life of the party, with an outrageous sense of humour and always up for a laugh! He liked to dance, sing and party, play tennis, horse ride, swim and fish. The girls loved him and he wasn't averse towards them either and was known to be a 'bit of a ladies' man!' Trevor (right) was competitive at sport.



At a time when most young men were facing the exciting prospect of serving overseas in World War 2, Trevor was disappointed to fail the medical, on the grounds of his flat feet. The war created a shortage of able-bodied young men, especially building labourers and he obtained a job building the new Hotel in Kaikohe. Courtesy of the Smith family.



The Kaikohe Hotel Building Site.
Trevor was always proud of having worked on this.
Courtesy of Clive Peapell.



Above: Builders on the Kaikohe Hotel. Trevor is crouching in middle. X.

Below: JUNE PEAPELL with TREVOR SMITH.

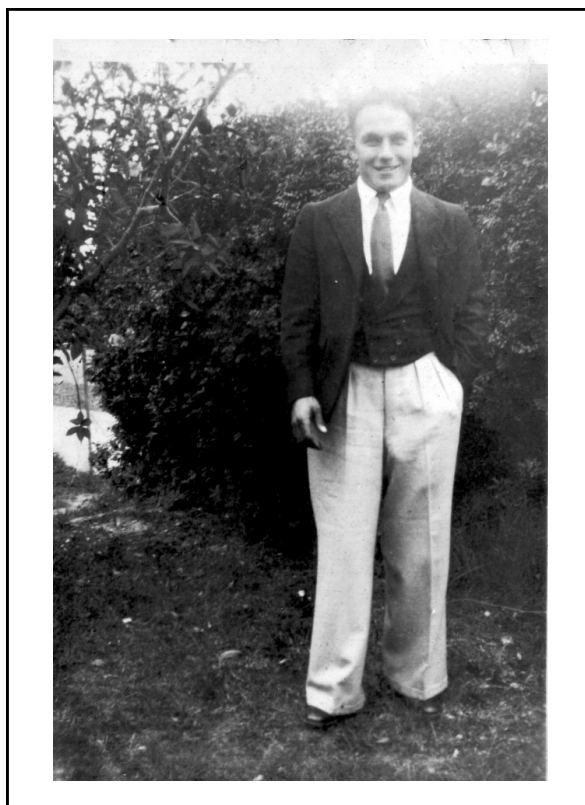
Photographs courtesy of Clive Peapell.

He had extended family living in the north and being youngest of nine children, he was already used to holding his own in older company. His good looks, self confidence and ready wit made him popular with the other workmen on the job. He was strong and athletic, loved outdoor sports and had the characteristic will to win, a trait many in the family can identify with! He loved to fish and hunt, could sing, dance and impress the ladies; until one, in particular, captured his heart - June Peapell!





(Eric) Trevor Smith married (Violet) June Peapell
At the Church of the Ascension, Point Chevalier, Auckland.
June 19th 1937.

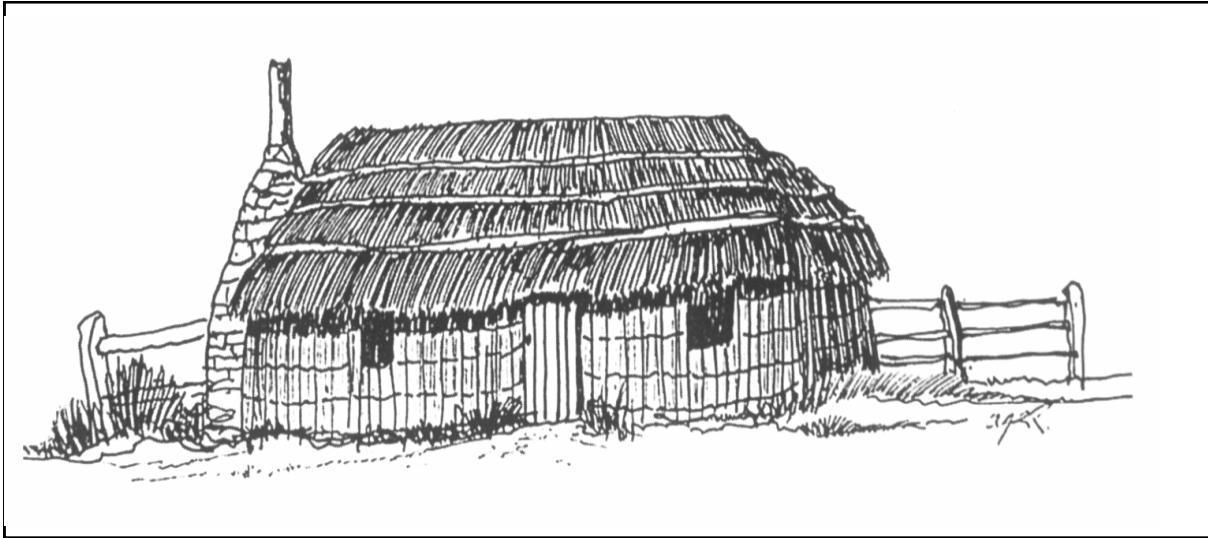


Mr. and Mrs. Trevor Smith.
The sea is visible through the hedge, so these were probably taken at Point Chevalier Park.
An afternoon tea was held after the ceremony at his mother's home, 10 Newell Street.
Courtesy of Clive Peapell.

Chapter 18
TREVOR SMITH
&
(VIOLET) JUNE PEAPELL

All their descendants have
Joseph and Ngāhiraka Kennedy as ancestors.
Includes George and Geanie Berryman
and June's family history.

JOSEPH PEAPELL born 1825 in Cricklade, Wiltshire, England. His wife ELIZABETH LONG, the daughter of JOHN and ELIZABETH LONG, was from North Western Ireland. They emigrated from Ireland, travelling in Steerage Class, on the sailing ship Alma with three of their children Eliza, Esther and Joseph John, arriving in Wellington on 15th May, 1857. Joseph was reputed to have "run away from Cromwell." The family began their new life in a flax and toetoe Maori whare, in what was known as the Swamp which is now the site of the Wellington Girl's College. Initially they shared this humble structure with the Root family, only being separated by a thin, raupo partition. These were pioneering times and the facilities were primitive. But other families have been known to say that these raupo homes were snug and warm. He and Elizabeth had seven children. Thomas their fourth child, was born in 1863. He was June Peapell's Grandfather. The family moved to Somme Parade, Aramoho. Joseph Peapell successfully tendered for the contract for many roading contracts in early Whanganui. They were living there when THOMAS married. He died in 1896 aged 71 years.



A typical Raupo whare built for pioneer families
with the help of local Maori.
Source unknown.



THOMAS PEAPELL married SARAH ANN BOURNE circa 1890.
Courtesy of Clive Peapell.

Thomas Peapell and Sarah Ann (Bourne) were both children of early Wanganui Pioneers and settled in Waverley with their own family of eight children:

Edith Maud	1894
<u>Fredrick Harold</u>	1896
Lena May	1889
Florence Rose	1899
Herbert George	1901
Reginald Arthur	1903 died aged 1 year
Cecil Thomas	1907 died aged 7 months
Raymond Alexander	1910

The family farmed at Kohi where Thomas, who was a tall man, being six foot four in his socks, was a Well Digger. Their son, FREDERICK HAROLD PEAPELL (June's father) was born at Waverley in 1896. When he was a boy, his mother, who was a strict Catholic, sent young Fred on an errand to get Holy Water from the Father at the local Parish with 1/- and a empty bottle. As boys do, he got side tracked playing with other children along the way. Suddenly realizing he should have returned home by now, Fred went to the nearest horse trough and filled up the bottle. It is not recorded what he did with the 1/-? Mother was none the wiser, but he kept a nervous eye on her in case she keeled over. Kiwi ingenuity at its best!

Sarah (Bourne) Peapell was born in 1867 and died during the Influenza Epidemic of 1918, aged 50 years. Her widower husband Thomas, lived in different parts of Waverley after her death and had a cottage by the 'Rec.' at one time. In later years he lived with his son in a farmhouse down Beach Road, past the old Waverley Golf Links, on the farm of Jack Brown. He was keen on fishing as a past time and in his younger years enjoyed pig hunting. He drove an old Model T Ford converted to a light truck which had to be cranked to start. Immediately it kicked to life it would move off, so Thomas would jump aside, then onto the running board, into the driver's seat and away. The family remember him being at his son Fred's funeral at Papakura. Thomas died aged 82 years. Young Fred was 19 years old when he joined up and served overseas in France, during the first World War, but was invalided home via Cape Town, South Africa. He married the lovely ROSE BERRYMAN about 1918.



ROSE ELIZABETH BERRYMAN and FREDERICK HAROLD PEAPELL.
Circa 1918.



George & Geanie (Gargie) Berryman and family.
 Left to right: Violet, Alex and Rose.
 Circa 1910

GEORGE BERRYMAN married JANE KEITH COPLAND (Geanie) in 1894.

George Berryman, June's grandfather, was a rather strict Cornishman and his wife, Geanie was from an Irish, family. One of her grandsons recalls her saying that she had once 'kissed the Blarney stone,' (for luck!) When the couple first married, they lived in a bush hut near Ratahihi. One morning after George had gone out working, Geanie went outside and there, sitting around her front door, were a group of Maori! She had no tea in the house, but made them drinks of hot water and sugar. She must have been very frightened, but they left peacefully and next day she found a gift of Kumara on her doorstep. The family were also one of the lucky ones who survived the Ratahihi bush fire, which claimed many lives. George worked physically hard all his life and managed to improve the family's living standards. He laboured on the land and did fencing with his son in law Fred. The Berryman's had three children, Rose (June's mother) Violet and Alex. Only Alexander James was registered.

In later years George and Geanie retired to a flat in Khyber Pass, Auckland. Geanie died of Pneumonia. Rose refers to 'Pop,' in her letters towards the back of this book. From all accounts he was a rather cantankerous old man. No doubt he was like many men of that generation who were unable to express love to their children. He died, aged 65 years, in Knox Home, Glenn Innes. George developed Parkinson's Disease (a grandson, Jim, remembers that he shook badly). The tough, pioneering life took a heavy toll on these hard working men. George and Geanie are both buried at Mangere Cemetery. Clive Peapell writes of his aunt, Violet. 'Her nickname was 'Pom.' She married Ted Bates (who unfortunately was an alcoholic) and had one child. They built a house in Cambridge Terrace, Papatoetoe. Pom was a great person with horses. She developed a type of paralysis and died in Auckland Hospital. Violet (Berryman) Bates is buried in the Mangere Cemetery.'



Jane Keith known as 'Geanie', Berryman with her children.

Left to right. Alex, Violet and ROSE.

Circa 1913.

Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



Fencing the hard way! George Berryman with horse and dogs.
Fred Peapell (son-in-law) often went fencing with him too.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



(Jane Keith) Geanie Berryman
'To Violet from Mother.'
Wellington. 14th October 1923.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



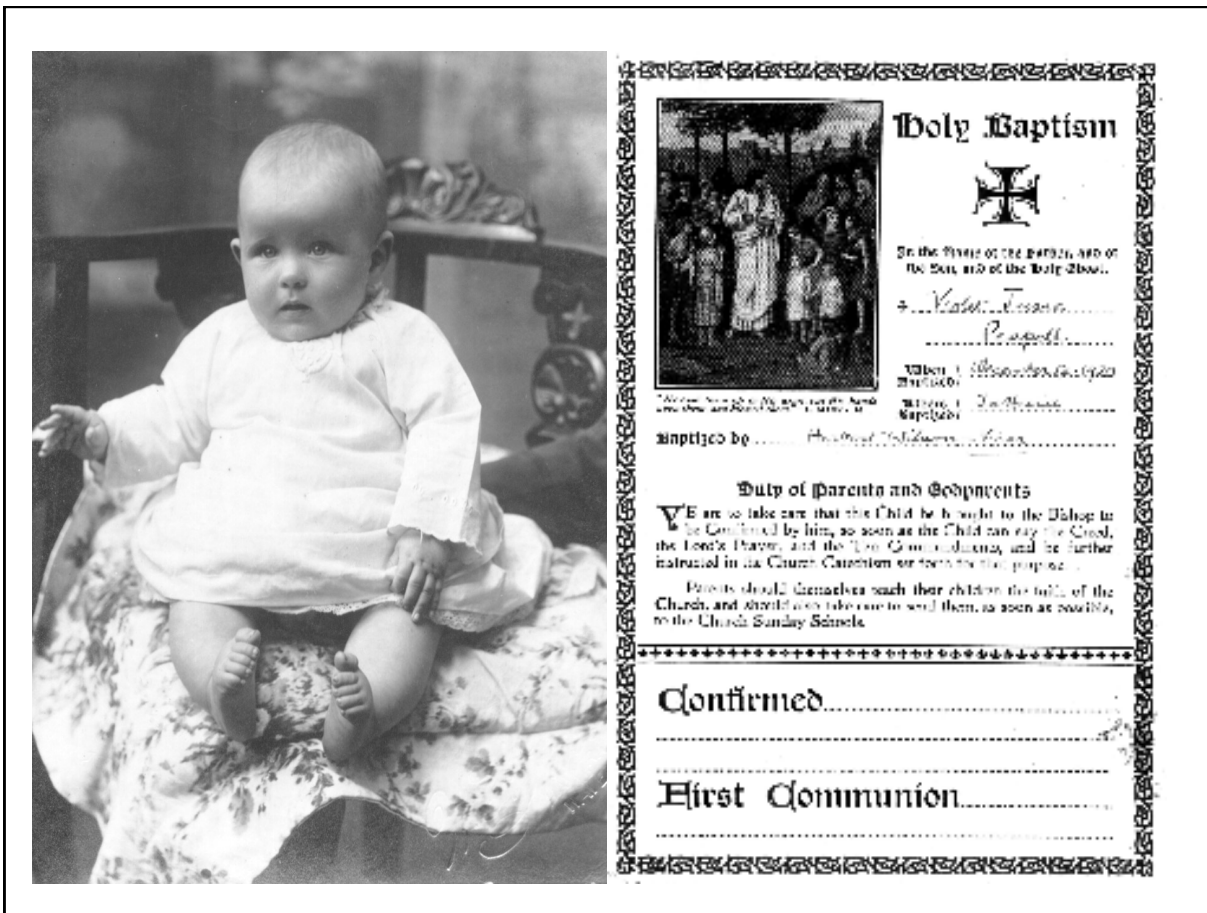
Rose (Berryman) Peapell.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



Rose Peapell with baby VIOLET JUNE PEAPELL (known as June) at her christening.
Born 19th June 1919.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



France, World War 1. No wonder they were called 'Diggers!'
Fred Peapell is marked 'X.'
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



Violet June Peapell was christened at Te Huia on
12th December 1920, aged 18 months.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



June and Daddy (Fred Peapell).
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.

Sanitorium at Waipukarau.



Where Fred recovered here from War related illness.
Courtesy of Clive Peapell.

Fred's Hut at the Sanitorium, Waipukarau.



The family moved to Hamilton, where Fred took ill as a result of lung and chest problems from the War and was hospitalised in the T.B. Sanatorium at Waipukarau for about twelve months.

Mr. F.H. Peapell was entitled to the following awards:

*British War Medal

*Victory Medal Issued in 1922.

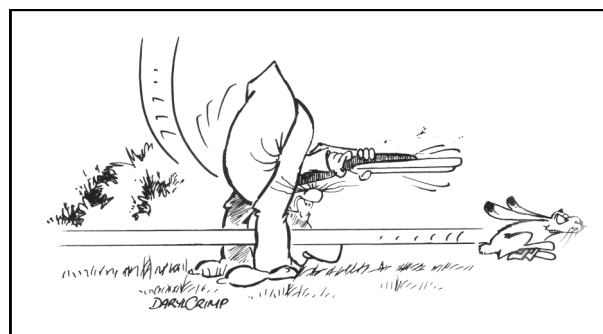
The militia shop have duplicate sets of medals in full size or miniature.

Hillside Coins & Badges. P.O. Box 658. Christchurch.

When Fred recovered, he took work as a Farm Manager for Bill Griffin, on a large 2,000 acre property at Scotsman Valley, Tauwhare, near Morrinsville. Alex Berryman, Fred's brother-in-law, worked there also. They milked 100 cows, ran store cattle and sheep and bred a few horses. The two children loved shearing time when some of the more regular Shearers would bring little gifts of toys for them. They hung around the wool shed to watch the silly sheep being hand shorn, the fleeces sorted and pressed into the huge sack bales. There was a special smell to the wool shed from the lanolin in the fleece. They climbed up the fence rails, leaning over to count the sheep being dipped and Clive even had a turn at opening and shutting the drafting gate, while the dogs barked and rounded up the reluctant stragglers. When shearing was finished, Fred went off to the breweries in Hamilton, returning with a Keg of beer for the worker's end of season party. Mrs Griffin and Rose were flat out cooking all the meals over those busy weeks, as the men like cooked breakfasts and there were also many huge cakes in roasting dishes turned out from the coal range. It was extra busy for the party and how those men could sing and dance! There were wild deer on the property, too. Often the men went hunting and returned with a wild venison for the table.

Talking about shooting brought to mind an incident which Clive witnessed: Fred and Alex were indulging in a bit of target practice with the 22 rifle in the back yard, their target being Rose's washing, flapping gently in the breeze and which they figured would stop any stray bullets (also hoping that Rose would be none the wiser into the bargain - after all there were a few holes already from barbed wire around the property!) Their plan went awry when a bullet went clean through Rose's nighty and into the side of the water tank, causing some momentary bedlam!

Managing such a huge property became too much for Fred, as he was still unwell from the war and they went Share Milking at Pukekohe East, then moved again to a property they rented for themselves in Valley Road, Papakura. Fred worked for local farmers if they needed an extra hand, he was a hard worker and very versatile, with a good knowledge of farming. The children had a wonderful country life. When Jim was older he was out net fishing on 90 Mile Beach and nearly drowned as he was being sucked out by the tide with the net wrapped around his legs. At that moment, a forgotten memory from his childhood flashed into his mind. When he was about 5 years old, the children climbed into an abandoned water tank (perhaps the target one?) and rolled it down a hill. June and Clive were bigger and could support themselves either side, but Jim was too small. He vividly remembered tumbling over and over whilst being thrown violently around inside the tank, which finally landed in the creek. Fortunately, on both occasions, he lived to tell the tale!



Run rabbit run. Source unknown.

Clive recalled starting his education at the little country school at Tahiroa. The children rode about four miles on horseback (they owned three horses) along a clay track which became slippery in wet and muddy weather, when it was mighty unpleasant riding along on a wet sack, with water dripping off one's hat and trickling down your back. (They used a sack for a saddle). During severe frosts, the horses hooves would slip and slide and the children often fell off, hurting themselves. One day, Clive who was nicknamed Jo, had a nasty accident. June ducked as she rode underneath some branches, but Clive didn't notice and was caught under the chin and thrown from the saddle. He was very fortunate that he wasn't killed. If their Dad wanted the horse, or one was out of action for some reason, one of the older children would double little Jimmy. I can picture him now, hanging on for dear life, as the big kids raced to be first through the school gate! 'I'm gonna tell mum!' The horses would be left to graze in the paddock next to the school and at play times, would whinny at the fence hoping for apples from the children. Come home time, the horses had other ideas and sometimes led the children a merry dance, to avoid being caught. Once saddled, those horses could have found their own way home blindfolded. Clive well remembers the day, when they arrived at school only to find the door locked, with the teacher nowhere to be seen. They waited and waited. Their male teacher (they had two - a lady and a man) used to carry a rifle to school and take the opportunity to shoot a few rabbits on the way. This particular day, as he climbed through a fence (presumably after a rabbit) with rifle loaded and cocked, he tripped over a wire as he did so and shot himself dead. It was a shock to the children and a lesson in safety they would never forget.



Wheel barrow ride. Fred Peapell with June, Clive and little Jim.
Courtesy of Clive Peapell.



Fred Peapell on the left and Rose's brother Alex have been after bunnies!
Hunting is in the genes!



June with duckling.

One Little Indian Girl!

Someone went to a great deal of effort to make this costume. Plaited hair is made from old stockings. The tunic has pictures drawn with chalk and laced down the front. The pants are sackings and fringed. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.





Jim and Clive Peapell.
Courtesy of Clive Peapell.

Fred took up the sport of Boxing and became very popular. He also taught his boys and they have happy memories of sparring with their Dad and a little nervous, when they took part in the Curtain Raiser before a Boxing Tournament! Guess who lost!



In 1934, after Fred had spent an evening at the Boxing Association, he got a lift home as pillion passenger on a friend's motorbike. Riding along the Takanini Straight, in the dark, by a stroke of misfortune, a farmer was driving a lone cow along the road. They hit and killed the cow and a seriously injured Fred was rushed to Auckland Hospital where he died, aged 38 years. What a terrible tragedy for the family. (The farmer had the cheek to ask Rose to pay for the cow!) As a mark of respect to a very popular man, all the Papakura shops closed, as the funeral passed. It says something of his character and integrity.

NEW ZEALAND HERALD

August 18th 1934

PILLION RIDER KILLED
CYCLE STRIKES COW
COMPANION ALSO INJURED
FATALITY NEAR TAKANINI

A collision between a motor-cycle and a cow on the Great South Road near Takanini at 6:15 last evening resulted in the pillion rider of the motor-cycle suffering injuries which led to his death in the Auckland Hospital at mid-night. He was Mr. Fredrick Peapell, married, aged 38, of Valley Road, Papakura. His head injuries proved fatal. The rider of the machine was Mr. Henry Gilmer, married, aged 28, of Mahia Road, Manurewa. He was admitted to hospital suffering from concussion and facial injuries. The condition of Mr. Gilmer, who is a jockey, is fairly serious. The men were travelling in the direction of Papakura and were two miles from the town when their machine collided with a cow which had come out of a side road. The men were attended by Dr. H. Burrell, of Papakura, and taken to hospital by a St. John ambulance. The motor cycle was not extensively damaged.

Violet (Rose's sister) came and lived with them on the family property of the few acres they rented. They ran a small herd of cows which the children milked before school. The milk and cream, along with other farm produce, helped to support the family, but things were tough as the country was going through the Depression. From a young age the boys had to do a man's work around the home, chopping wood and lifting for the ladies. The muscles developed in their boxing came in very handy, and for the odd 'fisty cuffs' too! It is difficult for us to imagine what those times were like for Rose, as she sacrificially struggled to make a home for the family. Rose was a wonderful woman - one of life's rare treasures.



Milking the cow.
Source unknown.

Te Kauwhata.
31/5/1929

I am sorry I have not been able to answer your welcome letter before and to send you picture Scraps, I have not got any nice ones yet, if I can get any I will send you them.

How are you getting on with your new Teacher and do you still play tennis? So you have Daddy home again, you will be pleased. How are all your Cats?

I have two pups at my back veranda and in the mornings I have to get a bucket and broom to work, they have no trousers and they leave little heaps of Chocolates all over the Veranda!

I expect by the time you get this you will have been to the Show, I hope you will enjoy it. I would have liked to have been able to come and see the Show and meet you there, but I cannot yet. How is Jim and Jo (Clive) getting on? Have you got 1 or 2 weeks holiday from school?

Dear June, will you ask Mummy if I send my Pink Lily Bulb up to her will she grow it and would she like some Christmas Lily bulbs? They are nice ones but if they are too much bother never mind, perhaps she has some.

Now dear June, Granddad sends his love to you and always remembers you, and sends xxx to you, and hopes to see you soon. I have no more news just now. How are the Griffen girls now? And Mrs. Marches' baby is she a big girl now?


I will say Good Night and God Bless my dear little granddaughter June.

Love xxxxxx
from your loving Grandma.

P.S. I was an April Fool. The Butcher told me he would send my meat and he did not even open the shop. I had no meat all day, but I paid him out, I went to another Butcher and turned him down.

Gargie.

NEW ZEALAND.—EDUCATION DEPARTMENT



Certificate of Proficiency.

(FORM II.)


(Under Regulations for the Organization, Examination, and Inspection of Schools)

This is to Certify that June Peapell

Takanini School, in the Educati District

Auckland, has fulfilled the requir ents of h

e of Proficiency.

(Signed) A. I. D. E 

Official designation: Inspector chools

Date: 20th 1935

Age of Can 14
in which requ ere fulfilled: }
(Age not ce

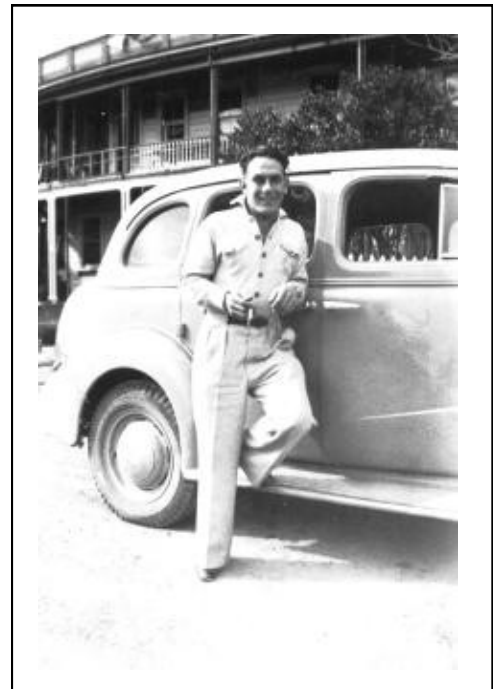
When she was 15 years old, June left school to join the work force. She (and later her brothers) travelled by train into Auckland City, where she worked, sewing shirts and also in a Milk Bar near Queen's Arcade, Queen Street. At that time young Trevor Smith was working as a Labourer on the Building of the Waverley Hotel. Somehow he seemed to linger at that Milk bar and the rest, as you might say, is history! Trevor was fun loving and extrovert. He soon taught June to dance. This shy young girl blossomed into a woman, as she fell head over heels in love with Trevor.



June Peapell 'X' at Takanini School 1935.
Courtesy of the Smith family.



Trevor with June's young brothers, Clive in the middle and young Jimmy.
Having lost their dad while still young, the boys hero worshiped June's new boyfriend
(when they weren't teasing June about him, or hanging around like pains, of course!)
Jim thinks that was the family's pet monkey on the right?
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



Trevor Smith in a borrowed car.
One of June's brothers is in the back seat.
Trevor wasn't renowned for looking after his own cars.
They usually 'clapped out' from lack of attention. He once owned a Baby Austin.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



A beautiful mother, June and baby daughter LEONE SMITH.

Circa 1939.

Courtesy of the Smith family.



Leone, baby Dallas and Chris Smith.

Circa 1944.

Courtesy of the Smith family.

Paul Smith was a late, but much loved, addition to Trevor and June's family. He was only 16 years old when his father died. He once remarked to me that his mum, June, didn't 'hassle him' growing up. Maybe he had the advantage of an older mother's experience of life and hindsight!



Leone and John Metcalfe, Mary and Chris Smith Dallas and Clive Hargreaves.
Front: Trevor, youngest son, Paul, June Smith.
Courtesy of the Smith family.



Paul Smith.
Aged two.
Courtesy of the Smith family.

After June married, things were never quite the same for the family. World War 11 broke out in 1939. In July the following year (1940) Clive enlisted in the Army. Being too young to go overseas, he served in the Territorial's for the following three years. Just as he was about to be drafted abroad, became ill and ended up in the same Waipukurau Sanatorium where his father Fred had convalesced several years before.



Sunday Morning!

Right: Jim with Mum (Rose) wearing Clive's uniform.

He is still in bed with a large hangover.

Jim's witty comment: 'Not sure where Jim slept, but it looks like under the hedge!'

Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.

Rose found it a struggle trying to make ends meet and it became necessary for 13 year old Jim to leave school. He put his age up to 14 and joined the Home Guard, or 'Dad's Army,' as it was colloquially known. The Navy looked more inviting. Jim tried the same ruse again, putting up his age, but this time got caught and thrown out. Not one to give up on the prospect of a free cruise and a flash uniform (or dreams of a girl in every port) he waited until he was old enough and was finally accepted into the 'Navy', "but" the Japs got to hear about it and so they surrendered!" Jim began working in the city, commuting on the train and tram, just as June had done and it was he who disclosed how one could dodged paying the tram Conductor. But needs must, he only earned 16/- a week and his Boss deducted 6d off for tea money, even though Jim was too busy to stop for 'Smoko!' To supplement his wages he worked delivering ice-cream on Friday and Saturday nights.

The Landlord of their rented farm at Papakura Valley Road, contacted Rose with some bad news. He had decided to put the property up for sale and gave them first option of purchase for £1,400 and was prepared to accept £100 deposit. Jim was thrifty and had tried to put a few 'bob' aside, but even so he may as well have been asked to pay £1 million, the deposit was simply impossible to find, which was a regret all his life. Sadly, the sale of the farm split the family, as they moved to various accommodation and they never really recovered from it.

With nowhere to go and little resources, Rose and Jim moved in with Alex, her brother and his wife Hazel, with Jim sleeping on a sofa, but the arrangement proved unsatisfactory. After several moves they finally found Rose a small flat in Grafton and Jim moved to Whangarei. Clive married Daphne Roland and Leone Smith (June and Trevor's daughter) was their flower girl. When he first went up to Whangarei, Jim lived in a boarding house then he found board with Daphne's parents, Bill and Mavis Rowland. Jim writes of them, "Pop (Bill) was one of life's real characters. He was brother Clive's father in law and both he and his wife Mavis were remarkable people. They had left Napier after losing everything in the earthquake and settled in Whangarei. I boarded with them until I bought a house. They were very kind to my mother and loved her like family. Sadly my mother was not destined to enjoy her new home for very long as she became ill with Cancer. Daphne and Mavis nursed Mum and were just wonderful."

Rose stayed in a flat in Grafton Road hoping for a State House and they were on the waiting list for seven years. She worked in a cosmetic factory where a sympathetic Boss was able to pay her in such a way that her small Widow's benefit was not affected. Jim saved hard for a house for them both. What Rose would have done without Jim, it is hard to say. Trevor and June had struggles of their own, finding it hard to get accommodation, especially with Trevor being unable to get constant work as he was prone to take a 'Maori holiday,' and go fishing. Rose wrote to June asking "Are you alright?" By now, she and her son-in-law did not see eye to eye! Things improved when Trevor got employment as a Watersider and they were able to rent a property at Brandon Road, Glen Eden, where they raised their family of four children, Leone, Chris, Dallas and a later addition of Paul.



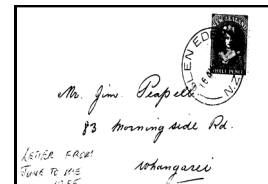
I love my Nana and my Nana loves me!
Leone Smith, aged 2, with Rose Peapell.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



Leone was flower girl at Daphne and Clive Peapell's wedding. Gladys Mathews, Jim Peapell, Leone Smith, Clive & Daphne Peapell, Wm. Roland, Milly Pos.
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.

Rose wrote frequently to Jim and June. The following excerpts from those letters give an insight to her life, reflecting life in the 1950's and her great sense of humour.
Courtesy of Leone Metcalfe.

13 Parkfield Terrace.
Grafton,
Auckland.
14.2.1952
Dear Jim,



...very pleased indeed to receive your welcome letter, I know how you detest writing..
.. a great change for you, much healthier both physically and monetary. Its good to know you can save a few pounds, isn't it? Here in the city it is impossible to save, can only live from day to day. H..! it sounds like a sermon!
...it would be wonderful if you could get that license, sounds to me like you are the white headed boy in that line, but wise to take on the two bosses only, but you like to do the others a good turn too.
.. sorry you had bad luck but you could not help the mishap. The speeding caper- well after all that's up to you and I think that after all speeding is a fools game.
...Please to learn you are boarding with Mavis, she is very good. It will be more like home. The boarding house was not the best and you don't get washing done either.
.. I am very pleased you are settled up there but it is very lonely here.
.. I go out to June's a fair bit, mostly on Sundays.
...I do hope we can get a house. I went to State Advances and fixed up a transfer.
.. Every two or three dozen cars has a 'For Sale' notice plastered on it. Some actually have the price on them.
...the friends over the road have gone on holiday in their caravan. It was as funny as a fair.

Started about 6 am and the engine was running all the time. Mom was giving poor old Keith the works and he was running backwards and forwards with blankets, clothes, pots, pans, food etc. until finally 10am saw them majestically pull out.

...anxious to know how you got on with your deep sea fishing? Fancy Lockie letting you have his bach. You are lucky. One thing about Whangarei, once you are known people seem very nice and will do anything for you.

...I think I could quite easily get a job up there now.

... been dreadfully hot here, I can hardly put one leg in front of the other, better than the damned cold winter.

...My neighbours still go bye byes with the birds. They have bought a chimney clock and bookcase. There are sales everywhere and things are as cheap as dirt.

...I had a big surprise tonight, was sitting on the doorstep reading the newspaper, lo and behold David looms up, he just got back and will be leaving on Monday. He looked well. I will put a note in for David, he left me a packet of cigs. He is a good old sport.

...Did I leave my Ballpoint pen with you?

...Well, Jim, you will be bored to death reading this, now look after yourself and don't work too hard.

...thanks a lot for offer of cash but I am managing so far.

...I see Railway and Air travel have gone up again.

.. I was sorry about the poor King.

.. I've smoked more rigs than I've ever smoked before.

...for the wedding you will have to get a plain grey tie & gloves.

... I went to the party, Myrtle sent for me, Doreen looked nice. Billy sang, 'A Story Of Two Cigarettes.' Frank Sinatra has nothing on him! We had a nice time.

...Well, Jim, you've had no luck with a house. I feel as mad as a hatter. Molly's mother and father put in for a State house and they got one after 6 months from the day they lodged the application. They have no children either, so you can tell them (State Advances) that one when you go in. Gee I was mad!

...June and Trevor called in for a few minute. He is doing a milk run in the mornings before he goes to work, with Doug Taylor.

...Its raining like the devil now, it has seemed a very long day today.

.. I have had three fires but I usually go to bed.

...I am posting the ring I gave you. I had the bloodstone removed & the space filled with gold, it looks nice. I do hope you like it. I will have to get some new things myself for the wedding.... are wearing cocktail frocks.

...Did you get your shaving brush O.K?

...went to the Domain to hear the massed bands, they were lovely but I felt pretty awful. as I saw the young Bandsman who dropped dead right in front of me. It was in the papers.

...I did not go to the party because I did not want to spend money on a present.

...A man came to the door for you, Mr. Riddel. He did not think you would remember him. He was in a small grey car with 'Public Service Garage' on it.

...tell Mavis I am sorry the boat went down with the pens and ink etc.

...I had a letter from Daphne, she said Clive had not been too good since the 'flu. I hope he is not working too hard, or too long hours.

...Not much to write about in this dump. Don't think I am discontented but I am fed up with Auckland but I can put up with it a while longer.

...I am going to take Tony to the Zoo, he is getting a big boy now.

...Did you get your truck fixed alright, or did you sell it?

...my eyes have not been the best, I had them fixed up and new glasses.

...I was going to June's but I'm not just in the pink.

.....June came yesterday and brought some blackberries the kiddies had picked, I made blackberry jelly.

...Went to see Bob Hope, nearly died laughing- funniest thing I have ever seen.

...Mavis was telling me that you and Bill are very keen Draughts players. Mavis speaks very

nicely of you in her letters. Give them my love, Jim.

.. how did you get on about the tax business?

...I have some marvellous news for you - we got a wage raise! My financial status has now soared beyond my control- we get 10 pence a week more, don't you think that is the laugh of week?

...what a thrill I had, I was so excited I could hardly undo the box! Jim she's a beauty, you may be sure I will take great care of it. I tried all the attachments and it works perfectly. I nearly fainted when I took the dust bag out- just the sitting room carpet and kitchen and it was half full of dust! I am dying for Saturday so I can get cracking! She hardly makes any noise at all and it is a beautiful machine. Jim, thank you ever so much. I am so grateful, I never thought I would own an Electrolux of my own.

...Thank you for your telegram Jim, delivered here at 5-15, I was thrilled to get it.

...I caught 4 mice, had to take them out of the trap myself.

...the radio man hasn't been down yet, it is going alright at the present moment.

...saw another Mario Lanza picture on Saturday, believe me it was good.

...Sending you a couple of photos, keep them until I come up, I like the one of you.

....You will have to get yourself a hat. A couple of girls said, 'Gee, he is so handsome,' and that you were like a film star, so you had better watch out! The hat did suit you!

...Did you go into the State Advances? Remind them it is 7 years since I put the application in and it ought not be so hard to get a unit up there, with smaller rent.

... answer Mavis's letter next week, she might go crook if I answered it straight away.

...Sorry to hear you were sick when you returned home, your stomach was not the best when you were here.

...Had a letter from Daphne. It was 8:30 and Clive had not come home. She was worried because the roads are so slippery.

...hope to get up for Peter's birthday, Daphne is going to give him a little party.

..., sounds good news about the house, Jim, I will keep my fingers crossed.

...Have come back early from June's, we are having such heavy rain I did not want to get caught in it like last week

....give my love to Mavis, tell her there can't be many cats left up there, not with any guts anyway, she must have scraped them all away! Glad she is doing well, I wish I was a musician!

..took the Mt. Roskill tram instead of the Three Kings and had to walk 4 miles up hill! We went to see Charlie Chaplin in 'Limelight.' You oughta see it.

.. Jim is on holiday next week, he has bought himself a bandsaw & motor to run it.

..Mavis wrote and told me that the place you were after fell through.

.. Fancy Batts left up there! I suppose I will see them one of these days.

...the weather here the last 4 weeks has been marvellous. I would have liked to be beside the sea, having a good fish off the rocks.

..Clive and Daph have gone to the beach for 3 weeks, I do hope they have good weather.

...Daph. hasn't seen you for ages, I know you are busy. She said Clive has not been well, so hope the holiday will do him good.

...you don't get your holidays until the winter, do you?

...I am sorry to hear Pop has not been well and its not so good about Bill is it? He has probably worked too hard these last 3 years, he looks sturdy enough but lacks stamina. You know what I mean about your working so hard, Jim, but 'nuff said!!

...must quit the sermon, I know you are doing it for a purpose.

....I will be seeing you at Easter, if not before.

...Hope you got your parcel O.K. thought it might be useful to take to Kaitia.

... Ken Kenneth came down for the Chops at the carnival. It was on for 3 weeks but too expensive 'cause I'd want to go in for all the raffles.. asked my neighbour if she went in for any - no not one, just passed them by, h..!! They are a thrilling couple!

.. Have been here 2 years and still can't save any money.

...Very busy at work, have been working overtime. I live in horror of being found out by

Police department for working full time. I will be glad when I get a part time job & earn what I am allowed and I won't feel so worried.

...Eunice comes over every week, we go to the flicks or just sit and talk.

...I was at June's last Sunday, she has been working hard at her sewing. They want alterations done to their house and she has to get the cash somehow. (1953) she bought set of free standing cupboards from Farmers - £24 - cheaper than buying the timber.

...Jim, the Barometer is going good, don't have to listen for the weather - lovely to have.

.. went to an Auction Sale last Friday night, in Newton. Believe me, for a few pounds you could furnish a whole place. That's where I am going when I want some things.

...I broke my teeth the other day, they are just about in half, but will hang together for a while, I hope!

...Boss is going to get a shock when I tell him I am leaving! Fed up after 8 years - tedious!

.. Did you have a party for your birthday? I suppose you had an ice-cream cake

.. Going out to Batts for dinner, tomorrow night. I like them very much.

...liked to have come up for Easter... big expense for 4 days.

...Let me know if you come down, I like to have something nice for you to eat.

Would like to see you all again. Give all my love.

Cherrio, Jimmy,
lots of love from Mum.

In 1954 & 55 Rose wrote to June often.

The following are snippets from the precious letters, which June kept all her life.

83 Morningside Rd.

Whangarei.

My dear June,

...thankyou for my pyjamas, they are corker, lovely and warm and plenty of room in them, believe me I have been wearing them too.

...June you have a lot to do and I think you are clever.

...You certainly don't take after me, I've always been too slow to catch worms.

.... hope Leone is feeling better, is she still at the underwear place, you made me feel very old when you mentioned she had a boyfriend, well if he is a descent chap I guess it is a good thing as one does not know what the young ones get up to these days.

...What did you think of the lovely storm, we got it here for two days and two nights, I was whipping the cat because we were out at the heads the weekend before and I would have given anything to have been there in a storm. I love the sea when it is raging, but Mavis and Bill are frightened in the storms they really get the cacks.

...my garden was washed away again as per usual. I will go in for stick plants or watercress.

...you poor thing trying to rescue your hottie, believe me they are good on a very cold night

...did my washing today and nearly wore the concrete path out running backwards and forwards to feel the clothes as showers were pretty frequent.

...That Ginger beer plant is nice, I had one in Papakura, but I drank so much my stomach began to ferment and fizz.

...Peter started school he likes it and strange to say will not let Daphne take him to or from school.

...Jim has a lot to do around the house. He has started to pull the sitting room to pieces.

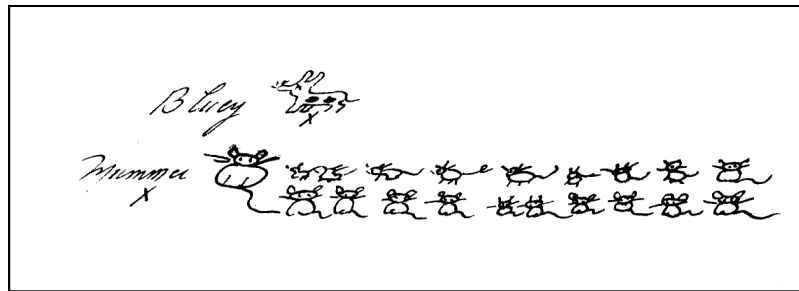
....we have police women here now.

...I believe the police are cleaning up the high schools

....go to town nearly every other day, but it spoils the day and I don't feel like working when I come home.

...what did you think of the budget, I wish they had bought down food, there would be more sense in that.

....I had a ticket in the Art Union too but I really would rather you won a descent prize, then I would get a big thrill, however, maybe one of these days.
what with Clive and Jim talking, and parliament on the radio full blast I just could not concentrate.
 ...my hair is dreadful at the moment
 ...as soon as I get enough money for a perm.
 ...I detest ironing.
 ...you do too much, come up for a break, I would send your fare, but at present my bank account is barely visible to the naked eye.
 ...hope to get down to see you next month, I would come more often but it is too far to walk.
 ...I read in the Herald that a cat had a hundred kittens, well I bet if you kept a record of Mumma's confinements she'd equal or even better that one! A good thing Bluey is not a female, he certainly has a good time. I can imagine him in the car!



Wouldn't Rose be surprised to see her doodle in print!

... Trevor must have been thrilled with his 18lb snapper...what do you think about those girls murdering that poor woman?
 ... I went to the show and was shivering... of course we had to pick the coldest night.
 ... how is Leone .. she must come up again soon, we will go places, she is good company.
 ...tell Dallas most of the slips we got are all growing.
 ... I am making another cardigan, like Leone's.
 ...Mavis is coming to take me out there when Jim is away for a few days.
 ...Eunice wrote... they had just made Hazel an airborne suite & day bed, whacko Hazel. I used to say she was going to have everything, good luck to them.
 ...all my frocks have had it for this summer so I must try and get some new ones. I like summer frocks they always look fresh. I might try my hand at making some for the house.
 ...I suppose Chris is up to his eyes in football mud. Young Rolly plays soccer each Saturday .and comes home like a plaster cast too.
 ...A detective putting a high school girl (one of those who had been brought up for misbehaving) through an intelligence test, asked her 'what is the difference between a wasp and a fly?' she promptly answered 'You can't undo a wasp, but you can undo a fly.'
went for a drive to the Heads, Clive is good, he never goes anywhere without asking me.
 ... I must listen to my serial, 'Delia of Four Winds.'
 ...sorry to hear Trevor hasn't been up to the mark, that sinus is a beastly thing, poor old Trevor must be allergic to tin..
 ... what the h...I am going to do with a money box I have yet to find out.
 ...(referring to gardening) my eyes are getting slanty, I grew a forest of broad beans, stalks as thick as my arm.....I hate rough hands
 ...glad you are getting hot water put in you had such a struggle without it with so much washing.
 ...Clive is getting his new car in October.. h...l it is a hard to get a car at present, I don't know what I am going to do if they don't give me one soon.
 ...went to Dargaville, Tipuh and ? with Jim, amazing where they deliver ice-cream, little shops poked away in the bush.

...Hazel and Alex are in their new house..

...everyone has gone crazy white baiting, believe me they catch a lot.

...I must tell you this one. The woman next door gave me two pie-melons awhile ago. Well pie-melon jam, as you know, is very tricky to make, so beneath my skin I whole heartedly blessed her. However, I made it and it wasn't bad or good but I breathed a sigh of relief that was over. But I didn't get out of it so easy! About 6 weeks ago, she came to the light with two more, h..l, I broke out in a sweat this time! My brain started to work right away as to what excuse I should make, if I didn't make them up. Anyway I gave one to Olive next door and told her to keep her trap shut and deposited the other in the rubbish can and did a bit of dodging, but luckily she never asked how the jam had turned out. But oh no, this is not the end. I nearly sank through the ground last week when she lands at my back door, very proudly presenting me with half of the last of her melons! I very nearly said 'S..t,' the shock was so great, however my conscience pricked me and I made the perishing thing up with a couple of oranges and lo and behold it turned out lovely. Anyway I trust she doesn't have a big crop this year!



...I read nighties are worn just below the knee in Paris, so I will have to go to Paris with my nightie.

...to the pictures, saw 'All the Brothers Were Valiant.' Believe me it was a good picture..

...11 o'clock Jim wanted a cup of tea, I do believe he would stay up all night. He feels more like work at night, he should get a night job.. he has been driving taxi's on the weekend lately

...place is going ahead, full of farmers, believe me have they got the dough if not the style....

...Jimmy has been busy the last two nights polishing bed ends, you know how fussy he is, if it was me I would slap it on & done with, am afraid I am not neat

....am getting quite good at making Toheroa fritters.

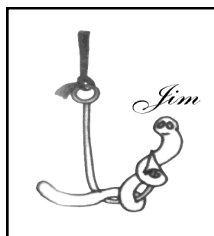
...you know I really love the summer, but this is over the fence.

... I am going to get some gingham for my kitchenette windows.

...tell Dallas the rubbish dump is nearly filled in, they are building on it already.

...how is Chris getting on as a telegraph boy. I had those worries when the boys started getting about but they have got to step out sooner or later, better that, than like some of these brats they are dishing up now. I always maintain, though a good home background goes a long way in keeping a child from a lot of trouble, what is in that child (whether it is for good or bad) will come out, its there and sooner or later will manifest itself, so one can only do what one can, but my belief also is that drink starts them off when they are so young, especially the girls and its surprising, easily nine out of ten girls drink these days.

it has been hot, I think that makes you sick June. If you have been eating a lot of peaches ...I had a lovely cool job yesterday bottling them... it was hot. ...the heat is intense, I have to force myself to do anything, even poor old Jim is walking round like something hung on a hook.



...Daphne made me a frock, it looks very nice to
...Clive took us to an air-pageant, I enjoyed it immensely
... I saw 'Demetrious The Gladiator,' I was sorry when it finished.
...I made some jam and green tomato chutney
...I made that coconut cake two weeks running.
...is your garden like mine, I am going in for dried vegetables.
...Tell Chris I am wearing his apron, it is good.
...glad Chris liked his diary- I wouldn't mind a peep into it myself.
...Daphne got Clive a nylon shirt and some sox that fit any foot.
...is poor Trevor still among the tins? Did he get that job in the factory?
...tell Leone that petticoat she gave me will get me into trouble. David lifted my frock up
over my knee to tell everyone to look at my gorgeous slip, in the end I do a ballet dance &
swirl my petticoat so they get an eye full- I trust it was an eye full of slip! Bill says its too
good to wear underneath.
..I have my sun frock on, no shoes, in fact I'm nearly naked but perspiration pours out of me
but still I don't loose any weight, my stomach seems to be getting bigger.
...Chris informs me that he is still eating bananas. He wants to go to Norfolk Island!
...I must shut my front door in case that murderer that escaped decides to come up this way.
...fancy Chris being so good at maths, I'd be lost without my fingers and thumbs.
...Chris must take after me, I was a good swimmer. I am so proud of him.

Rose was down the yard one day, feeding the chooks, when she slipped and fell. Noticing that she wasn't feeling so well, Daphne took her to the hospital. And an operation found she had Cancer.



Rose Elizabeth (Berryman) Peapell
1897 - 1955
Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.



Rose Elizabeth (Berryman) Peapell
19 June 1955
Onerahi Cemetary, Whangarei.
By Mary Farrelly. 8 May 2015.
Find a Grave memorial ID 146229678

June and Trevor Smith struggled as a young couple. The country was still recovering from two wars and a depression and accommodation and jobs were extremely scarce. After several temporary moves and jobs, Trevor and June managed to rent a house, in the country, at 23 Brandon Road, Glen Eden. Trevor got employment as a Watersider, often on shift work, catching the bus to the city. Most young mothers, like June, stayed home and looked after the house, a full time job without the aid of modern appliances. They had no running water, or even a bathroom, for many years, very little household furniture and none of the modern appliances we take for granted today. No refrigerator meant that all perishable food was bought daily. Water for washing clothes was first carried by bucket to fill the outside copper, under which a fire was lit. The clothes were wrung out by hand or put through a wringer, which regularly tangled and jammed; the toilet was in an outhouse and cut newspaper hung from a nail used for toilet paper. It is difficult for this generation to imagine life without computers and instant communication.

Trevor was a man's man and found it difficult to give up his single life and settle down. He usually went to the Pub, or Working Men's Club, every night with his workmates, where they discussed the state of the Unions, working conditions etc. and spent money they could ill afford. In the winter it was dark by the time he got home, with June anxiously looking out the window awaiting his return. But he was a hard worker and she would never complain. The social drinking after work was known as 'the 6 o'clock swill,' when men would 'down' quite a few drinks in a short space of time. It was not the done thing to refuse a 'shout,' or to 'pike out' on your turn at paying for a round. Sharp on 6 pm the Pubs closed. The consumption of so much alcohol in a short time, after a hard days work on an empty stomach, saw hundreds of men staggering out of dozens of pubs, to catch a tram, train or bus home. Women learned how to keep their families out of the way, until dad had eaten his dinner or sobered up. Alcohol had the effect of making spouses either maudlin or aggressive. An inebriated man was likely to take it out on his wife or kids if he was crossed in anyway; always remorseful after the event and promising to change. Women had no rights or support in cases of violence, unless it ended up involving the police. That was just the way it was back then. Wives simply put on a brave face and got on with life, often resentful of money wasted which could have been spent on family. But fishing and hunting were in his genes! Leone remembers going pig hunting with her father, into the Waitakere Ranges, between Titirangi township and Piha. Trevor showed her how to look for spoor and animal tracks, keeping down wind and very quiet. The dogs were sent in. Bing, the finder dog, flushed out a pig and all hell broke loose - dogs barking - pig squealing and snorting and hunters crashing through the undergrowth in the direction of the commotion! Jock's job was to hold the

pig until the hunters arrived and sometimes he would get gored in the process. Trevor picked the right moment and plunged the knife through the pig's heart. Tying each of its front legs to the back ones, he wore it on his back, like a coat and carried it out of the bush. What a proud father and daughter team came home with that HUGE boar! Now-a-days, as you look at all the homes up on the Waitakere Ranges, it is hard to image that one could pig hunt there, not so long ago! His grandsons had many hunting and fishing trips with Trevor.

OLIPHANT MUNRO & OLIPHANT

Barristers and Solicitors.
1st Floor Chancery Chambers
O'Connell Street
Auckland
2nd February, 1951.

To Mrs. T Smith
23 Brando Road,
Glen Eden

Dear Madam,

Further to our numerous phone conversations herein we wish to advise that at last we have obtained instructions from the Trustees of the various Laurie estates that they are prepared to sell you the property in which you live at 23 Brandon Road, for the sum of £950.

For your information we would advise that Mr. Cooper, a very reputable valuer who was employed for the purpose of valuing these properties place the value of the house at £1150 and expressed the opinion that with vacant possession the property could be sold without difficulty at £1400.

Owing to the difficulty of selling tenanted houses at the present time, and due to the fact that the Trustees are desirous of winding up the various Laurie Estates immediately, they are making this special offer to you, for the sale of £950. This offer will remain open for one month from the date hereof. If you are desirous of completing the purchase of your home we shall require a deposit of £100 and if you would be good enough to call and see us we can prepare an Agreement of Sale and Purchase.

Yours faithfully,
Oliphant, Munro and Oliphant

Because of his absenteeism from school, Trevor was almost illiterate (a fact he concealed from his family) so June dealt with all the correspondence. It came as a shock in 1951 when they received a letter from a Solicitor, advising that as tenants they were being informed of the impending sale of their rented property. They made inquiries to purchase it themselves. It was a wonderful day when they became home owners!

Being a Watersider, in those days, suited Trevor down to the ground - work a 30 hour week and get paid for another ten, whether you were required at the wharf or not. Overtime rates, plus holiday pay and all other extras, made it one of the best paid jobs around and allowed him fishing time as a bonus! There were plenty of perks too. It was not unknown for a crate to be 'accidentally' dropped. The contents which scattered could hardly go to waste, now could they? Little did they know that in a few months time Trevor would be out on Strike for five months, with no income to pay the Mortgage! Their lives were turned upside down as a result of a Watersider's pay dispute, which arose as a result of the Federation of Labour proposing to introduce a blanket 40 hour weekly pay rate.



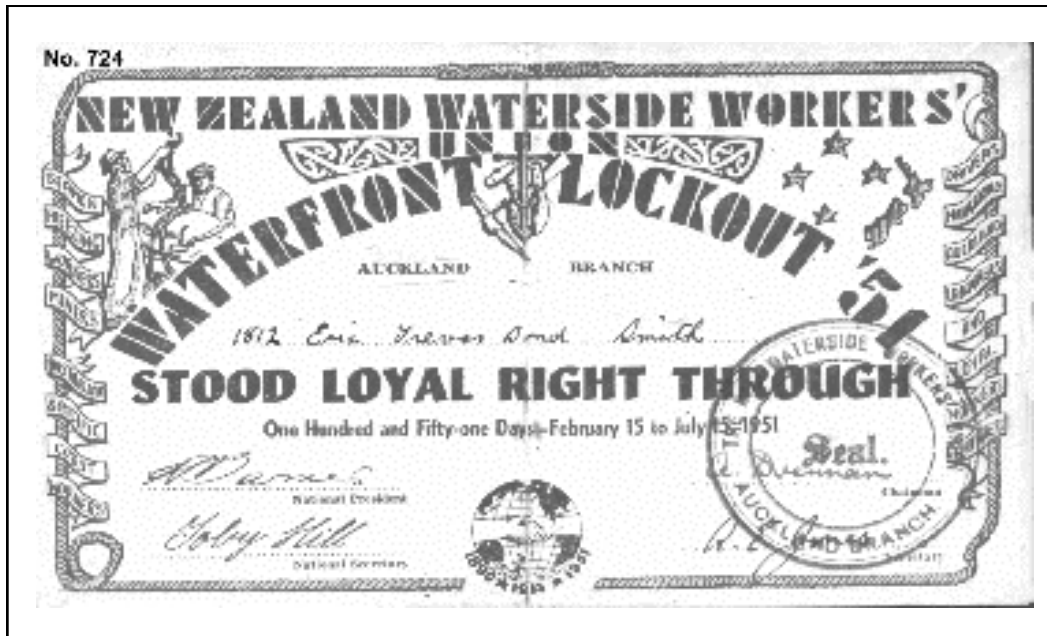
Trevor and June Smith's family home. Stanley Smith lived next door.
23 Brandon Road Glen Eden, Auckland

The strong Watersiders Union, under the leadership of Jock Barnes (Trevor's hero) and Toby Hill, vigorously opposed the change and voted to refuse to do any overtime. This caused a shortage of food supplies and delays of essential supplies for industry, which almost brought the country to a stand still and has been well documented.

Suffice to say, that at the time, a ship full of coal was in port and was in danger of becoming overheated. Fearing an explosion, the Captain allowed the Seamen to unload it themselves. This infuriated the Union and a lock out strike was commenced. People began to panic-buy as news of imminent shortages spread, with only one days meat left in shops and 2 ships laden with flour, sitting unloaded in the Port. The Government rushed through powerful legislation to deal with an impending national emergency and on 22nd February 1951 a State of Emergency was gazetted in Parliament to allow the Armed forces to unload shipping 'for the supply and distribution of food, fuel, water, light and means of locomotion that would deprive the community of the essentials of life and which also covered threats and actions to this end.' Jock Barnes, labelled as a 'communist stirrer,' was the 'inflammatory leader.' Union funds were frozen and it became an offence for any contribution to be made for the benefit of striking workers. This resulted in great privation and hardship for the families, but with help of family, friends and neighbours, Trevor's garden and love of hunting and fishing, along with June's thrift and ingenuity, the family survived. Trevor was always proud of that fact that he, 'stood loyal right through 150 days' and had a certificate to prove it.

WORK AT ALL PORTS MAY STOP

Sequel To Watersiders' Ban On Overtime



Trevor worked on as a Watersider and things settled down for a while, until in 1954, when he was sacked. June wrote to Rose, her Mum. Unfortunately the details are lost, along with the letter. However, we do have Rose's reply, which sheds some light on the matter. 'Poor Trevor losing his job. Fancy someone telling all those lies.' He applied for several jobs and finally got employment, 'amongst all those tins,' at Alex Harvey Industries. Before long 'seconds,' or damaged ones, were coming home and Rose wrote, 'You could make a shed from all the tin Trevor brings home.' June passed on reject money boxes, buckets and cake tins. Rose went into raptures over one in a letter, 'I have never seen such a pretty tin. I don't want to spoil it by using it.' After sometime Rose wrote, 'Poor Trevor, he must be allergic to tin,' when in fact he was likely having a fishing day! He seems to have missed out on several other jobs he applied for, finally procuring one with the Harbour Board.



Trevor loved to dance, sing and was the life of any party.
Courtesy of the Smith family.



June and Trevor Smith. He was the love of June's life!
Courtesy of the Smith family.



Sadly, Trevor Bond Smith developed secondary cancer in his liver and died on the 9th of September 1975. It would be fair to say that most knowledge of the tribal ancestry and even the name of Ngāhiraka, which Trevor may have learned from his own mother, Harriet, was lost with him. June recounted to me several years later, when I asked her about the family's Maori origins, that Trevor had loaned a book about Kennedy's Bay to a friend, who had not returned it and it was no longer in print. She also told me about the lost photograph of the 'beautiful Maori Princess with the tattoo.' Had it not been lost, this more extensive history would have never been written!

June raised a teenage son, Paul, alone and after he married she moved to her own unit at Gracedale Retirement Village, with her little dog Sam. She kept quite good health for a lady of over eighty years, enjoying an active life and the family had no cause for concern over her well being. On 13th September 2000, June put a pie in the oven and popped out for a few minutes to chat with the neighbours next door. They invited her to stay for tea, but she declined, as she had her dinner almost ready. With a cheery, 'Bye bye for now,' she went back to her unit, opened the door, bent down and took off one shoe. Before she had time to remove the other, she passed away. No pain, no fuss, what a wonderful way to go, but a shock to her family. June was a lady with a strong Christian faith and always prayed for her family. This poem was found in her Bible.

Thank You for Praying For Me

Author unknown.

I brushed some pine needles off of memories today
 My fingers traced a stone etched with a date and a name
 Of a simple country lady, so gentle yet so strong
 Her memory floods my heart as I recall

She didn't have a lot, but there was
 Something that she knew
 And it meant the world when she would say,
 'Son, I'll pray for you'
 And whenever she would kneel
 Beside her little rocking chair
 She'd turn her simple home
 Into a holy house of prayer

And though she's gone away
 There's something that I really want to say
 Thank you for praying for me
 I never could repay the time you spent
 Down on your knees
 I'm where I am today because
 You chose to pray and intercede
 Thank you for praying, praying for me

Everyone has someone
 In your life you can recall
 A constant source of strength for you
 Whenever you would fall
 And when you felt so lonely,
 In times of desperate need
 You knew that you could count on them
 To be down on their knees

To our heroes of the faith
 There's something that we all would love to say
 Thank you for praying for me.....
 And when that day comes
 And all things will be revealed
 And our Father lets us see with open eyes
 We will understand that we were carried on the wings
 Of the prayers of faithful people in our lives
 Thank you for praying for me

Chapter 19
METCALFE'S FROM YORKSHIRE
METCALFE - GIBSON - RICH - TURNER
and ORAM

Trevor and June Smith's daughter,
Leone Rosa Smith,
married
John Metcalfe.
Parents of Chris and Natalie.



Great Britain Coat Of Arms During The Reign Of Queen Victoria.
Wikipedia Commons.

The history of the METCALFE ancestors:
METCALFE, GIBSON, TURNER, RICH and ORAM families
Came from Yorkshire and Wiltshire
The underlined names follow Chris Metcalfe's family line.



The top pink shaded area is West Riding (a third of the large Yorkshire County). It is from here that the GIBSON and METCALFE ancestors originated, in the Bradford suburb of Langton-on-swales in Northallerton, West Riding, Yorkshire. The TURNER ancestors were from Sheffield (blue). The lower shaded areas (yellow and green) are the Counties of Wiltshire and Somerset. The RICH and ORAM families originated from the village of Trowbridge.

Metcalfe - Gibson - Turner - Oram - RichGeorge Metcalfe = Sarah

(Great, great, great, great, great, grandparents of Chris Metcalfe).

b. circa 1735

b. circa 1737

m. circa 1755

George ThompsonGeorge Metcalfe = Mary Thompson

b. 23 July 1762

m. 1790

d. 1836 aged 75 years

Wheelwright and Joiner in Sculcoates

Robert Gibson

+

Susanna Sucton

b. 1761

b. 1759 South Cowton Northallerton

m. 7 May 1759 St Mary's Bolton on Swale (Shoemaker?)

d. 4 May 1831

d. 13 June 1802 aged 43

George Metcalfe = Susanna Gibson

b. 1796 at Sculcoates b. 7th October 1792 Scorton Yorkshire.

m. circa 1823 **both were Inn holders** & he a blacksmith and wheelwright

d. 1861 Northallerton Died 1872 aged 80 years

William Turner = Emma Bell

cact 1815. Blacksmith both could write \ h. 1816 d.

married 1835

William
b. 1824 father Innkeeper
tailorChristopher
b. 1830
Blacksmith's apprentice
m. 1. Harriett dressmaker
m. 2. Elizabeth Saville w. 1876
Census: foster daughter 1891
Lived next to Inn 1871Rachel
b. 1833
Housekeeper seamstressJohn Metcalfe
b. 1834Ann Turner
b. 5 Mar 1835 Sheffield.Census: 1851 apprentice TAILOR
brother William widow @ 43 Village Rd. Gt Langton
m. 19th Feb. 1860 Sheffield Cathedral church of St Peter & St Paul - lived 3 houses from Inn.
Died 1904 aged 70 years
Bur. St Wilfred church Great Langton as is his wife AnnEmma Turner Metcalfe
Born 1861
m. John Leaper 1898
d. 1900 in childbirthDora Metcalfe
b. 1863 - 1898
m. Alfred HebbElizabeth Ann Metcalfe
Born 1865
Census 1881 Pupil TeacherWalter Herbert Metcalfe
Born blind 1870Arthur William Metcalfe
Born 1872
Emigrated Queensland Aust.Edgar Christopher Metcalfe
b. 20 July 1880
Emigrated to NZ 1902
m. Florence Lilian Oram 20 April 1913
d. 1950 aged 69 yearsJohn Rich = Mary ? of HilspertonJames Oram + Elizabeth Blake
b. 1808 Wool Spinner b. 1806 m. 1833
m. TrowbridgeJohn Rich = Rebecca Hill
b. 1794 b. 1786
weaver m. Hilsperton 14 Feb. 1815
wool weaverJohn Oram = Elizabeth Beverstock
b. 1825 Trowbridge b. 1826
Census 1861 Trowbridge m. 1854
Coburgh Place cloth worker - feeder
Hawker - salesmanJesse Rich = Jane Rose (also a wool weaver)
b. 1822 Woollen Cloth Weaver b. Steeple Ashoton Wiltshire 1824
b. Hilsperton - Marsh St. died 1871 m. Melksham 1849 Jane died circa 1908
4 children were weavers
one of 9 children Keren, all born at HilspertonSamuel Oram = Keren Rich
b. 1855 b. 1854 Hilsperton, Wiltshire
m. 1874 Cloth Worker Mill Hand m. 1874 Melksham Wool Weaver - widowed 1890-91
d. 1890 Melksham Emigrated NZ 1909 (In NZ 29 yrs)
1911 Elect. Roll 6 Angelsea St
12 March 1938 - 84 yrs. 12 Peel St Grey Lynn
bur. Hillsborough Cem. Area 10 Block D Lot 148Keziah Dorcas
To AustraliaJohn William
Migrated to CanadaFredrick John
1875Hubert
b. 1877William
b. twins 1879Alice
b. 1879Annie
b. 1881Emily
b. 1885Florence Lilian Oram ('Mema')
b. 1888 d. 2 May 1977 aged 88
m. Edgar Metcalfe 1913, d. 15 May 1950 aged 69 yrs.Nelson
b. 1891John Metcalfe = Leone SmithChristopher Stephen Metcalfe

Natalie Eve

METCALFE ANCESTORS:

John Metcalfe married Leone Rosa Smith, a descendant of Ngāhiraka and Joseph Kennedy.

GEORGE METCALF was born about 1735 in North Yorkshire and married SARAH (surname unknown) between 1750 - 1760. One of their children was: GEORGE METCALF born 1762.

He went to school and could read and write, but omitted the 'e' on Metcalf. He became a Wheelwright by trade, making wagon wheels. On the 30th May 1790 he married MARY THOMPSON at All Saints Church, East Riding in Yorkshire. Mary could read and write and signed the marriage Register, as did her sister Elizabeth, a witness. The couple made their home in Sculcoats, just north of Northallerton, in Yorkshire. In the Baptism Register p. 15 Sculcoates, George Metcalf was a Joiner by trade. We can assume he was a practical man. Marriage Register All Saints, Church East Riding, George Metcalf (wheelwright) & Mary Thompson. 30th May 1790. Both signed their names, as did Mary's sister Elizabeth.

N ^o 41	George Metcalf	of this Parish	Wheelwright
	Mary Thompson	of this Parish	Spinster
were			
Married in this Church by Banns			
this <u>thirtieth</u> Day of <u>May</u> in the Year One Thousand <u>seven</u> Hundred			
and <u>Pinely</u> By me <u>Thos. Mainster Vicar.</u>			
<u>George Metcalf</u>			
This Marriage was solemnized between Us { <u>Mary Thompson</u>			
In the Prefence of { <u>Elizabeth Thompson</u>			



All Saints, Church East Riding, Yorkshire.
Photographer Bernard Betts 2017.

GIBSON ANCESTORS:

Robert Gibson + Susanna Bucton
 b. 1761 b. 1759 South Cowton Northallerton
 m. 15 May 1783 St Mary's Bolton on Swale (Shoemaker?)
 d. 15 May 1831 d. 13 June 1802 aged 43
 |
George Metcalfe = Susanna Gibson
 b. 1796 at Sculcoates b. 7th October 1792 Scorton Yorkshire.
 m. circa 1823 both were Inn holders & he a blacksmith and wheelwright
 d. 1861 Northallerton

175. The Banns of Marriage betwixt Robert Gibson and Susanna Bucton both of this Chapelry were published in this Chapel three several Sundays, viz, the 27.th of April, the 4.th and the 11.th of May 1783 according to Act of Parliament by me Tho^s Dixon Min^r

Robert Gibson and Susanna Bucton were married in this Chapel by Banns published, as above, this fifteenth day of May, 1783, by me Tho^s Dixon Min^r

This marriage was solemnized } Robert Gibson
 between us in the Presence of } Susanna Bucton
 Rob^t Thompson — mark
 Edm^d Bucton —

From the Yorkshire Parish Register. Susanna signed with her mark "X".

ROBERT GIBSON born 1761, married SUSANNA BUCTON, b. 1759, in the chapelry of St. Mary's church at Bolton on Swale on 15th May 1783.) Susanna lived in Cowton, Northallerton. Both attended St. Mary's Chapel. Robert could read and write, but Susanna signed the Register with her mark 'X'. Edward Bucton, probably her brother, was a witness. They made their home in Scorton. Robert's trade is unknown, but a family of Gibson brothers in Scorton were Shoemakers.



Church of St Mary's - Bolton on Swale.
 Photo by Edward Nicholl.

Children:

Rachael born 25th February 1787.

Susanna born 1792. Married George Metcalfe 1823.

Thomas born 3rd January 1796.

William born 7th November 1784.

Joseph born 12 August 1799. Baptised 22nd November 1799.

1825 Report of the Commissioners Appointed To Enquire concerning
Charities Published 1825.

About three miles N.N.E. of Garston is the township of Scorton containing a large Cotton, spinning and manufacturing establishment. In the village is a chapel for Roman Catholics.

SCORTON SCHOOL.

There is a school at Scorton, in this township, which was built about 30 years ago, by subscription, upon a parcel of ground on the waste, given by the Duke of Hamilton, who is Lord of the Manor. There is a storey above the school-room in which the master resides, and there are 30 perches of land attached to it, used by him as a garden. The present master was appointed by the Duke's steward. An inscription over the door states that it was built by subscription and that the appointment of the master was in the Hamilton family.

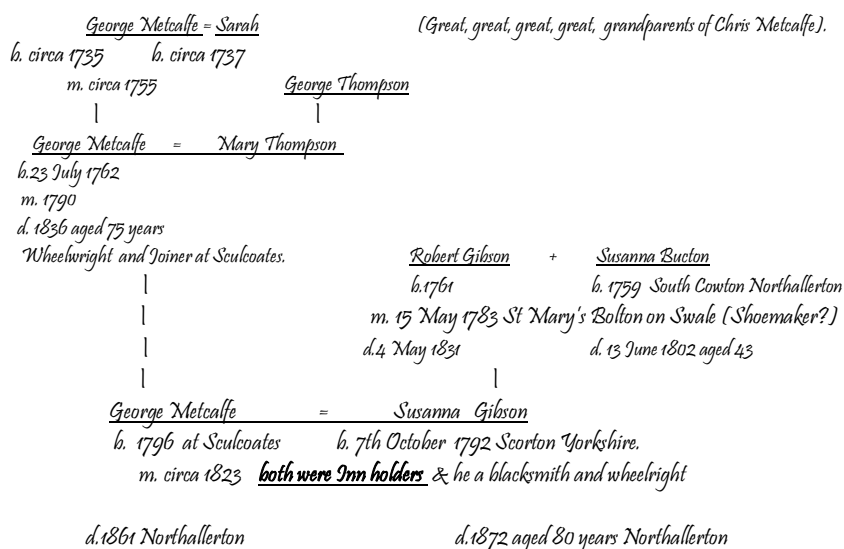
There is no other endowment; all the children coming to the school pay quarterage.

There are 20 in the summer and upwards of 30 in the winter. (*Scorton is in Bolton On Swale*).

From: History Gazetteer and Directory of East and North Ridings Yorkshire by William White.

Susanna (Bucton) Gibson died at Scorton, Bolton on Swale 15th August 1802, aged 43 years and Robert Gibson on the 4th May 1831, aged 71 years. Robert and Susannah (Bucton) Gibson are buried in the churchyard where they married.

Their second daughter, Susanna Gibson, married George Metcalf (no 'e').



George METCALFE born in 1796 and married SUSANNA GIBSON in Northallerton.
It is about this time that Metcalfe with an 'e' appears.

Children:

1. William born 1824 - became a self employed tailor.

2. Christopher born 1830 - became a blacksmith's apprentice to his father

2. Rachel born 1833 - spinster - seamstress. Lived at the inn and later looked after widower William.

3. JOHN born 1834 - apprentice tailor to brother William, then a self employed tailor and the church sexton. (A Sexton had to be a person of good Christian character.)

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2 METCALFE'S FROM YORKSHIRE

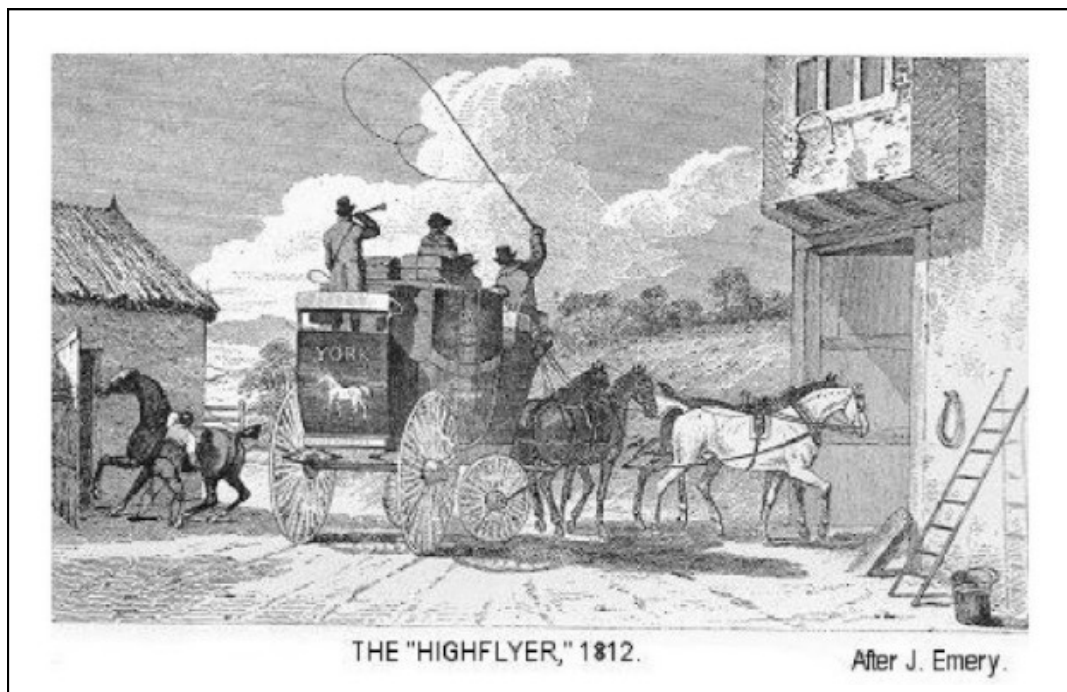
When they married, George Metcalfe worked as a blacksmith in the Smithy attached to the Blacksmith's Arms Pub in Northallerton and very likely his wife Susanna helped the proprietors too, because she eventually stepped in to be the Pub's landlady for more than 20 years. It was only a small village and not many would have the skills necessary to run such an establishment. Their eldest widowed son William lived next door with their daughter Rachel and one of his brothers. Over the years her family also helped out when necessary. Susanna was a remarkable woman raising a family as well as running the Inn. The family didn't own the inn they just ran it. They were related to former Inn Keeper Margaret Wright.

43 Village	William Metcalfe	Head	Widower	74	Publican & Blacksmith	York Great Sington
	John Metcalfe	Brother	18	44	Seller's Apprentice	York Great Sington
	Rachel Metcalfe	Sister	14	18	House Keeper	York Great Sington
44 Blacksmith Arms	George Metcalfe	Head	Mar	58	Publican Blacksmith & Brush Maker	York Great Sington
	Susanna Metcalfe	Wife	46	48	Landlady	York Great Sington
	Christopher Metcalfe	Son	16	20	Blacksmith	York Great Sington

1851 Census above.

By the 1861 Census the Metcalfe family were still living at Blacksmith's Arms. George Metcalfe aged 67, Publican, Blacksmith Master; his wife, 67 year old Susanna, was Landlady and Rachel their 27 year old unmarried daughter, was a seamstress. Their 10 year old grandson Thomas, a scholar, was also living with them.

George died about 1861, aged 65 years and in the 1871 Census Susanna was 78 years old and living with her son John and his wife Ann (nee Turner.) She died two years later aged 80 years. The inn was the last stop on the main postal route to Scotland.



The ROYAL MAILS to London every evg. at $\frac{1}{2}$ past 8; to Newcastle & Edinburgh every evng. at $\frac{1}{4}$ past 11; to Stockton, Sunderland and Shields $\frac{1}{4}$ before 11; to York and London every evg. $\frac{1}{4}$ before 8.

The HIGFLYER, every mg. at $\frac{1}{2}$ past 10 to Northallerton, Darlington, Durham, and Newcastle, and all parts of the North; also every evg. at 6 o'clock to York.

The Blacksmith Arms Inn was the last stop before the mail coach crossed the border into Scotland and it was here that the Scottish and English mail changed over. This brought a great deal of business to the inn. But being near the Scottish border it was very cold in the winter months and few travellers past that way.

The METCALFES Of NORTH ALLERTON

In (*the reign of*) 7 Edward 1 (1278) we find Richard de Steynbrigge de Deneke (Dent) slew in single combat 'Adam de Medecalf de eadem et statim fugit.' A fell, or mountain, called 'The Calf,' is in the neighbourhood of Dent, and another mountain called 'Calf Top,' is two miles to the west of Dent. A portion of the fell is said to be called by the shepherds 'Midcalf.' The prefix Mede, Mete, or Met, signifies middle, limit, landmark or boundary; hence the name 'Metcalf.' From The History And Annals Of Yorkshire By The Rev. J. L. Sayvell. F.S.Sc. September 1885.

The Metcalfe branch of the family originated from the small village of Langton-on-swales, Northallerton, in the County of West Yorkshire, in a suburb of Bradford in West Riding, whose history goes back to the invasions by Vikings and the Scots. 9th Century Saxon Crosses have been found in the area, hence your Anglo Saxon origins. The area derived its wealth from wool sorting and weaving in the middle ages and the area was later known for its cotton and silk industry and for fine stirrup making. There have been generations of Metcalfe's in Northallerton, but trying to pinpoint exactly who are direct ancestors has been a challenge.

* GEORGE METCALFE born 1796, was a blacksmith and after their marriage he and his wife SUSANNA (GIBSON) born 1792 in Scorton, lived in his boyhood village of Northallerton, in Yorkshire, where he was the blacksmith at the Blacksmith's Arms Inn's smithy. It was a hard job and George must have developed into a strong man. Blacksmiths work with and repair metal, primarily using iron and steel; using red-hot fire to heat metal into a malleable form which they hammer, bend and cut to create a variety of goods. Back in those days a blacksmith was necessary for everything from repairing guns, wheel rims to shoeing horses. The fire at the smithy required constant feeding with coal to reach the hottest temperature possible. Loading sacks of coal was heavy work. Weighted hammers, tongs, anvils, forges and are all used daily. There was always the constant ringing of the hammer striking the anvil as the smithy went about his hot, dangerous work. In the small village, workers were scarce and George's wife Susanna would have helped out at the inn when necessary. When a new landlady was needed she was the right person in the right place, at the right time.



A blacksmith's workshop. This is NOT the Blacksmiths Arms.

Note the huge bellows worked on a pulley to feed oxygen into the fire to raise the temperature. The hammer and anvil are bottom right corner.

<http://www.lisahydephotography.com/Architecture/Old-Structures-1/i-vmNBdKK/>

OWNERS and LICENSEES OF BLACKSMITH'S ARMS.

Black Horse Lane

- 1775 Eleanor Hutchinson (licensee) Thomas Weatherill (Owner)
- 1789 Benjamin Burton (licensee)
- 1801 Ann Burton (licensee)
- 1826 William Wilkinson (Owner) Mary Johnson (Tenant)
- 1841 Margret & Thomas Johnson (Owner) John Mitchinson (Licensee)
- 1843 David Hutchinson (Part Owner) John Mitchinson (Licensee)
- 1857 David Hutchinson died in July 1857
Robert & Isabelia Willoughby (Owners) John Mitchinson (Licensee)
- 1876 John Mitchinson died Thomas his son, and his wife, Amelia (Licensee)
(Thomas died in October 1930)
- 1904 Robert Willoughby died Thomas William Armitage (Owner) George Armitage (Owner)
- 1904 Samuel Wiggins, brewer from Stokesley
- 1920 James and John Fryer
- 1921 Ernest Ellison held the licence
- 1928 Charles William Allison was the beer retailer until his death in Dec 1944
- 1944 Ralph Allison and Stan Webster, who blotted his copy book before he became
the licensee by closing the village pubs at 10.00 p.m. dismissing patrons without
letting them drink up. Arthur and Lizzle England.
- 1960 John Richard Salton - Purchased the property in March 1962 -Freehouse
- 1980 Alfred & Ann Horsman
- 1984 Ray and Maureen Hogg
- 1986 John & Maureen Newsham
- 1989 Andy & Caroline
- 1990 Graham and Debbie Simpson
- 1994 Geoff and Catherine Morgan to present.

Courtesy of Geoff Morgan.

* 1824 - 1870's Researched from Christening and Census records, George Metcalfe was the Blacksmith and Innkeeper and his wife Susanna was Landlady and Publican at the Blacksmith's Arms Inn, 2 Black Horse Lane, for nearly 40 years.



Courtesy of Blacksmiths Arms, 2 Black Horse Lane, Northallerton.

GREAT LANGTON is a pleasant village and township on the north side of the river Swale, 6 miles N.W. by W. of Northallerton, containing 133 souls, and about 750 acres of land. Earl Tyrconnel is lord of the manor but the soil belongs mostly to Mrs. Lawrence and several smaller owners. The Church is an ancient pile, and its original rectory house is said to have been washed away by the Swale, with two acres of glebe (Church land.) The Rectory valued at K.B. at 10s. 10d and now £294 is in the gift of the Duke of Leeds and incumbency of the Rev. Fras. Drake. D.D. The parish includes Little Langton and its poor have 20 shillings a year left by one Jenkins.

Mrs. Lawrence allows the school master £21 a year for the education of poor children.

Directory:

George Bow - Carpenter

William Dixon and William Porter - Shoemakers

Christopher Tutin and Alice Dowson - Schools

Rev. Frances Drake - Doctor of Divinity - Rectory

Joseph Ellerton - Victuals (food) - Crown and Anchor Inn.

* George Metcalfe - BLACKSMITH'S ARMS INN - Blacksmith and Victuals (food.)

Farmers.:

Thomas Dale

John Dowson,

Thomas Flintoff

Roger Harrison

Thomas Trew hitt (Grange)

From: History, Gazetteer and Directory of the East and North Ridings of Yorkshire.

By William White page 718.

Sometime after 1830, when 2nd son Christopher was born, Susanna, who probably was already working at the inn, became the Inn holder and proprietor. This was recorded on their eldest child's baptism register. Her husband George was also the Parish Clerk. Susanna was born in Scorton, Yorkshire. The 1871 Census records her as being 'formerly a Publican.' Susanna was an amazing woman. She held the position of Landlady of the inn for more than 40 years. The inn also served as the local post office. Most likely because the village was small, she was just the right person in the right place at the right time. George Metcalfe (b.1796) aged 65 years, died in 1861 and was buried in the graveyard at St Wilfrid's Anglican Church where the family had worshiped for many years. Widowed Suzanna Metcalfe lived with her son John and wife Ann (Turner) Metcalfe until her death. There were no facilities for aged care in those days.

From The Great North Road: York to Edinburgh:

The Old Mail Road to Scotland

By Charles George Harper Pub. 1901.

'The Blacksmith Arms was in those times the coaching inn here, but has long been converted into cottages. William Tweedle the last of a succession of three Tweedies who kept the Blacksmiths Arms and owed their prosperity to the mails changing at their house and was also the village postmaster. A God-fearing man and absent-minded, it is recorded of him that during a sermon at the parish church he was surprised in the midst of one of his mental absences by hearing the preacher enlarge upon the text of 'Render unto Caesar,' 'Ay,' he said, in a loud voice, when the duty of paying the kings taxes and just demands was brought home to the congregation, 'that puts me in mind o't: There's old Granny Metcalf bin owin' the matter o' eight pence on a letter these past two months.' Now Widow Metcalf HAD paid that eight pence; she was in church too. The suddenness of the unjust accusation made her forget her time and place, and she retorted with, 'William Tweedie, y're a liar!'

It is recorded that she paid the poor gentleman the eight pence again!

* This was very likely to be Susanna (Gibson) Metcalfe as the inn also acted as Post Office.



Blacksmith Arms Inn at 2 Black Horse Lane, Northallerton, Yorkshire.
 Courtesy of Geoff and Catherine Morgan, present owners of Blacksmith Arms.
 The Inn was built in 1775.

1851 Census: Residence: Blacksmith Arms (Inn).

As a blacksmith George Metcalfe would have had work sheds, a forge and a team of horses - usually Clydesdale draught horses - to pull the carts and had the knowledge and skill to craft and repair the large spoke wooden wheels and springs. George, or his apprentice, could shoe horses for locals and travellers, feed and groom them, when required. George would have been a strong, hard working, practical man and as proprietor of the Blacksmith Arms Inn and the Parish Clerk (keeping records) he played an important role in village life and appears to be held in high regard.

The family probably had a cow or two, possibly pigs, poultry, a big kitchen garden and fruit trees to supply the inn. It would have been a busy life for the family. Susanna would have been a hospitable, adaptable and capable woman, never knowing how many to expect for dinner! In those days nothing got wasted. If duck or goose was on the menu, then the feathers filled mattresses, pillows and eiderdowns. Reeds from the stream were woven into rush mats and made into brooms. Beeswax from honeycomb made furniture polish and candles. Sheep were shorn and wool spun and knitted.

Game keepers would provide pheasant, partridge, hares and rabbit for the table, all of which had to be cleaned and dressed for the pot; butter churned from the cream; bread mixed and risen in a warm place and baked for the family in the bread oven, which still exists today. Soup was made from vegetable peelings and would always be simmering on the coal range. Fruit and vegetables were made into preserves, hams cured, wood and kindling cut and stacked, grates cleaned and brass to polish; beds aired and made and endless laundry and ironing. Their only daughter Rachel, would have helped around the house from a young age and eventually became the Inn's housekeeper and dressmaker. On the night of the census they didn't appear to have live-in staff and probably employed locals and their family, who lived in the row of houses next to the inn. Their children would have worked hard too. There was church on Sunday and many family picnics, walks and sings songs around the fire. A simple life centred round God, family, community and the Inn, with the children messing about and having fun in the nearby stream and watching out for the mail coach to Scotland and back.



Blacksmith Arms Inn has been extensively renovated, but the original bread oven, the original oak beams of the old inn and some fittings have been retained. The originally building, built in 1775, had been turned into accommodation and had become very run down before the present owners purchased it. Courtesy of Geoff and Catherine Morgan, present owners and renovators of the Blacksmith Arms.



The village church played a central role in family life. LANGTON –UPON-SWALE a parish 6 miles from Northallerton, 9 from Richmond, 38 from York. The few houses here that give name to the parish are situated so near the brink of the river Swale, that they are frequently in danger of being swept away. The church stands about a quarter of a mile from the village. No doubt the children spent much time in and on the river. Life in the village revolved around St. Wilfred's church and the family all worshipped their on a Sunday and it was at this church that many of the children were baptised and marriages and funerals took place. The influence of their faith produced people of hard working, honest character and a strong bond of neighbourliness found in rural communities. These traits continue in the family to this day.



St. Wilfred's Anglican Church, Northallerton.

The back of John Metcalfe's photo reads: 'Grandma and Grandpa's graves about here.'

John Metcalfe and his wife Ann, nee Turner, are buried near the top left of the graveyard. They were married for 44 years until John's death in 1904 at 70 years of age. A marriage of that longevity was unusual in those days. Ann died in 1913 aged 77 years. There are probably other generations of family buried here. This Metcalfe line descends from their youngest son John.

The Anglican church of St. Wilfred, above, serves the villages of Great Langton and Little Langton and is situated between them. It is not known when the first church was built at Langton. This part of the country suffered much from the raids and ravages of the Danes. In the Domesday Book of 1086 the parish of Langton is described as having been laid waste.

The present church stands by itself in the fields, reached by a grass track from the road along the east bank of the Swale. The large churchyard slopes away to the back on the south. Standing at the church door there is not a single human habitation to be seen. Only the calling of the birds can be heard and sometimes the bleating of sheep or an occasional distant car or tractor. It is one of the most peaceful places imaginable.

This isolated position has given rise to many speculations. It is sometimes supposed that an original village nearby was abandoned and destroyed after the Black Death in the fourteenth century. Be that as it may, the church stands exactly halfway between Great Langton and Little Langton. Services at St. Wilfred's are held monthly, usually on the third Sunday of the month.

From the Church of England in the Lower Swale area of North Yorkshire website.

JOHN METCALFE and ANN TURNER

John Jr. spent his childhood living at the inn with his family and would have gone to church on Sundays with them from a young age. In those days children were expected to help around the home and John would have helped his father in his blacksmith's workshop, but according to the 1851 census, he was employed as an apprentice tailor to his widowed brother William, a tailor and nine years his senior, who lived at 43 Village Road Great Langton, only one or two houses from the inn. Their unmarried sister, Rachel, also lived there. Rachel was a dressmaker and the inn housekeeper. All the family helped out when necessary.

In 1860 John was staying at Raglans Arms Beer house Inn in Bridge Street, Sheffield, where he met and courted the beautiful Ann Turner, who was employed as a domestic servant at her uncle's lodgings. The 1861 Census records her uncle James and family as proprietors of Raglans Arms Beer house Inn in Bridge Street. James was previously a Blacksmith, like John's father and may have been known to the family. Ann's father William Turner was a Shoemaker and also lived at both 6 & 7 Bridge Street, according to the Burgess Roll.



Sheffield Cathedral. Photo courtesy of Ann Halford.

There has been a church on the site of the present day Cathedral since William de Lovetot, a Norman, from the time of Henry 1st (1100-1135).

The couple were married in Sheffield Cathedral the church of St. Peter & St. Paul, on 19th February 1860, when John was 26 years old and Ann 27 years. Both were educated and could read and write. See Ann's father William's signature.

Ann fitted right in, helping her new mother in law the landlady of the Blacksmith's Arms! There is a wonderful portrait of John Metcalfe wearing a fine suit, which he probably made himself for his marriage to Ann Turner of Sheffield. John's sister Rachel, a dressmaker, may have made Ann's dress as a wedding present from her new husband.

Chris Metcalfe has the original large portrait of John Metcalfe (1860) and his father John Metcalfe who died in 2016 had the old photograph of Ann Turner (1860) which had been badly damaged over the years and had been accidently torn in half, and stored in the back of an old photo album. It was restored for this book by Bob Kemp.



John Metcalfe circa 1860, age 26 years. Chris and Natalie Metcalfe's grandfather.

Courtesy of Chris Metcalfe.



Ann Turner 1860.
Chris and Natalie Metcalfe's grandmother.
Courtesy of Natalie Metcalfe.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2 METCALFE'S FROM YORKSHIRE

Children:

Ema Turner Metcalfe b. 1861. m. John Leper 1898. Died 1900 in childbirth - Basil Leper.

Dora Metcalfe b. 1863. 1881 Census: Nursery maid at Wood Hall -10 servants.

m. Alfred Hebb. Died in 1898 aged 35 years.

Elizabeth Ann Metcalfe b. 1865. Pupil Teacher in 1881 Census. Died in her 80's.

Walter Herbert Metcalfe, born blind in 1870.

Arthur William Metcalfe b. 1872. Emigrated to Queensland, Australia. Died...

Edgar Christopher Metcalfe b. 20 July 1880. Emigrated to Auckland, New Zealand 1902.

Married Florence Lilian Oram 20 April 1913. d 1950 aged 69. The three older girls married and moved away from home to Waddington, Hull and Liverpool.

John Metcalfe	Head	Mar	37	Tailor	Do	Langton Gre
Ann Metcalfe	Wife	Mar	34		Do	Sheffield
Emma F Metcalfe	Daughter		10	Scholar	Do	Langton Gre
Dora Metcalfe	Daughter		8	Do	Do	Do
Elizabeth Ann Metcalfe	Daughter		6	Do	Do	Do
Walter Herbert Metcalfe	Son		10mo	Do	Do	Do
Susannah Metcalfe	Mother	W.	78	Formerly Publican	Do	Scorton

1871 Census reveals a busy household. John now 37 was a tailor and he and his 34 year old wife Ann had four children. John's 78 year old widowed mother, Susannah Metcalfe formerly a Publican, lived with them. She died in 1872, aged 80 years. Address Great Langton Village. Born in Yorkshire.

1881 Census (above) their third daughter Elizabeth was a pupil teacher (teacher in training) and Walter (10) and Arthur (8) where scholars, even though Walter was born blind. Edgar Christopher Metcalfe (Chris and Natalie Metcalfe's grandfather) was only 8 months old. Census 1891. Parish of Great Langton, Northallerton, in the Borough of Richmond.

Great Langton

Administrative County of <u>York</u>				The undermentioned Houses are situate within the Boundaries of the												Page 4
Civil Parish		Municipal Borough		Municipal Ward		Urban Sanitary District		Town or Village or Hamlet		Rural Sanitary District		Parliamentary Borough or Division		Ecclesiastical Parish or District		
of <u>Great Langton</u>		of <u>Great Langton</u>		of <u>Great Langton</u>		of <u>Great Langton</u>		of <u>Great Langton</u>		of <u>Northallerton</u>		of <u>Richmond</u>		of <u>Great Langton</u>		
Cols 1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17
No. of Schedule	ROAD, STREET, &c., and No. or NAME of HOUSE	HOUSES Inhabited (a)	Number of Families (b)	NAME and Surname of each Person	RELATION to Head of Family	CON-DITION as to Marriage	AGE last Birthday of Males Females	PROFESSION or OCCUPATION		Employed	Unemployed	WHERE BORN		(1) Deaf-and-Dumb (2) Blind (3) Lunatic, Imbecile or Idiot		
1	Langton Village (Robert's house)	1	1	John W. Dawson	Head	In	37	Schoolmaster			X	Waddington, Yorks				
				Mary Ann Do	Wife	In	34					Sheffield, Yorkshire				
				Esther Ann Do	Daughter	In	10					Langton, Lincoln				
				Marian E. Do	Daughter	In	8					Do				
2		1	1	Christopher Metcalfe	Head	In	60	Blacksmith			X	Great Langton, Yorks				
				Elizabeth Do	Wife	In	58					West Yorkshire				
				James C. Bondley	Son	In	6					Washington, Durham				
				Bertie Miles	Daughter	In	1	General Carpenter			X	St. Albans, Essex				
3		1	1	Thomas Place	Head	In	70	Wholesale Merchant			X	Worcester, Shropshire				
				Margaret Do	Wife	In	68					Leicester, Leics				
				Mary Do	Daughter	In	11					Great Langton, Yorks				
				Ernest Do	Son	In	10	Scholar			X	Do				
				Herbert Do	Son	In	11	Scholar				Do				
				Bertie A. Do	Daughter	In	2	Scholar				Do				
4		1	1	John Metcalfe	Head	In	74	Philat			X	Great Langton, Yorks				
				Mary Do	Wife	In	58					Sheffield, Yorks				
				Edgar C. Do	Son	In	18	Scholar				Great Langton, Yorks				
5	Three stone bridge Public house	1	1	Elizabeth Wright	Head	Widow	63	Emigration Agent			X	Great Langton, Yorks				
				Christopher Metcalfe	Head	In	18	Scholar				Do				
				Eda Metcalfe	Daughter	In	18	Scholar				Do				
				Mary Metcalfe	Daughter	In	18	Scholar				Do				
6	The Rectory	1	1	Charles E. Bond	Head	Widow	62	Chaplain, Northallerton				North Yorkshire				
				Marian J. Bond	Daughter	In	30					Do				
				Reginald A. Bond	Son	In	10					Do				
				Harold Bond	Son	In	10					Do				
				John Place	Visitor	In	18					Do				
7		1	1	Matthew Bond	Head	In	74	Scholar			X	Do				
				Mary Do	Wife	In	74					Do				
				Ernest Do	Son	In	18					Do				
Total of Houses and of Tenements with less than Five Houses		7	7	Total of Males and Females		13	14									

Y. 1000. — Draw the name at the end of each of the words of the headings as are in parentheses. Eng.—Sheet B.

Census 1891. Great Langton, Northallerton,
in the Borough of Richmond, Parish of Great Langton.
(See previous page.)

Langton Village, house numbers 1 – 7.

***Denotes number of rooms if less than 5.**

Un-numbered are houses with more than 5 rooms.

1. Langton Village.
School House:
John W. Dawson aged 33 School Master
Mary Ann Dawson aged 37 wife
Esther Ann Dawson aged 5 daughter
Marion E. Dawson aged 1 daughter
2. *3 rooms.
Christopher Metcalfe aged 60 Blacksmith. Born Great Langton on Swale Yorkshire
Elizabeth Metcalfe aged 45 wife. Born West Witton, Yorkshire.
Agnes C. Sonedly aged 5 Foster daughter. Born Darlington, Durham.
George Miles, aged 40, Lodger, Single. General Laborer
3. Thomas Place aged 52. Timber Merchant. Born Ainderby, Steeple, Yorkshire.
Hannah Place aged 49, wife.
Mary Place aged 21, daughter. Dressmaker. Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
Ernest Place aged 15, son. Timber feller (Woodman). Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
Herbert Place aged 11, son Scholar. Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
Bertha A. Place aged 8. Scholar. Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
4. John Metcalfe aged 57. Tailor. Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
Ann Metcalfe aged 55, wife. Born Sheffield, Yorkshire.
Edgar Christopher Metcalfe aged 10. Son. Scholar. Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
5. **Three Horse Shoes Public House.** (Later called The Blacksmiths Arms.)
* 3 rooms occupied plus 4 uninhabited rooms at time of Census.
Margaret Wright aged 63. Head. Widow. Innkeeper Publican. Born Manfield, Yorkshire.
Margaret A. Wright aged 18. Daughter. Single. Born Great Langton, Yorkshire.
Christopher Metcalfe aged 15. Grandson. Single. Footman / Domestic Servant. Born Great Langton.
Ada Metcalfe, aged 13. Grand daughter. Scholar. Born Danby, Whiske, Yorkshire.
May Metcalfe, aged 11. Grand daughter. Scholar. Born Danby, Whiske, Yorkshire.
6. The Rectory.
Charles E. Band. Cleric in Holy Orders (Rector) aged 62. Widower. Born Raleigh, Devon.
Marion Esther, aged 30. Sister in law. Widow. Born Hilham, York.
Reginald B. Esther age 6. Nephew. Born Kirkburn, York.
Sarah Pearson aged 20. General Servant, Domestic. Single. Born Langton - on - Swale, Yorkshire.
John Place age 13. Visitor. Langton - on - Swale, Yorkshire.
7. Matthew Peacock aged 77 years. Head. Married. Farmer. Born Langton - on - Swale, Yorkshire.
Ann Peacock aged 71. Wife. Married. Born Danby, Whiske, Yorkshire.
Mary Peacock aged 49 daughter Single. Born Kirkby, Fleetham, Yorkshire.

* The Metcalfe's were all related.

ANN TURNER

(Chris Metcalfe's Great grandmother.)

Her parents were William Smith Turner and Emma Bell. Ann, born in 1835, had been christened at Sheffield Cathedral. Ann's mother appears to have died when she was young and she probably worked as a domestic servant from about 12 years of age.

1851 Census: 19 Grey Street. Ann Turner aged 15, servant in the home of William Higgitt, a butcher, his wife and brother and two young children. When she married John Metcalfe the couple moved to his home town of Northallerton and lived a few doors from the Blacksmith Arms Inn and she would have been a great asset to her mother in law Susanna Metcalfe, the Inn's landlady.



X marks Bridge street, Sheffield.

John and Ann (Turner) Metcalfe had 6 children, one of whom was born blind.

1861 Emma Turner. m. John William Leaper 1898. Emma died in childbirth 1901.

Basil Leaper b.1901

1863 Dora Metcalfe b. 8 March. 1881 Census: Nursery maid at Wood Hall - 10 servants. m. Alfred Henry Hebb in 27 Dec 1894. 1901 Census lived 112 Dansom Lane, St Andrews, Sculcoates, Hull. Occupation: Flour miller worker.

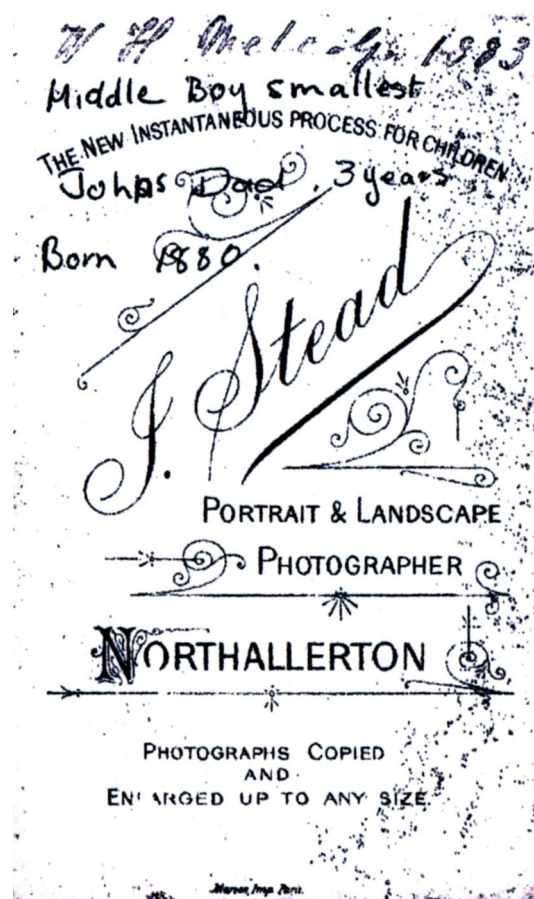
Died in 1950 aged 86 years.

1865 Elizabeth Ann Metcalfe - 1881 Census: Pupil teacher.

1870 Walter Herbert Metcalfe - born blind.

1872 Arthur William Metcalfe

1880 20th July Edgar Christopher Metcalfe - m. Florence Lilian Oram. N.Z.



Left to right: Walter aged 13 (born blind) Edgar aged three and Arthur aged 10.
Courtesy of John Metcalfe.

The smart clothes the boys are wearing would have been made by their father, a tailor. Edgar is holding a horn and always had a love for music. As an adult he played the cornet in the Ponsonby Brass Band, in Auckland, New Zealand. Their father probably made the boys suits from left over fabric from his tailoring business. In the 1891 Census only 10 year old Edgar was living at home. His uncle Christopher, his wife Elizabeth and their foster daughter lived two doors from them. In 1900 twenty-eight year old Arthur William Metcalfe, a grocer and 8 years older than Edgar, emigrated alone from London to Wellington, New Zealand, onboard the Wakanui. In 1901 Edgar was single, boarding in Langford, Yorkshire and working as a Grocer's assistant, lugging heavy sacks of potatoes, four sugar etc. and weighing and bagging dry goods for the shop shelves. In those days everything came in sacks and was weighed as required. Edgar would have been busy and at everyone's beck and call. It would have been his job to deliver the groceries daily to local customers. By all accounts he was mild natured, hard working, practical, musical and honest.

20th May 1902 Edgar Metcalfe, Grocer's Assistant, aged 27 years, embarked on his own, on the Steam Ship Cuzco bound for Sydney, Australia to join his brother Arthur. There were two cases of Smallpox onboard and they were not permitted to disembark in Australia, changing the family history! Edgar disembarked in Auckland New Zealand. Sadly Arthur died in New Zealand in 1905, aged 33 years.



S.S. Cuzco
C.F. Gould. Postcard photographer.

Soon after arriving in Auckland, Edgar Metcalfe joined the Ponsonby Brass Band, whose members were mostly young boys. He played the Cornet, but in arranging the photograph, the photographer sat the tallest person, Edgar Metcalfe, in the centre behind the drum, with the large instruments strategically positioned for a balanced effect.



Studio photograph of the Ponsonby Brass Band. Circa 1910.
Photographer: Archer Price. Edgar Metcalfe is seated behind the drum because of his size.
Alexander Turnbull Library. Ref: 1/2-00183-G



Right: Edgar Metcalfe in his 60's Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.

Left: Edgar Metcalfe enlarged from Ponsonby Brass Band studio photo.

Alexander Turnbull Library. Ref: 1/2-00183-G

While he was working in a grocery store Edgar was living in Grey Lynn. John Oram and his sister, beautiful Wiltshire born Florence Lilian Oram, had lodgings at 6 Anglesea Street, Ponsonby, where Florence worked as a house keeper. Edgar courted Florence for several years and they married at All Saints Church Ponsonby on 20th April 1913. The bride's brother gave her away. The bridal party would have walked along Ponsonby Road to the church (or taken the tram). The officiating minister was Rev. William Calder. The bridegroom was 32 years old and the bride aged 24 years. The bride's brothers William and John Oram were witnesses. It would have been another proud moment for her mother Keren.



Left: The boarding house at 6 Anglesea Street, Ponsonby, Auckland, New Zealand. Google Maps.



Right: All Saints Church Ponsonby.
<http://www.allsaintsponsonby.org.nz/>



FLORENCE LILIAN (ORAM) METCALFE, known to the family as 'Mema'.
28th April 1913. She was born in Hilperton, Trowbridge, Wiltshire, England in 1888.

COPY OF REGISTER OF MARRIAGE									
1913. Marriages in the District of <u>London</u>									
No.	When and where married. [Date, Locality, and Description of Building.]	Names and Surnames of the Parties.	Ages.	Rank or Profession.	Condition of Parties. 1. Bachelor or spinster (or as case may be). 2. Widower or widow. 3. Date of Decree of Divorce or other legal separation.	Birthplace.	Residence. 1. Present. 2. Usual.	PARENTS.	
								Father's Name and Surname (1), and his Rank or Profession (2).	Mother's Name (1), and Maiden Surname (2).
2	1913 ²⁰ April 28 St. Paul's Parish, London	Edgar Christopher Metcalfe	36	Grocer Clerk	1. Bachel 2.	London England	1. Grey, Lynn 2.	1. John Metcalfe 2. Sailor	1. Ann 2. Turner
		Florence Lilian Orsman	24	Domestic Duties	1. Spinster 2.	London Eng	1. Charles H. 2.	1. Samuel Orsman 2. Tailor, Operative	1. Helen 2. Rich

MARRIED, after the delivery to me of the Certificate required by the Marriage Act, 1908, by James Metcalfe, Officiating Minister [or Registrar].

This Marriage was solemnized between us,
Edgar Christopher Metcalfe
Florence Lilian Orsman

In the presence of us,
William Albert Orsman, Labourer, 6 Regent St. London
John Orsman, Labourer, 6 Regent St. London

I CERTIFY that the above is a true copy of the entry in the Register-book of Marriages kept by me at Parish of St. Paul, London
James Metcalfe (32 in 2) ask Reg William Metcalfe Clerk
 Officiating Minister [or Registrar].

Registration Number	Bride's Given Name(s)	Bride's Family Name	Groom's Given Name(s)	Groom's Family Name
1913/6490	Florence Lilian	Orsman	Edgar Christopher	Metcalfe

This marriage certificate was difficult to locate, as it was listed under Orsman and not Oram.



Dad (Walter Metcalfe) and his daughter Nell.
England. July 1949.

Edgar Metcalfe's older brother and niece.
News from 'home' was always welcomed.

Edgar Metcalfe's middle brother, Walter
and his wife Agnes.
1949.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.



Children:

Florence Lilian Metcalfe born 1913 but died 4 days later in 1914.

Metcalfe twins. Still born. 1916.

Joyce Metcalfe

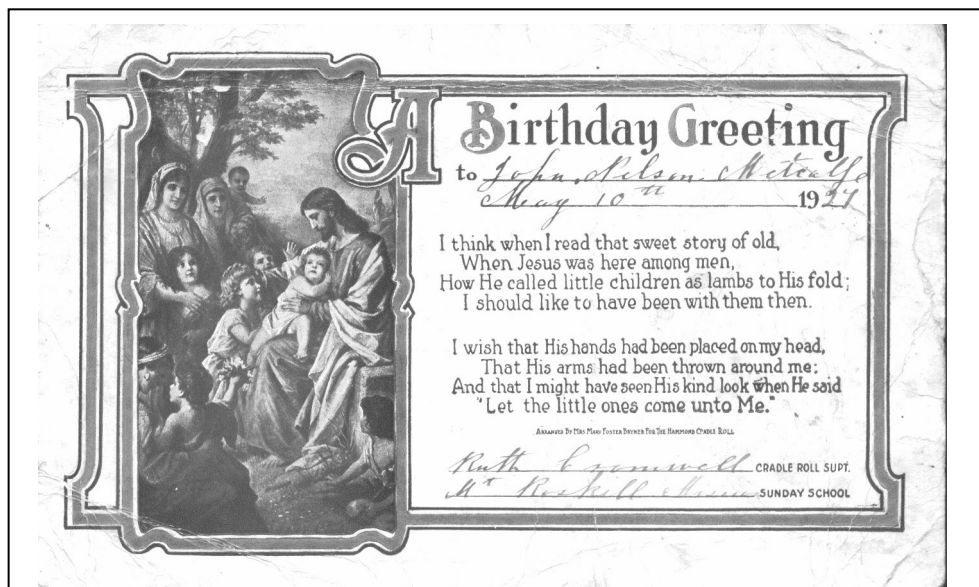
John Nelson Metcalfe. Born 10th May 1925.



Left: Keren Oram with precious surviving granddaughter, Joyce Metcalfe.

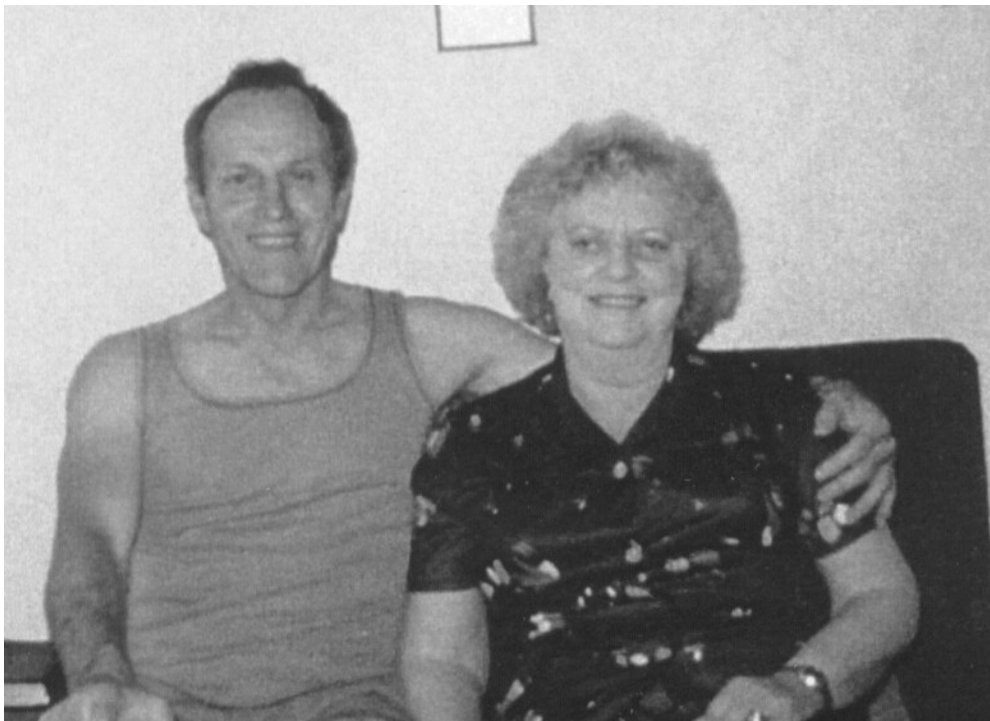
Right: John Nelson Metcalfe. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.

Their grandmother, Keren Oram, delivered them all. John was born in the lounge of their house that Edgar Metcalfe had built himself on the land he and Florence purchased, in what was then, rural Stanford Park Road, Mt. Roskill. John's birth was not registered, but he was christened on the 10th May, 1927.



Christmas card 1927. Cradle Roll.

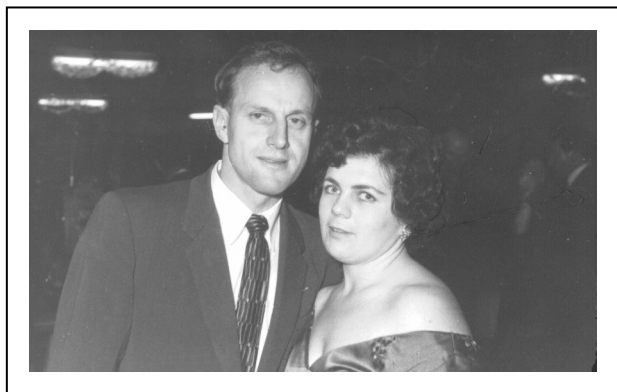
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.



Florence (Oram) and Edgar Metcalfe's surviving children:
JOHN METCALFE and sister Joyce.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.



Joyce and her girls.
Courtesy of John Metcalfe.



A night at the ball. John and bride to be Leone Smith.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.



John and Leone Smith's wedding.
Left: Uncle Nelson Oram escorted John's widowed mother Florence.
The bride's parents Trevor and June Smith on the right.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.



Leone and John Metcalfe
14th September 2001.
John Metcalfe only had one job in his whole working life!
Leone loved entertaining and going out for coffee.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family .



John Metcalfe took up marathon running in his 70's.
It was a great achievement and a very proud moment, when he
crossed the finishing line at the Rotorua Marathon at the age of 80.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.



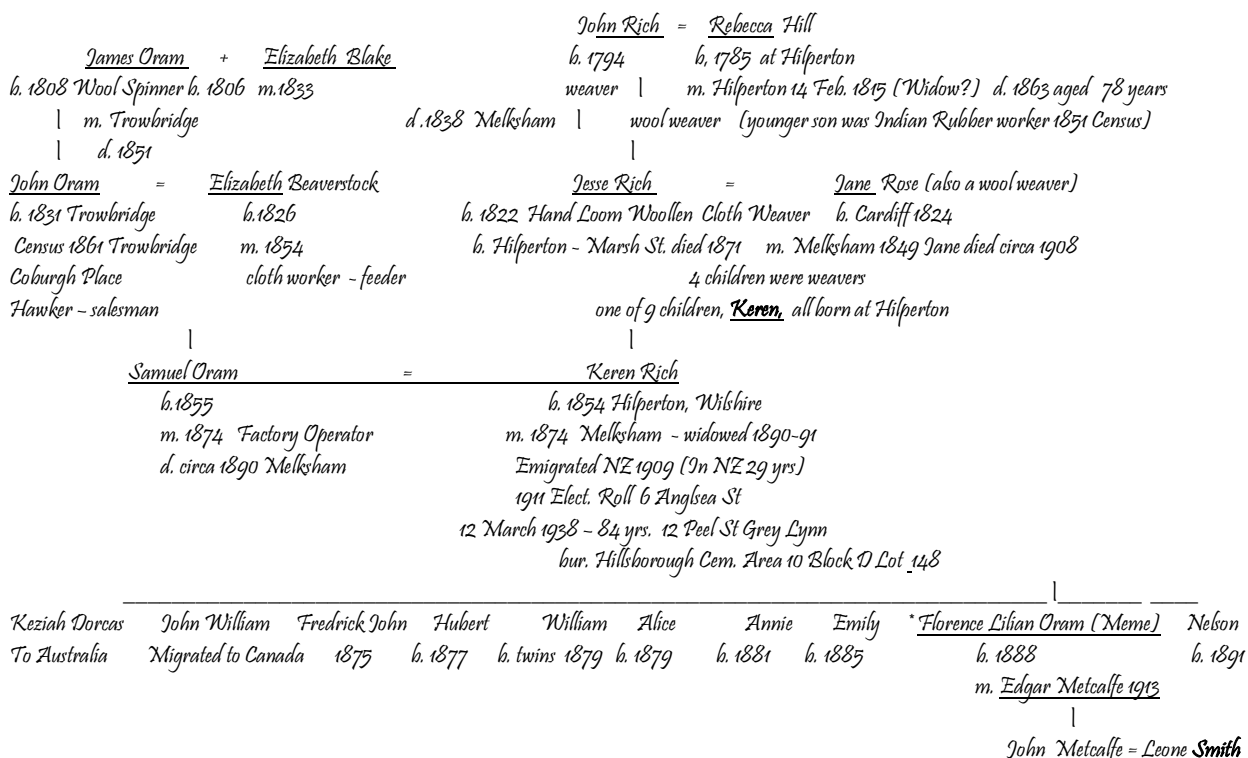
Leone and John Metcalfe died within days of each other, in 2016,
after a long and happy marriage.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.

Chapter 20
ORAM'S FROM TROWBRIDGE
WILTSHIRE
RICH - BEAVERSTOCK - ORAM

Florence Oram - Edgar Metcalfe's wife's ancestors.

Ancestors of Florence Lilian Oram - RICH and ORAM.RICH ancestors:

Since the 14th century generations the Rich ancestors were involved in the manufacture of Woollen cloth in the village of Hilperton in Wiltshire. Earlier generations were handloom weavers in their homes until large mills were built in Trowbridge.

1861 Census Trowbridge.

JOHN ORAM born 1831 was a Hawker (travelling salesman).

ELIZABETH (BEVERSTOCK) ORAM born 1826, was a Cloth Worker. They were both born in Trowbridge and married in 1854 when Elizabeth was 28. William was born 1850 and Samuel, from whom the Metcalfe's descend from, was born 1855.

SAMUEL ORAM born 1855 (Woollen Factory Operator from Trowbridge) married KEREN RICH in 1874. All their ten Oram children were born in Hilperton, Wiltshire. Samuel Oram died 1890. It is unknown whether it was a work related accident, or if he died of an illness, but Keren Oram found herself suddenly in a precarious position. There was no pension for widows in those days. The older children went to work, but she was able to keep the younger children in school. She was a thrifty, hard working lady and a wonderful mother. Keren was the local midwife and would often be released from her job to deliver a baby.

Keziah Dorcas

John William

Fredrick John b. 1875 - 1952 WW1.

Samuel Hubert b. 1876. Bapt. 1879. Cloth Worker m. Kate Elizabeth Tucker 1910. WW1.

William Albert b. 1879. m. Florence White 1902.* Gunner WW1.

Alice Rose b. 1879 - bapt. 1880.

Annie Elizabeth b. 1881

Emily b. 1885

Florence Lilian b. 1888

Nelson b. 1891

Electoral Roll Trowbridge Parochial Vote



The Oram family. Circa 1908.
Courtesy of John Metcalfe.

On the back of this photograph, which would have been taken in Wiltshire before the family emigrated, Florence had written:

Front row, from left: Annie, mother Keren, Florence and Emily.

Unfortunately she did not name her brothers.

Nelson is top left and William is possibly 2nd to end, on the right.

Birth order of boys:

John William

Fredrick John

Hubert

William

Nelson

John Metcalfe made some notes for Natalie about the family:

Grandmother Keren Oram nee Rich was born in Trowbridge, Wiltshire, England.

Grandfather (Samuel) died just prior to his family emigrating. This is incorrect - he died just prior to the birth of his youngest child, Nelson.

They had 10 children.

One son migrated to Canada

One sister to Australia

The rest of the family emigrated to New Zealand.

* Florence Oram won a prize on Saturday 11th November 1899, when she was 11 years old, reciting the poem, 'The Cripple Boy.' It would have brought tears to many eyes. Her widowed mother ,Keren Oram, would have been so proud of her daughter and no doubt thought to herself, 'If only her father could see her now he would be so proud too.'

THE CRIPPLE BOY

Author unknown.

There stood a lonely cottage once upon a mountain side
And higher still above it rose the summits in their pride
A village in the valley lay, but that was far below
Whence all except the wild goat came weary stepped and slow.

Now a widow owned that lowly hut, she had one only joy,
Alas her care and sorrow too, for he was a crippled boy
He could not climb the mountain path, he could not run and play.
He could not earn the daily bread, for which his mother toiled all day.

Oh mother he would sometimes say, why did God make me so
What use am I, what work is mine, and then the tears would flow
Nay nay my child have patience still, be sure the words are true.
God has a plan for every man, and He has a plan for you.

Now the sound of war was swelling then around that fair free land.
But her son had sworn that on her soil no foeman foot should stand.
The cripple slept, at midnight woke and he knew not why
But a secret impulse led him forth beneath the starry sky.

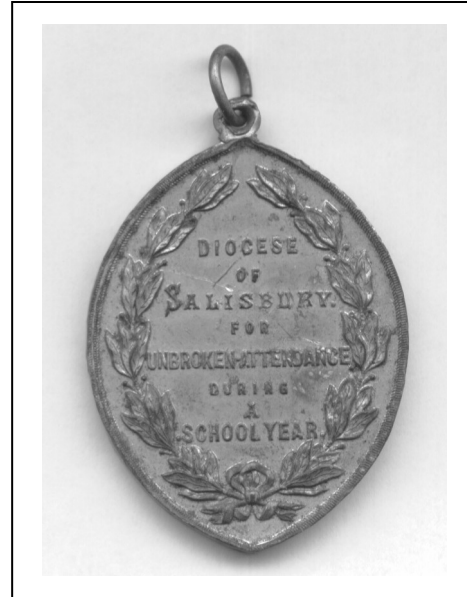
Then led him up he knew not where until at last he stood.
Beside the pile, the signal pile of ready stacked up wood.
There was no sentry at his post, the place was dark and still.
Hush hark see those stealthy men, creeping round the hill.

Now crippled boy there's work for you, your mothers words are true.
God has a plan for every man and this is His for you.
He seized a match in either hand, he had no thought of fear.
One moment and the flames burst forth, they saw them far and near.

They saw it too, those baffled foe's, they knew their chance was ore.
One shot they fired and back they went, down to their camp once more.
But where was he, the feeble child, so meek and yet so brave.
So mean and yet so honoured thus, his native vale to save.

Alas that shot had stretched him low, and on the grass he lay.
With his dauntless heart rejoicing, while his life's blood ebb's away.
They bore him to his home, at last there was triumph in his eye
Oh mother do not weep for me, for I am happy thus to die.

I could not ask for longer life, for I have lived to see.
God has a plan for every man, and he had one for me.



The medal pictured above was inherited by John Metcalfe from his parents, but to whom it originally belonged had been forgotten. The oval medal for unbroken attendance during a school year, was awarded by the Diocese of Salisbury, an Anglican cathedral in Salisbury, England, only 31 miles to Hilperton, so it is more likely to have belonged to Florence Oram, seeing it was in her families possession and that they lived in the right location, but we cannot say for certain without researching the school's attendance Rolls. There is one exactly the same, (see below) but in poor condition, in the Wiltshire museum.



16. WILT-567911 (West Knoyle): A lead-alloy medallion of the Salisbury Cathedral School (The Cathedral Church of the Blessed Virgin Mary), given to a pupil for unbroken attendance during a school year. * As a proviso, the Code stated that 'No child may receive a medal who has not satisfied the head teacher as to his or her cleanliness, tidiness and good conduct throughout the year'. The obverse depicts the Virgin Mary with child and scepter standing in front of an elaborate altar consisting of two pillars topped with crosses which support the cathedral church and is inscribed 'SIGILLVM DIO SALISBURGENSIS'. The reverse depicts a wreath and is inscribed, 'DIOCESE OF SALISBURY FOR UNBROKEN ATTENDANCE DURING A SCHOOL YEAR'.

The medallion is 5mm in length and weighs 27 g. This is the second medallion of its type to be recorded on the PAS database, the first is from Collingbourne Kingston (WILT-CD40DC). The medallion was donated to Salisbury Cathedral by the finder.

Highlights from the Portable Antiquities Scheme (PAS) in Wiltshire in 2017.
 Uploaded by Richard Henry. <http://bournemouth.academia.edu/RichardHenry>

RICH ANCESTORS:

JOHN RICH born 1794, was a handloom weaver, but as the woollen Mills opened in Trowbridge he would have found it difficult to make a living. In 1815 he met and married 30 year old REBECCA HILL who was a wool weaver. Because of her age she was probably a widow, but records are scarce and I can't find her previous marriage record, or her maiden name. They were born in the Wiltshire village of Hilperton and lived at Hilperton Marsh. The village lies about two miles to the north-east of Trowbridge and is very low lying. The Kennet and Avon canal has several locks and links the two villages with their rows of mid-17th-century two storied stone rubble weavers cottages, each with an attic, pantiled roof, freestone quoins and dressings. One ground-floor room in each cottage has a large three-light window back and front and there are indications that at one time a loom was fixed in one of the upper rooms. It is likely that they were quite a religious family as their children (except William) all had Biblical names. The quality of hand loomed fabric was superior to the milled cloth first produced in the mill.

1841 Census: (The person recording the information had creative spelling!)

JOHN RICH aged 47 Hand Loom weaver born 1794 Hilperton Wiltshire

REBECCA (HILL) RICH aged 55 born 1786 Hilperton Wiltshire

Jessey Rich aged 18 weaver born 1823 Hilperton Wiltshire

Elizabeth Rich aged 16 born 1825 Hilperton Wiltshire

Hannah Rich aged 15 born 1826 Hilperton Wiltshire

William aged 10 born 1831 Hilperton Wiltshire - 1851 weaver

Samuel Rich aged 7 born 1834 Hilperton Wiltshire aged 17 - an Indian Rubber Worker in 1851

1871 Wiltshire Census:

JESSE RICH - Head - 49 years - Woollen Weaver - Born Hilperton 1823

JANE (ROSE) RICH - Wife - 47 years - Woollen Weaver - B. Steeple Ashton 1824

Ann Rich - daughter - 19 years - Woollen Weaver - Born Hilperton 1852

Tabitha Rich - daughter - 18 years - Woollen Weaver - Born Hilperton 1853

Keren Rich - daughter - 17 years - Woollen Weaver - Born Melksham 1854

John Rich - son - 15 years - Farm Labourer - Born Hilperton 1856

Dorcas Rich - daughter - 13 years - Scholar - Born Hilperton 1858

Jemima Rich - daughter - 9 years - Scholar - Born Hilperton 1862

Elizabeth Rich - daughter - 7 years - Scholar - Born Hilperton 1864 (Woollen Cloth Machine Feeder)

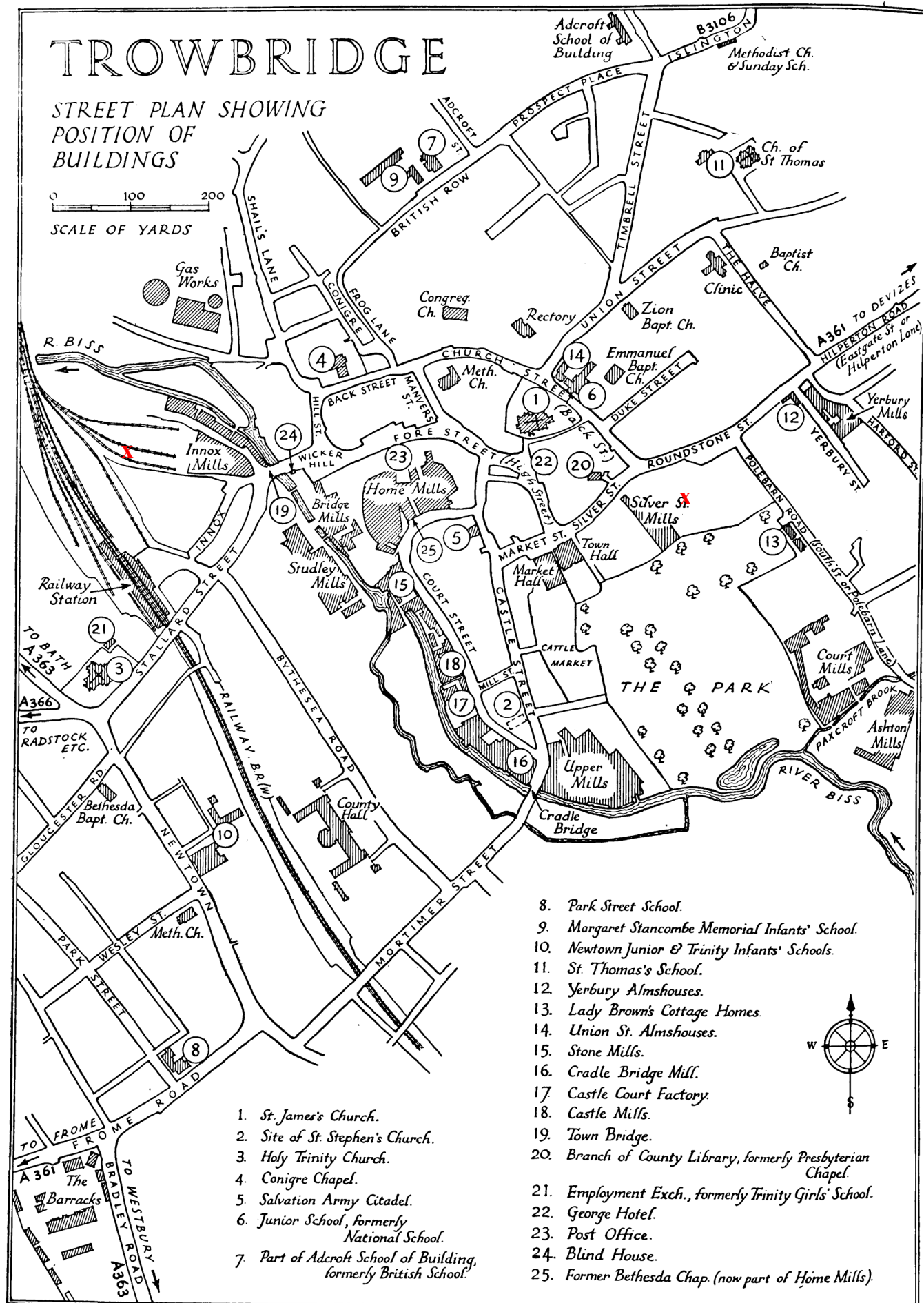
William James Rich - son - 4 years - Scholar - Born Hilperton 1867 (Bakers Boy)

Samuel Jessie Rich - son - 1 year - Born Hilperton 1870

By the 1881 Census Jesse had died and Jane was no longer able to weave, probably because of diminishing eyesight, so to support herself and her young children she worked as a laundress. It would have been hard work for a woman of her age, scrubbing dirty laundry on a ridged, wooden, scrubbing board, filling a copper with heavy buckets of water, feeding the fire beneath until the water boiled, then lifting steaming washing with a copper stick into a rinsing tub, wringing the clothes through a mangle; rinsing, hanging, starching and ironing clothing all day. Her hands would have suffered. She died circa 1908 in her eighties.



Washing was hard work in those days.
WordPress.com



Left: Map of Trow Bridge showing Mills.

<http://www.british-history.ac.uk>

Hilpert Road middle left edge.

SILVER Mills below No. 20 - John Kemp (& Hewitt) owner

INNOX Mills left of No. 24 - John Kemp (& Hewitt) owner

Around 1815 a new road, the present Mortimer Street, Trowbridge was created with two-storey houses, especially for the factory workers. Until 1850, when a stone road bridge was built, the route between the houses and the factories was a wooden footbridge - Cradle Bridge - across the river. The building of the powered factories created a demand for a large labour-force, which meant that many people migrated to the town from the surrounding area. Between 1801 and 1821 the population increased from 5,799 to 9,545 and at that time it was the 80th largest town in England. Wikipedea.

Generations of Rich and Oram families were involved in the textile manufacturing industry from a young age. Many people became ill with respiratory and lung conditions caused by breathing in the fibre dust. The majority of employees were women and children who worked around 12 to 14 hours a day. John Kemp and two of his sons bought Innox and Silver Street Woollen manufacturing Mills and also had a Dying factory in Trowbridge. Mills gave women the opportunity of employment.

About 1865 John Kemp a wool dyer, born 1813, moved from Somerset to Trowbridge and with two of his older sons, Edward Denning Kemp, born in 1838, and John Denning Kemp Jr. born in 1843. With investment from their father they formed a partnership with a clothier called Hewitt in Trowbridge, taking the town from a woollen weaving cottage industry to steam driven commercial enterprise. On one occasion in 1878 they exhibited Meltons (a densely woven, felted and brushed fabric) twilled, ribbed, and fancy coatings; beavers. John Wesley preached in the town many times and a chapel, now part of Messrs. KEMP & Hewitt's cloth factory beside the Town Bridge, was erected and opened in 1890.

By 1891 there were about six firms in the town, employing 1,200 persons, mainly manufacturing heavy coatings. The Kemp and Hewitt factories became renown for their fine pin striped trousering and woollen fine suit cloth. The industry was described as flourishing with a good export market. The SILVER Street factory was taken over by the brothers KEMP.



Innox Mills Trowbridge.
Courtesy of Innox Mills Ltd.

When John Metcalfe was telling me his family history he was unsure if Keren Oram worked in a woollen mill, or cotton mill, but after extensive research I have concluded there were no cotton mills in Trowbridge and all census records of the family's employment show they worked in the woollen industry. Samuel Oram was working at the Woollen mills when he and Keren Rich married.

JOHN ORAM born 1826, was a Hawker (travelling salesman) selling the woollen products for the Woollen Mill, to shops and markets. His wife ELIZABETH BEAVERSTOCK, was a Cloth Feeder, feeding textiles through finishing machines, straightening the cloth and positioning the truck of cloth as it enters the machine, or feeding it onto brackets to form a bolt. The couple probably met at the woollen mill. The mills gave women the opportunity to work. The children all went home for their midday meal. It was the practice of Messrs Kemp and Hewitt to treat their staff and families to an enjoyable day out each year. On 3rd September 1887 more than 200 employees and their families spent the afternoon, through until dusk, until dusk at Laurel Villa, the residence of Mr. John Kemp, Jr. dancing, playing cricket, quoits and various other games, while the firm's brass band rendered a capital selection of music. A brass band was formed from amongst the firm's employees and played at many local public events. The extensive gardens and conservatory were thrown open to visitors. They also organised an annual day out to the seaside by special train, lavishly decorated for the occasion was an outstanding event of the summer and donkey races a highlight! One night three donkeys were stolen from their factory! The culprits were caught. The Kemps were a Christian family, influenced by the preaching of John Wesley, who often visited Trowbridge. There was a strong community spirit amongst their workers and they impacted the lives of many in Trowbridge for the better. In the 1891 Census, Keren's mother in law, Elizabeth Beaverstock was a cloth worker (feeder). Her sister, Mary Beaverstock was cook for John Kemp Jr's brother Edward, his wife Alice Denning Kemp and their four adult children for over 10 years and the Oram's lived close to the Innox Mill. When Keren Oram immigrated to New Zealand the Mill owner gave her a gift of half a crown, which would be very much in the nature of John Kemp. We can't say it was him for certain, of course. Keren Oram, of 27 Duke Street, Trowbridge, was a Woollen Weaver and her son, William, worked for the Great Western Railway until he retired in 1937.

KEREN ORAM EMIGRATES.

What circumstances planted the seed in the mind of this courageous lady is unknown, but after saving every penny she could, late in 1908, Keren Oram 'Housekeeper', Purchased a 3rd class ticket from London to Wellington New Zealand, 'Corinthic.' Several months later her youngest son Nelson (a Metal Moulder) and her three daughters Annie, Florence and Emily, 'Domestics' had saved enough to purchase 3rd Class passage on the same ship, which left London on 5th February 1909 and arrived in Wellington at 3pm March 22nd 1909. The Press, Volume LXV, Issue 13380, 23 March 1909, Page 9, reports that there was an outbreak of Scarlet Fever and Measles on board the ship through isolation. 44 Measles cases were sent to Quarantined on Sommes Island, before berthing at Wellington. The four Scarlet Fever cases were taken to hospital. Many were Assisted passengers and some were nominated by relatives already in New Zealand and had accommodation and jobs organized. By 1914 Keren was living at 36 Cheltenham Rd, the very large historic Merbeck House, (named for an historic Oak tree in the garden) where she was probably the live in housekeeper.



The 'Corinthic'.
Courtesy of Ancestry.

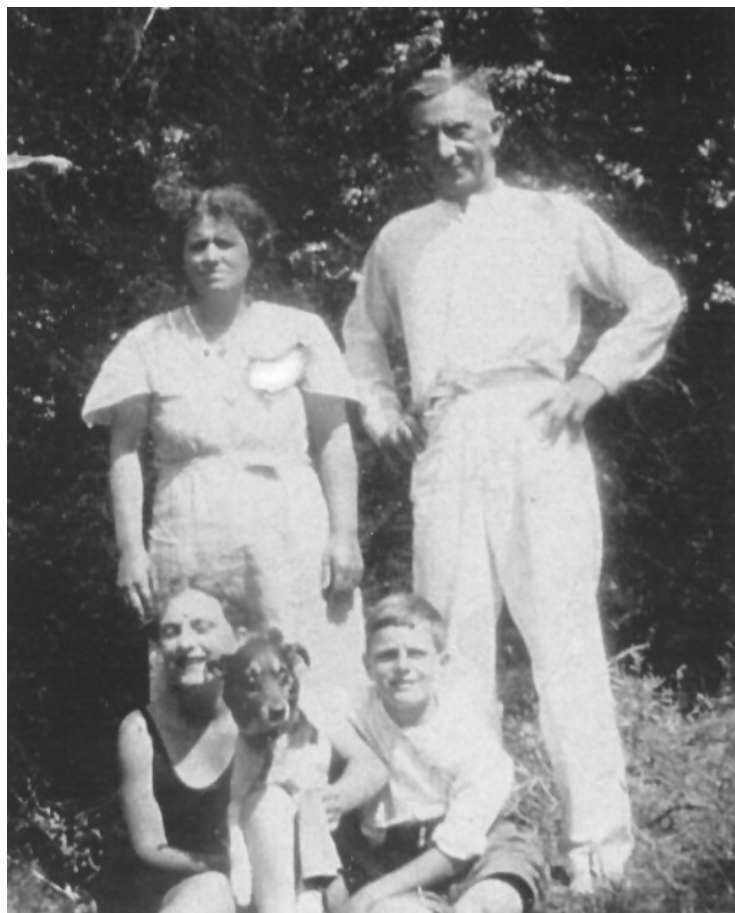


Keren (Rich) Oram.
Courtesy of Chris Metcalfe.



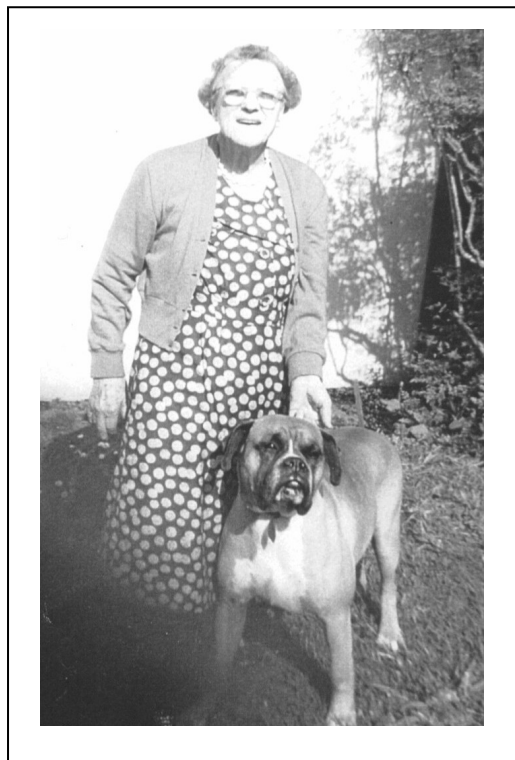


The Oram sisters and families enjoying a picnic
with Edgar and Florence Metcalfe.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.

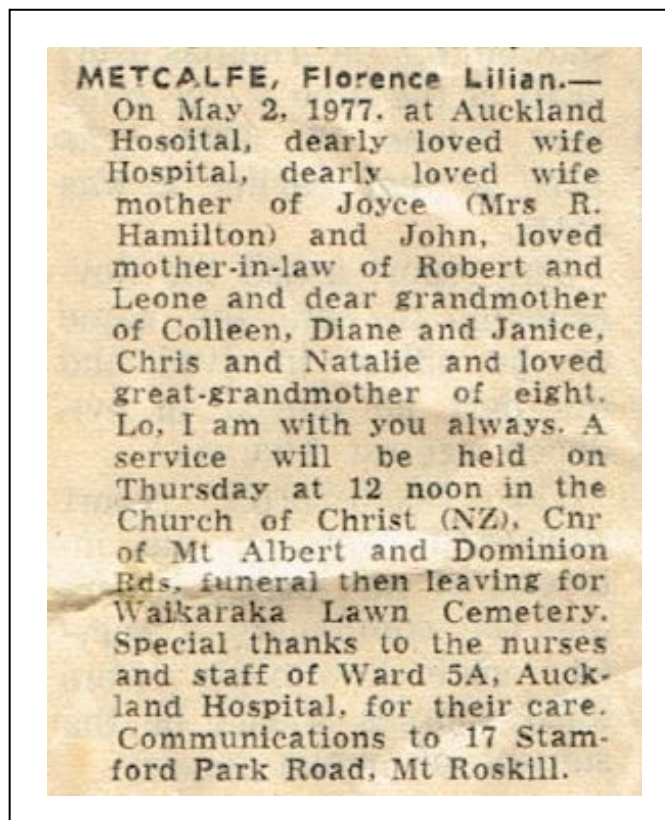


Florence (Oram) and Edgar Metcalfe, Joyce and John.
Courtesy of John Metcalfe.

John and Leone Metcalfe picked up Florence and Aunty Alice up every Sunday and took them to church,. The family were very close..



Aunty Alice (nee Oram) with and John and Leone's pedigree dog,
Hans of Copperfield.
Courtesy of John Metcalfe.



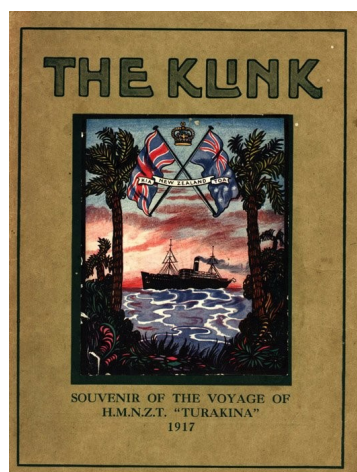
Florence Lilian (Oram) Metcalfe Death notice.
Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.

NELSON ORAM
1891 - 1975

The youngest son of the late Samuel Oram and his wife Keren (Rich). Nelson, a Moulder, emigrated with his widowed mother Keren Oram and three of his sisters, on the steam ship, 'Corinthic', in February 1909 from London. He served in the New Zealand Expeditionary Force in World War 1 (43534) and World War II (800209). In the 1st World War he embarked on His Majesty's New Zealand Troop Ship the 'Turakina' on 26 Apr 1917 from Wellington, New Zealand, to Plymouth, Devon and returned home July 1917, after serving 2 years and 7 days. He was fortunate enough to survive both wars, rising through the ranks to Lance Corporal. His portrait is in the Auckland War Memorial Museum.



Lance Corporal Nelson Oram, Reg No 43534, of the New Zealand Field Artillery.
(Photographer: Herman Schmidt, 1917). Sir George Grey Special Collections,
Auckland Libraries, 31-O2919. No known copyright.



HMNZT 84 - The klink : A souvenir of the voyage of S.S. Turakina (H.M.N.Z.T. 84) April to July, 1917; and a history of the doings of the Left Wing of the 25th Reinforcements N.Z.E.F. on their way to the Front -- London : Printed by Spottiswoode, Ballantyne & Co. : 1917. No Known Copyright Restrictions.

Chapter 21
Joseph Bond Kennedy's 2nd wife
ALICE MARY PALMER



Joseph Bond Kennedy and Alice Mary Palmer.
Married 30th November 1892 at the home of the bride's parents,
Joseph and Elizabeth Palmer, Gladstone Road, Gisborne.
Courtesy of the Orr family.

Joseph Bond Kennedy, Widower, marries Alice Mary Palmer.

Two years after the death of his wife, on the 30th November, 1892, 52 year old Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy, widower and Master Mariner, married the beautiful and very petite, 20 year old Miss Alice Mary Palmer. Note his expensive, well cut suit and button hole. Alice Palmer was born in Dorchester England, the daughter of the local Gisborne Herbalist, Joseph and Elizabeth B. Palmer (nee Sampson) who had emigrated from England and set up business in Gisborne. The couple married at the Palmer's family home in Gladstone Road, Gisborne. Her mother, Elizabeth, signed witness with an 'X', being unable to write. Alice was a very tiny woman and it is reputed that Captain Joseph could hoist her up onto his shoulder.

onto his shoulder, but she was strong willed enough to keep her older husband in line. She was a talented young woman, very musical and the light of her husband's life. Alice played the trumpet in the Salvation Army band. Her mother was a charitable Christian woman, always bringing home drunks.

Form 12.]

COPY OF REGISTER OF MARRIAGE.

1892. Marriages in the District of Turanga

D. 905-312

No.	When and Where Celebrated.	Names and Surnames of the Parties.	Age.	Race or Profession.	Residence of Parties. 1. Bridegroom or Bride. 2. Bridegroom or Bride. 3. Minister of Religion.	Residence of Parties. 1. Bridegroom or Bride. 2. Bridegroom or Bride. 3. Minister of Religion.	Witnesses. 1. Name and Residence (1). 2. Name and Residence (2).	Witnesses. 1. Name and Residence (1). 2. Name and Residence (2).
36	Nov. 30 th at his house of Joseph Palmer Gladstone Road Gisborne	Joseph Kennedy Alice Mary Palmer	late Martin Marnie 20	—	1. Kennedy 2. New Zealand 3. 1890	1. Gisborne 2. Gisborne 3. Gisborne	1. John Kennedy 2. Martin 3. Martin	1. Kate 2. Turang 3. Turang
					1. Dorchester 2. England	1. Gisborne 2. Gisborne	1. Joseph Palmer 2. Herbert	1. Elizabeth 2. Sampson

Manages, after the delivery to me of the Certificate required by "The Marriage Act, 1880," by

Anthony J. Webb Officiating Minister (or Registrar).

This Marriage was solemnized between us,

J. Kennedy
A. M. Palmer

In the presence of us,

Joseph Palmer Herbert
Elizabeth B. Palmer & her Mark Gisborne

I certify that the above is a true copy of the entry in the Register-book of Marriages kept by me,

Anthony J. Webb
Officiating Minister (or Registrar).



This is one of a pair of beautiful vases belonged to Alice Kennedy and were probably a wedding present.
Courtesy of Jo Claude.

AN IMPUDENT INTRUSION

Poverty Bay Herald, Volume xxv, Issue 8235,

13th June 1898.

(Derby Street - Next to Dr. Coker on Palmerston Road corner.)

Between midnight on Saturday night and four o'clock Sunday morning a most determined attempt was made by two men, unknown, to rob the residence of Captain Kennedy at Kaiti. Mrs. Kennedy, her two children and a servant, were the only occupants of the house at the time. Captain Kennedy being engaged in superintending the lightering of the Delphic.

About midnight Mrs. Kennedy heard several taps on the window similar to the sound and number of those with which the Captain is in the habit of announcing his arrival. She was on the point of asking if it was the Captain when she recalled he had distinctly said he would not be home until 10 or 11 o'clock on Sunday. After the elapse of a short period she managed by peeping through the curtain, to see a man, and she describes him as being short in stature, and wearing dark clothes and a skull cap. A second man she did not see, but heard him whistling from the road, where he was evidently on the watch. An entry was effected, by the man who had tapped on the window, through the window of the servant girl's bedroom, which had been left unfastened owing to the fastener not working easily. The intending robber had to walk over a bed which was in front of the window and the marks of his feet were plainly discernible. The servant girl was with Mrs. Kennedy in the lady's bedroom, the door of which was locked, the key having been left in the door on the inside. The robber came along the passage and inserted a key into the bedroom door, but owing to the key being in the lock he was unable to unlock it.

Foiled in his attempt, he tried to frighten the inmates out by getting on the roof and rolling some pieces of ti-tree on it, and these pieces of wood the captain found in the spouting. This method being equally inefficacious, the robbers ultimately left without taking anything, their objective evidently to take money and not goods.

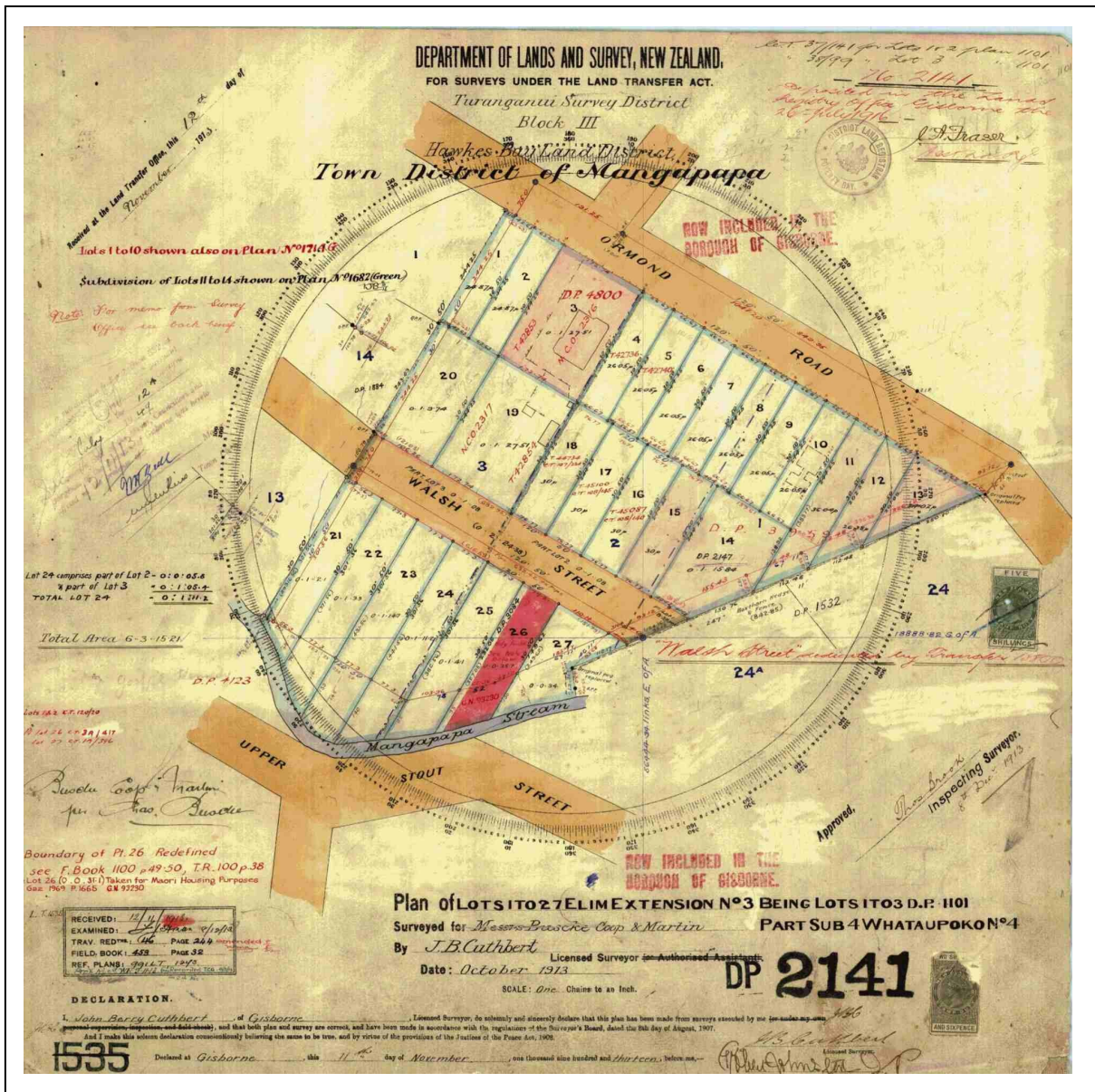
When Captain Kennedy got home yesterday at midday, he found Mrs. Kennedy in bed, trembling from head to foot, and she has hardly yet got over the shock to her nerves occasioned by the unwelcome visit of her uninvited and undesired callers. Mrs. Kennedy estimates it must have been nearly four o'clock before the men left the vicinity of the house.

The property where this incident occurred was probably in Derby Street, next to Doctor Coker's - on the corner of Derby and Palmerston Road. 221 Palmerston Road. Dr. Coker's advertisement in the Poverty Bay Herald. 19th April, 1907:

CHANGE OF ADDRESS.

DR. **COKER** notifies his Patients that he has REMOVED to Palmerston Road, opposite the National School and the English Parsonage.

Consulting hours at home and at Kane's Pharmacy as before.



Title shows transfer in 1906 from Thomas Baird to Joseph Kennedy. Joseph Kennedy had a beautiful 8 roomed villa built for his family, on the 3/4 acre section (shown in red) with buggy shed and stable, on what is now 252 Ormond Road, Mangapapa, Gisborne. He could row from the wharf, down the Taruheru river and into the Mangapapa stream, which at that time, flowed past the bottom of the property. He also owned 20 other sections opposite his property, which he put up for sale in 1910. Courtesy of Maori Housing Learmonth.

LAND SALE

Poverty Bay Herald

Volume XXXV11, Issue 12258, 22nd September 1910.

The undersigned have received instructions from Captain Kennedy, to offer by Public Auction, on the ground, Thurs. the 29th instant, at 3 pm.

2 SECTIONS on the town side of Mangapapa bridge, also a four roomed cottage, which the purchaser has the right to remove.

TERMS: 20% at fall of hammer; 20% in three months: balance may remain for three years at 6 percent, or the whole may be paid in cash.

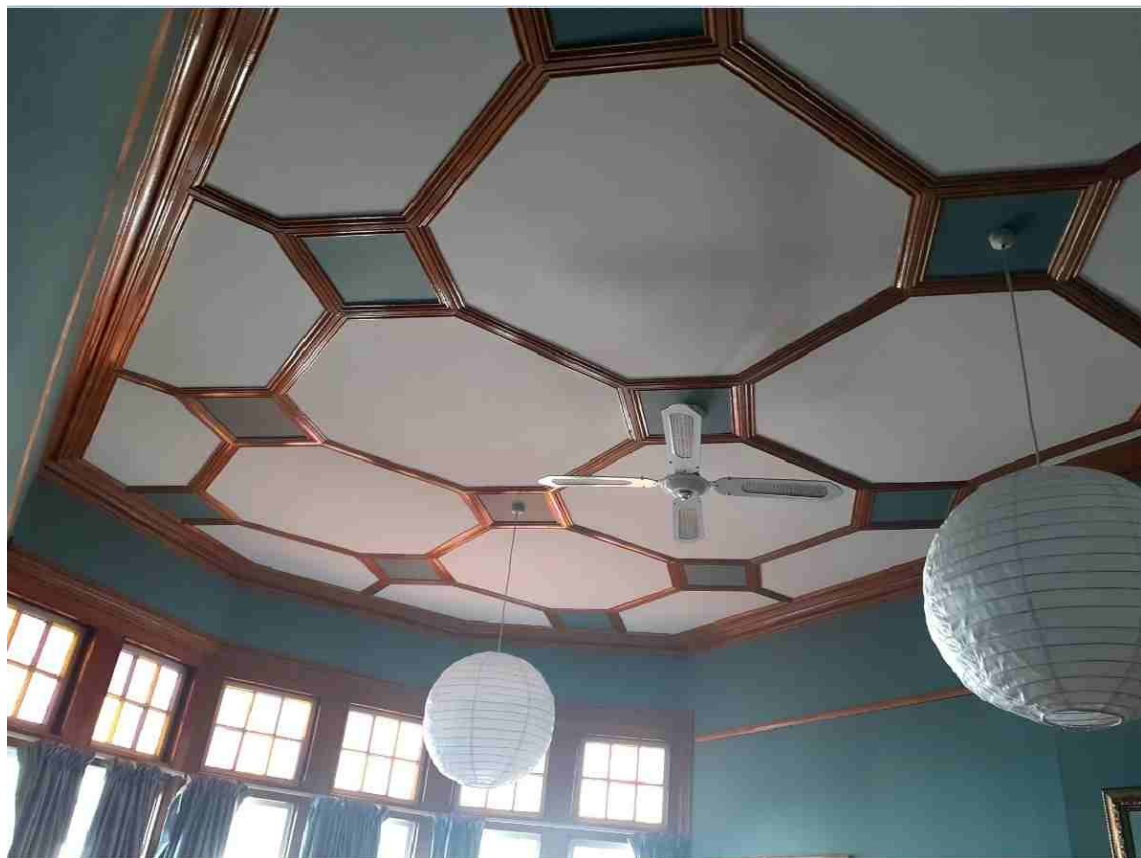
Conveyances will leave Masonic Corner at 2 pm on day of sale.

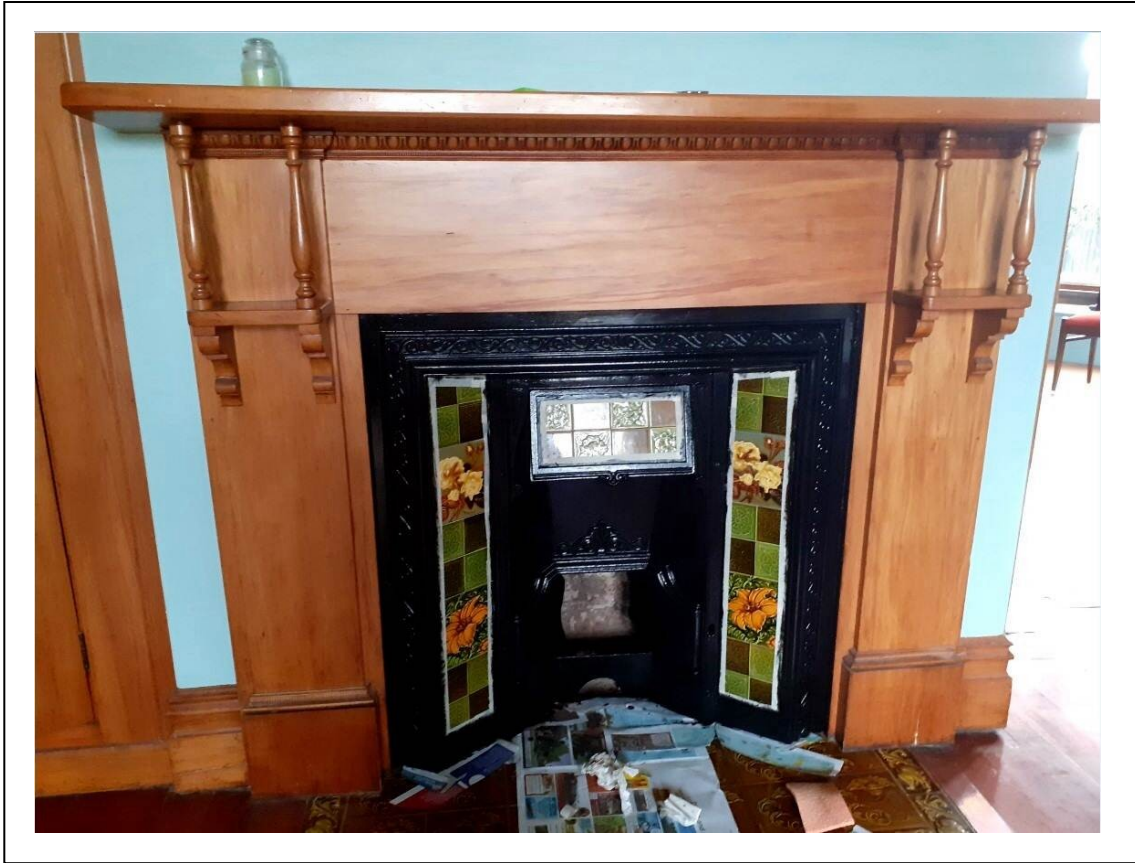
COMMON SHELTON & CO LTD.

J.B. KELLS Auctioneer



Joseph and Alice Kennedy's beautifully restored home at 252 Ormond Road, Mangapapa, Gisborne. The ceiling in the lounge shows the quality of the home. Unfortunately, the two original brick chimneys were removed.
Courtesy of present owner Kevin Learmonth 2020.





Fireplaces in 252 Ormond Road.

Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.

1905-1910 Joseph Kennedy was listed as owning Lot 14 of 130 Whataupoko. The house was built for Captain Joseph and his 2nd wife, Alice (Palmer) Kennedy, in 1909. The tiling around the Kent fire, below, would have been done when it was modernised. The wooden fire surrounds are probably not original, but the black tiled fire insert might be. The beautiful wooden joinery and floor are Matai, a tree native to New Zealand.



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS Part 2 JOSEPH KENNEDY & ALICE PALMER

Two years after they were married, a son was born, Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr. The couple had five children - one son and four girls. They were all talented and musical. The family were well off financially and the children received the best of educations, including music lessons. Their substantial home complete with tennis court and a parlour large enough to hold balls, dances and large functions. The Balls must have been wonderful occasions, with the decorations, musicians, musical items and recitals, beautiful gowns and late Victorian etiquette that accompanied such occasions. Through his business in the shipping and importing industry the couple lead a very active social life and mixed in the best of social circles. Alice was a woman of refined taste, reflected in her home and children..

Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr. born circa 1894 - singer and entertainer

Eva Bond Kennedy

Grace Bond Kennedy, played violin

Alice Bond Kennedy played and had a large Grand piano

Rose Bond Kennedy, played piano



Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr.
Courtesy of
Jean Reeves.



Eva Bond Kennedy as child and as a beautiful young woman.
Photo Courtesy of the Orr family.



Grace Kennedy.
Courtesy of the Orr family.



Alice Mary Kennedy.
Courtesy of Jo Claude.

TO LET

Poverty Bay Herald 26th January 1912

Eight roomed HOUSE, buggy shed, stable and all conveniences, with $\frac{3}{4}$ an acre of land, now in occupation of Captain Kennedy, Mangapapa. For further particulars apply to Captain Kennedy.

LONDON COLLEGE.

**HIGH-CLASS BOARDING AND DAY
SCHOOL FOR BOYS.**

THE School has been now Removed to
Captain Kennedy's late Residence,
Ormond Road, Mangapapa.

**SPLENDID ACCOMMODATION FOR
BOARDERS.**

Next Term begins—Boarders, February
12; Day Boys, February 13.

For particulars, apply to the Principal,
G. GALITZENSTEIN, B.Sc., Hons.
(London). At home every day from 2
to 5 p.m. 791

When Captain Kennedy bought a farm in Papakura, Auckland, they were unable to sell their house so rented it out for a Boarding school, which only operated there for a year.



The four daughters of Joseph and Alice Kennedy and their husbands.

Circa 1949.

Courtesy of the Orr family.

Back row left to right:

Fred Wynyard, Bill England, Rose England (nee Kennedy) .

Buster Hastie, Grace Millikin (nee Kennedy) Jean Reeve (Joe Kennedy's daughter) John Sharman Smith called 'Sharry,' Eva's husband.

Front row left to right:

Alice Bond Taylor, Grace Hastie (Joe's daughter) with baby Leslie, Alice Mary (Kennedy) Brambly, Eva Smith, (a friend of Alice Taylor's far right) Faye Millikin sitting.

Alice Mary (Palmer) Kennedy outlived four husbands and her grandson Bruce used to tease her, 'Nan when you get to heaven who will your husband be?' Alice always replied, 'My Joe.'

Marriage 2. Alice married a German, but at the outbreak of war, when it was not politically correct to associate with Germans, she divorced him.

Marriage 3: Her next husband may have been named Briggs. There is a suggestion that he may have been the Mayor of Parnell, but this is unconfirmed. He died unexpectedly.

Marriage 4: Barney Brambly, jokingly referred to as 'Nana's slave' as he was always doing household chores, ironing etc or obligingly responding to 'put the kettle on Barney.' He put his hat on first and died with a tea towel in his hand.

G. K. MILLER,
Acting under instructions from Captain
Kennedy, will Sell
**THE WHOLE OF HIS HOUSEHOLD
FURNITURE**
At his Residence, Derby Street (next
Dr. Coker's), comprising—
Piano (Callinson, London)
Sideboard (bevel mirror)
Table, Cloth, Leather Couch
A.B. Chairs, Writing Bureau
Pictures, Fender and Irons
Crockery, Cutlery, and Electroplate
Double Brass-rail Bedstead, complete
Brass-rail 3ft Bedstead, 2in pillars
Single Iron Bedsteads, W.W. Mat-
tresses, Kapoc Mattresses
Linoleums, Curtains
Poles and Blinds, Hall Curtains
Runner, Duchess Pair
Combination Chests
Kitchen Furniture, Utensils, etc.
One ARGYLL CAR will be sold on the
Premises.
Also,—Two Ladies' Bicycles.
G. K. MILLER,
304 Auctioneer.

POVERTY BAY HERALD, 7th May, 1913.

This house in Derby Street (next to Dr. Coker) was the first home of Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy and his 2nd wife Alice.



Joseph Kennedy owned an Argyll, similar to this example.
His was one of the first cars in Auckland.
Photograph from Wikipedia.

TOWN EDITION
Poverty Bay Herald, 24 December 1910.
VOLUME XXXVII, ISSUE 12338

Some excitement was caused near the Post Office this afternoon, when Captain Kennedy's motor car, which was being driven by Mr. J. Kennedy, ran into the kerbing, owing to the steering gear. One of the front wheels of the car was damaged.

NEW ZEALAND HERALD
Volume 1, Issue 9, Page 1. 3rd December 1863

The schooner Tarawera, Capt. Kennedy, arrived yesterday morning from Poverty bay via the Tamaki. She took her first departure on the 20th ult., and after running as far as White Island she met with contrary winds, which detained her, and as the cattle had sustained much knocking about the ship running short of provisions, Captain Kennedy determined to return to Poverty Bay, where upon his arrival he discharged the cattle and took on a fresh cargo, leaving again on Sunday last; arrived at the Tamaki on Tuesday night, landed the cattle, 19 head, without any loss, and came up harbour yesterday morning. She brings the following passengers:- Mr Burns, his wife and family (6), Mrs Graham, 2 children, Mrs Margaret Huron, Mr and Mrs Williams.

LIGHTER IN TROUBLE
NEW ZEALAND HERALD
Vol.XLV111,Issue 14720, 30th June 1911, page 8.
GISBORNE, Thursday.

During a heavy southerly storm which raged last evening, a mishap occurred to one of the lighters that had been working the *Whangape*. The lighter Matuku was being towed into the river by the Tawera and everything went well until the tug, with its heavy burden, arrived at the river entrance. Here the sea was very rough and just when the vessel was entering the river there was a strong gust of wind and some exceptionally heavy seas came in. The Matuku was carried on to the groyne. Captain Carpenter handled the tug in good style, but the heavy range caused the Matuku to bump the groyne several times. Her port side was stove in badly the rudder was damaged and the big stern fender was carried away. The vessel began to leak but the Tawera stuck to the task and succeeded in towing the lighter on to the mud opposite the wharf. There were about 28 men on the lighter and their experience was an unenviable one. **Although it wasn't Captain Kennedy at the helm of the Tawera in this instance, it shows the dangers he endured.*

AN AMUSING INCIDENT - THE OLD TUG TAWERA
Poverty Bay Herald Vol. LX, Issue 18121, 22nd June 1933.

An amusing incident is related to the old tug Tawera, which is now being broken up. And which had an unusually loud exhaust from the petrol engine installed in her. At night when the ship was working in the bay it was not unusual for her to be heard in the residential parts of Gisborne, this being particularly so when the night happened to be calm. In the early part of this century, when the vessel was owned by Messrs. Kennedy and Evans, a friend of the late Captain Kennedy asked him why he did not install a silencer on the engine, an action which would have been appreciated by many residents. Captain Kennedy's reply was that the exhaust of the vessel served to let him know on-shore that the engine was functioning satisfactorily. If the engine missed a beat, or if it stopped altogether, he knew of it immediately and if assistance was required. It was for that reason he did not install a silencer on the vessel.

From his death certificate we can ascertain that the many years Captain Joseph Kennedy had spent at sea in cold and wet conditions along with untreated infections, had damaged his kidneys and the time came to sell his business and retire. But retirement wasn't in his nature and he purchased a farm. At first this would seem a far cry from being a sailor, but Captain Joe had handled cattle for many years, transporting them in his vessels and understood it was a lucrative market, for less effort. He purchased a small farm near Papakura to raise cattle, but after a short time he became too ill and was forced to sell.

Several members of the family, or their ashes,
are interred in Captain Joseph Kennedy's
family plot at Purewa Auckland.

Joseph Bond Kennedy (Jr)
Died 20/6/1955
13/ 1050 PPTE
J.B. Kennedy
Maori Pioneer BN

Alice Mary Brambly
Loved wife of the late
Capt. Joseph Kennedy
Died 26 November 1956
Aged 84 years.

In loving memory of Donald Bond Kennedy
Died 24 . 5. 1997
Aged 71 years.
Loved son of Joseph and Ella Kennedy.
Loved brother of Bruce, Grace, Jean,
Josephine and Wallace.
At rest.

Joseph Sampson A. Palmer (brother of Alice)
Died 1920

Malcolm John - Taylor
September 1970
64 Years

Grace Bond
Died 20th June 1992
Aged 88 years.
Loved husband Flgt. Sgt. N.Z. 36101
Thomas McK Millikin
D. 27 Oct 1970
Aged 67 years

Beloved daughter
Faye Annette Rawlings
Died 9th March 2000
Aged 59 years
Wife of Wallace Leonard Rowling
Died 4th May 2005
Aged 75 years
Remembered



Joseph Bond Kennedy's Will

Died 19th June 1913

Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.

THIS IS THE LAST WILL AND TESAMENT of me JOSEPH BOND KENNEDY formerly of Gisborne but now of Auckland in the Dominion of New Zealand MASTER MARINER.

I appoint my wife Alice Mary Kennedy and Joseph Sampson Palmer of Auckland – Civil Servant – Executrix [*female executor of Will*] and Executor of this my Will and direct them to pay all my just debts, funeral and testimony expenses and subject thereto I GIVE DEVISE AND BEQUEATH all property both real and personal of whatever nature and kind and wheresoever situate of or to which I may possess or be entitled to at the time of my decease to my said wife Alice Mary Kennedy absolutely. I HEREBY REVOKE all Wills and Testimony of any dispositions by me at any time heretofore made and desire this to be my Last Will and Testament IN WITNESS whereof I hereto subscribe my name this seventeenth day of June one thousand nine hundred and thirteen.

Signed by the said Joseph Bond Kennedy the testator as and for his last Will and Testament in the sight and presence of us both being present at the same time who at his request in his sight and presence and in the sight of each other have hereto subscribed our names as witnesses AND we respectfully certify that the said Joseph Bond Kennedy well understood the English language and before he signed the foregoing Will he appeared fully to understand the same.

Signed J.B. Kennedy.

L.S.	Geo. Thompson Mercer and Clothier New North Road Auckland	Robert B. Lusk Solicitor Auckland
------	--------------------------------------------------------------------	-----------------------------------------

A Copy of the original Will was attached to Land records.

FIRST SCHEDULE

Reference	Description of land
Volume 44 Folio 8	22.6 perches being Lot 1 plan 1485 part of Section 8A Town of Gisborne.

Volume 44 Folio 4	26.7 perches being Lot 3 plan 1485 part of Section 8A Town of Gisborne.

Volume 47 108 (Gisborne)	1 rood 22.4 perches being Lots 1,2,3 and 4 plan 1628 Extension Number 9) part of Whataupoko Number 4 Block.

Volume 38 Folio 99 Section 4	2 acres 3 roods 25 perches being Lot 3 Plan 11 01 part of Mangapapa Block.

Volume 47 Folio 70 of	32 perches being Lot 8 plan 1335 (Town of Panapapa) part of

Volume 48 Folio 93 2 roods 28.4 perches being Lots 7, 8, 9 and 10 Plan 1655
(Gisborne Extension Number 11) part of
Whataupoko Number 4 Block.

Volume 40 Folio 160 12 acres 3 roods 27 perches being the Ahipara B Block.

FIRST SCHEDULE

Reference	Description of land
Volume 44 Folio 8	22.6 perches being Lot 1 plan 1485 part of Section 8A Town of Gisborne.
Volume 44 Folio 4	26.7 perches being Lot 3 plan 1485 part of Section 8A Town of Gisborne.
Volume 47 108 (Gisborne)	1 rood 22.4 perches being Lots 1,2,3 and 4 plan 1628 Extension Number 9) part of Whataupoko Number 4 Block.
Volume 38 Folio 99 Section 4	2 acres 3 roods 25 perches being Lot 3 Plan 11 01 part of Mangapapa Block.
Volume 47 Folio 70 of	32 perches being Lot 8 plan 1335 (Town of Panapapa) part of Whataupoko Number 4 Block.

Land inherited by Alice Mary Palmer, in the Will of Joseph Bond Kennedy.
Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.



Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.

This photograph of the home of Alice and Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy, No. 252 Ormond Road, was hanging in the house when it was purchased. It shows the original chimney's. The family are indebted to Kevin Learmonth who, when he purchased this old villa in Gisborne in 2020, did a lot of research into its history.

The family entertained regularly. As the girls grew older they hosted balls in the family home or other stately homes. The family still have a beautiful Faberge lipstick holder on a wrist cord, typical of the quality and up to the minute style the girls were used to. The family resided in Gisborne until most of the children had finished their education, after which Joseph Kennedy sold his business he retired to farm at Papakura. Alice Kennedy, daughter of Captain Kennedy, was on the roll of Papakura Central School 5th Nov 1912.



Glenmore, Captain Joseph and Alice Kennedy's home, New North Road, Auckland, 1913.
From 'Old Mt. Albert,' by Dick Scott.

After only a few months farming he was unable to continue because of ill health and the farm at Papakura was sold. The family moved to Mt. Albert in Auckland, purchasing 'Glenmore,' a beautiful old home which was listed as an historic house, at 289 New North Road. This house had been built by convicts, in 1846, for Thomas Cassidy, and the walls are two feet thick. It was bought by Auckland Chief jailer, George McElwain, in 1852. It was demolished for the New North Road motorway and flyover.

As Captain Joe's health declined, he returned to Gisborne for the last time to sell his property there; returning to Auckland just a month before he died at his Glenmore residence, from Acute Nephritis (kidney disease) and Anasarca (fluid in the tissues). The funeral left from Glenmore Lodge and he is buried in the family tomb at Purewa. Flags were flown at half mast on all shipping in Gisborne to mark the passing of a worthy and veteran sea man, one of the first to ply his calling at the port of Poverty Bay.

DEATHS. KENNEDY- On June 19 1913, at his residence, New North Road, Glenmore, Joseph Kennedy, master mariner, late of Gisborne, dearly beloved husband of Alice Mary Kennedy, and third son of the late John Kennedy, of Kennedy's Bay, aged 72 years. The funeral will leave his late residence on Sunday next, June 23, at 2:30 p.m.

DEATH OF CAPTAIN KENNEDY

Paperspast Poverty Bay Herald
Volume xxxv Issue 13106 Page 2

A private message received by us from Auckland last evening conveyed the sad intelligence: Captain Joe Kennedy, at his residence, Glenmore, New North Road, Auckland, passed away peacefully, in his 72nd year, after a prolonged illness, at 3 o'clock today.

Much sympathy was felt for the esteemed captain during his long illness, and the announcement of his death will be received with much regret. The Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy was not only Gisborne's first harbour-master and pilot, but was one of the founders of Gisborne's shipping business.

His life story is a most interesting one. He was born at Kennedy's Bay, Auckland in 1841. Most Gisbornites who have visited Auckland are familiar with Kennedy's Bay, at the eastern entrance to the Waitemata harbour. This was named after captain Kennedy's father, when the erstwhile Gisbornite was an infant of only two summers. Mr Kennedy, senior, came to the colony in His Majesty's ship Buffalo in 1836 (**incorrect - 1833**) to collect spars for the Admiralty. He loaded the Buffalo and she went to England, but was lost on the return voyage to New Zealand. The second ship - the Pelorus (**incorrect - HMS Tortoise**) was sent out and Mr Kennedy loaded her at the Shoe and Slipper Island. After paying the men for the Spars delivered, Mr Kennedy left for the Bay of Islands (**incorrect - Auckland**) in a cutter (**incorrect - Schooner**) the Three Bees, which he had built. It was known that he had a large sum of money - over £4,000 - in his possession and was taking it to deposit in the bank. It was on the voyage he was murdered and thrown overboard. The murderers landed at Tauranga (**incorrect - Whangaporoa**) and travelled overland to Hokianga, where they shipped on a vessel carrying spar to Sydney. Having committed other murders in New South Wales, one of the party was arrested (**a Frenchman named Jean Videll**) and confessed that his party murdered Mr Kennedy and nine others.

After Mr Kennedy's death, Mrs Kennedy, a native woman, removed with her (**two year old**) son to Auckland **and left him in the care of his uncle, Alexander Kennedy, the first Banker in Auckland.** But Joseph, as a lad of only nine years, ran away to sea.

Nine years later he became a captain and traded for some time out of Melbourne. His first visit to Poverty Bay was in 1851, in a vessel called the Fly. Eventually he found employment with Captain Read, in the coastal traders, having command of the Tarwera and afterwards the Julius Vogel.

Continued: 1874 Captain Kennedy was appointed harbourmaster and pilot at Gisborne, but eighteen months later resigned to commence lightering operations. Subsequently he was joined by Mr. J. T. Evans; and established the well known firm of Messrs. Kennedy and Evans. It is worthy of mention that lightering operations in the early days were done with whale-boats, years before the breakwater was constructed and the river entrance improved - Captain Kennedy had many stirring experiences.

Then came the steam tender Noko, the pioneer tug boat, which for many years was employed in the lightering business but was subsequently replaced by the Tarwera and Karoro. The firm built up an extensive business, which was purchased by the Gisborne Sheep Farmers Frozen Meat Company, in 1906.

Captain Kennedy was married in 1867 to a half Maori lady of the Ōpōtiki tribes, she, Mrs Kennedy, died in 1890, leaving a son and four daughters, and Captain Kennedy re-married in 1892 a daughter of Mr J. Palmer, there being also four daughters and a son by the second marriage.

A few years ago Captain Kennedy left Gisborne to take up his residence near Auckland, where the family now reside.

The late Captain Kennedy was a man highly esteemed for his integrity and sterling worth. He was a type of New Zealand surf-men of whom few remain, having wonderful skill in handling a boat on our bar harbours, and many exciting incidents might be narrated of his experiences in and out of Gisborne in the pre breakwater days.

Always cheery and bright, a hard worker, he was a familiar figure about our wharves for many years, and Joe Kennedy's death will be sincerely mourned by many in shipping and business circles.

Obituaries New Zealand Herald and other combined information.
20th June 1913

DEATH OF A PIONEER
CAPTAIN JOSEPH KENNEDY

Captain Joseph Kennedy died at Auckland yesterday. He was one of the pioneers of Poverty Bay, and was the first pilot to the Gisborne Harbour Board. Deceased originated the lightering firm of Kennedy and Bennett, afterwards Kennedy and Evans (John Thomas Evans) Lightermen.

and Shipping Insurance Agents, Reads Quay and Gladstone Road. The Kennedy's lived in Gisborne and Mr. Evans in Stout Street, Whataupoko. The large business was originally founded by the late Captain Read. The firm in this latter partnership dates from February 1885. It owned six lighters, capable of carrying from 450 to 500 tons, and for more than four years did the whole of the lightering at Gisborne, for the Union Steam Ship, Huddart Parker and Tyser Companies.

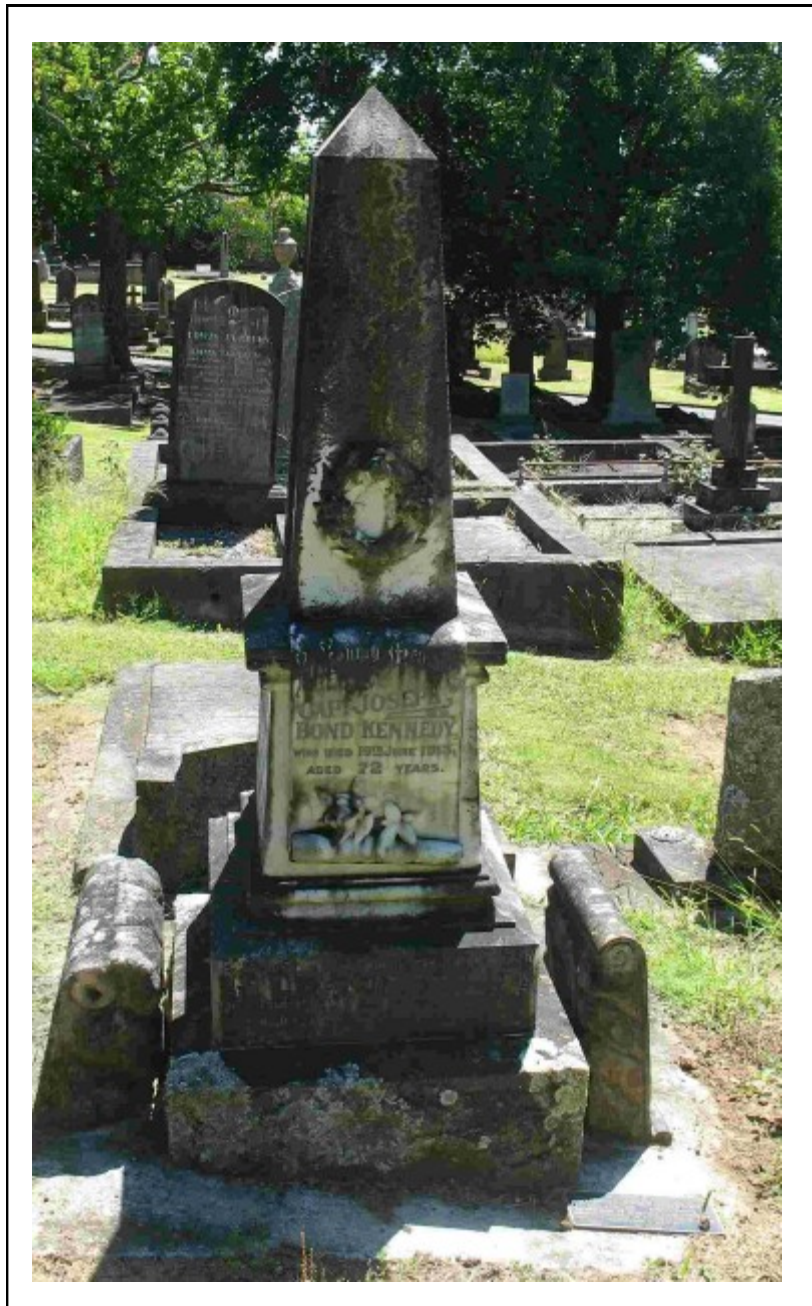
They also carried out mail contracts and represented New Zealand Express Company, Westport Coal Company and the Alliance and North British and Mercantile Insurance Companies. Captain Kennedy supervised the shipping and coaling part of the business and Mr. Evans the management of the office. The firm was finally disposed of to the Sheep Farmers Company.

Some years ago he sold his property in Gisborne, and took up a farm at Papakura. He then left his farm and returned to Gisborne, but becoming ill he came to Auckland for health reasons a month ago. The first steam tender which served to set up communication of a kind between Gisborne and the outside world was run by Captain Kennedy and Captain Read. This was the little Noka, called after Captain Read's first wife, a native.

Deceased was born at Kennedy's Bay, near Auckland, and was aged two when his father, who was a well known figure in the early days, was murdered by natives [*incorrect it was a Frenchman*] while proceeding in a Cutter from Kennedy's Bay, (named after Mr. Kennedy Senior) to Auckland.

The first that can be remembered of the veteran Captain in Poverty Bay was when he ran the old schooner Rosina to Ōpōtiki, Tauranga etc. Deceased was first married to Mrs. Dr. Arthur Saunders Thomson, of Auckland, and there were born of the marriage four daughters and one son, all of whom are still alive. The family comprises Mrs. Wells (Gisborne) Mrs. George Smith (Peel Street, Gisborne) Mrs. Choveaux (Gisborne) Mrs. Williams (Sydney) and Mr. Edward Kennedy from (Wellington).

Mrs. Kennedy predeceased her husband many years ago, and 20 years ago deceased married again, his second wife being Miss Alice Palmer, of Gisborne. Of this union there are five children - four girls and one boy. All are living in Auckland, the eldest Joseph being 18 years of age and a daughter Eva 17. (The ages of the other three children were not mentioned, but the youngest was only four years old). Deceased is survived by an older brother, Mr. John Kennedy, of Te Ari (Gisborne) and also by another brother, Mr. Nathan Kennedy of Ōpōtiki.



Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy's Grave.

Purewa Cemetery, Remuera, Auckland.

Block E, Row 48, Plot 94 & 95.

The cemetery road, going down, is just visible behind the trees.

Courtesy of Chris and Tami Metcalfe.

The beloved husband of
Alice Mary Kennedy
He anchored his soul
In the haven of rest
He will sail the wild seas no more
The oceans may sweep
O' the wild storm deep
But in Jesus he is safe evermore.

JOSEPH BOND KENNEDY Jr.

From his daughter Jo Claude's recollection: 'My father Joseph Bond Kennedy was an interesting character - an entertainer; a very handsome, charming, charismatic personality and a way with words! Joseph Kennedy Jr. was a well educated man, and studied Law at University after completing his secondary school education at Auckland Boys Grammar school and he had beautiful hand writing.'

When Joseph Bond Jr. signed up for the first World War in 1913, his recruitment details left a good description. Some of his characteristics may be recognized by other Kennedy descendants! His occupation was recorded as 'sheep farmer' and he last worked for Mr. R. Ryan at Kutarere Bay of Plenty, which is between Whakatane and Ōpōtiki.

He gave his age as 23 years, born in 1890 at Kennedy Bay. Not true! His father was born at Kennedy's Bay and his parents were not married until 1892. Many young boys who wanted to enlist purported to be older than they were. He was born at Gisborne in 1897 making him 16 ½ years! Standing 5 feet 4 ½ inches tall, good eyesight and hearing and in good physical health, he had dark complexion, dark curly hair and hazel eyes. One distinguishing feature was noted: 'outer iris at 3 o'clock birth mark from pigment spot.' He gave his sister Eva Kennedy, of Lonsdale, Kings View Rd. Mt. Eden, as next of kin. Note: It is a characteristic of many Kennedy descendants in that they have a long torso and short arms and legs - Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr. was no exception!

After basic training and equipping at Trentham, he was assigned to the 4th Maori Battalion deployed to Egypt, where he contracted Pneumonia and was hospitalized. Later he served in France, but, much of his War years seemed to be spent in hospital's in London! On one occasion he was shot in the middle finger of his right hand - his trigger finger - which was left permanently bent, but the injury was not serious enough to prevent him sneaking out of the London hospital on four different occasions and not returning until nearly midnight!

He was caught and punished on each occasion. No doubt he was enjoying the night life - the locals loved to entertain their soldier boy heroes! How he managed to do so in his hospital pajamas remains a mystery! No doubt his charming personality, entertaining ability and singing opened many doors and hearts!

After the War he continued to entertain, although it is known that he worked on the roads during the depression, young Joseph Jr was not generally known for hard physical work! He met and married Ella Irene Robinson and a short time later their eldest son was born.

Children of Joseph Bond Kennedy (Jr) and Ella Irene Robinson:

- Bruce Joseph Bond Kennedy - born Auckland
- Grace Irene Bond Kennedy - born Auckland
- Don Bond Kennedy - born Auckland
- Jean Bond Kennedy - born Coopers Beach
- Wallace Bond Kennedy - known as John - born Coopers Beach
- Josephine Alice Bond Kennedy - born Coopers Beach



Alice Kennedy with her grandchildren from her son Joe.
From left: Bruce, Grace and Donny (Donald).
Courtesy of Rosemary Orr.



Bruce, Grace & Donny (Donald).
Photographed behind glass.
Courtesy Buster Hastie.



Ella (nee Robinson) Kennedy. 1962.
Courtesy of Jo Claude.

Ella Robinson's father, Arthur, was from England, possibly, Yorkshire and her mother, Sarah was born in Mangere. The Robinson family moved around the Pukekohe area, working on various farms until they were able to purchase their own property, possibly in Waiuku. Ella came from a large family - Albert, William, Ethel, Bindon, Edward, Thomas, Harold and an adopted girl Elsa (not necessarily born in that order). She only went to Standard 3 at school, when, at aged 13, her father had her leave school to work on the farm. When she married Joe Kennedy, Jr. his family considered he was marrying beneath him, but Ella was hard working and a wonderful mother.

Joseph and Ella lived in Rosebank Road, Avondale and had a market garden. Ella worked many long, hard hours, picking and packing vegetables for the early morning market, to make a living for the family; through several pregnancy's, still coping with running a home, without any of today's modern conveniences. It is difficult to imagine the hardship of life this wonderful pioneering women endured, while her husband pursued his passion of entertaining, singing at clubs and dances in Auckland city and sleeping during the day. He sang in Maori and actually had a wax recording made in Australia, possibly under a Maori name. This wax record was at his sister Grace's home in later years, but its whereabouts is unknown.

Joseph Kennedy Jr. was a bit of a ladies man; a hard case by all accounts. He knew how to borrow and spend money and loved the good life and loved to follow the races.

The family moved to Coopers Beach, in Northland, where Ella farmed 80 acres of leased land with an old barn that the family first lived in, while Joseph Jr. went off to Auckland to sing and pursue a political career. When he was up at Coopers Beach Joseph often sang at local dances at Monganui. The family were not close to their father and had little respect for him once they were old enough to realize how badly he treated their beloved mother. That Joe Kennedy kept his family poor, is the general consensus. They mainly existed on a small War pension. Jo Claude recalled him visiting after they had the telephone put on and him calling Parliament 'collect' (receiver pays the call) to speak to the Prime Minister Frazer. In reality the citizens of New Zealand paid! Evidently Joseph Jr. wasn't much for work and he spent money freely. He stood for Parliament and she remembers him fund raising for his Independent party - the Liberal Labour Party - in Mt Albert, or maybe Mt Roskill.



The only known photograph of all the children of Joe and Ella Kennedy together.

Back left: Grace, Donald holding John and Bruce,

Front left: Josephine and Jean.

Courtesy of Jo Claude.

How we treasure the memories of carefree
childhood days when we were all together.



Back left: Grace,
Front left: Josephine
and Jean.
Courtesy of Jo Claude.



Above right.
Ella (nee Robinson) Kennedy.
Sheree Claude, Karen Claude,
baby Donna Claude. 1962:
Courtesy of Jo Claude.

Because of the lack of suitable secondary schooling near their farm, the older children gradually left home to stay with their father's family nearer main cities, to continue their education. Bruce to his grandmother Alice (Kennedy) now Brambly, attended Auckland Boys Grammar; Donny went to a family friend of Ella's to attend Seddon Technical College, working on their farm to pay for his keep. Jean lived at Hoetiniui with Alice and Jack Taylor, attending Morrinsville High school. Jean later married a local man and John stayed with her, also attending the same school. At four years of age, Grace went to live with Aunt Eva (nee Kennedy) and Sharrie Smith, in Waharoa. Only Josephine remained at home, struggling with her Correspondence schooling, until the day she was 16 years old when she left home to go nursing in Kaitia. Aunt, Rose Kennedy had TWO Grand pianos in her living room, a Steinway and a Crammer. She was renowned for her musical talent and ability to sight read music and sing.

Bruce, the eldest son of Joseph and Ella Kennedy, served in Italy, in World War 11, rising to 2nd Lieutenant. When most of the troops returned home, Bruce was deployed to Japan to help clean up the area after Hiroshima. He was treated on the trip home for an unknown tropical rash which failed to respond to treatment which was likely to have been the first sign of the Leukemia which was diagnosed on his return; a result of radioactive contamination. Sadly Bruce died in 1949, two years after returning home. He left a sum of money to his siblings in his Will. This bequest enabled his youngest sister, Jo Claude, to put a deposit on land and later build her own home for her family. Ella lived with her daughter for many years.

(John) Wallace Bond Kennedy married Sylvia Margaret Moore 18 February 1956
at the Church of England Cathedral, Auckland. Separated 1959.
Children: Pamela Sylvia Kennedy born on 16 January 1957
Pauline Audrey Kennedy on 02 March 1958.

(John) Wallace Bond married Mary....
Child: Bruce Kennedy

(John) Wallace Bond Kennedy died 8th November 2014.



Left: Lieutenant Bruce Bond
Kennedy.
Courtesy of Jo Claude.

Bottom right:
Bruce Bond Kennedy.
Courtesy of Rosemary Orr.

Bottom left:
Walking stick carved
by William (Buster) Hastie.



Grace Kennedy married William Buster Hastie and his hobby in later years, after taking a course on craft, was carving Maori artefacts. It may be helpful to clarify any confusion, which may arise in years to come, as descendants of the Hastie family puzzle over the origin of the many beautiful Maori carvings passed down by William (Buster) Hastie, who is presently in his 90's. He has kindly given permission that we record them here. These were all carved by W. Hastie himself, with the exception of a few he purchased, including the rare tattooing tool shown previously. They are a testimony to his patience, skill and creativity. The top of the Taiaha, carved from Manuka, can be seen on the left, beside various figures **all carved by William (Buster) Hastie.**



An intricately carved Wakahuia, from Totoro wood, by W. Hastie. He also carved a three legged table of white Totoro and a Mere from swamp wood (not shown).



A sideways, full length view of the Taiaha, carved from Manuka, by W. Hastie.



The little bone carvings were made from Ox shin bone. The Tiki was bought (as were the adzes, not shown).
Courtesy of Buster Hastie.

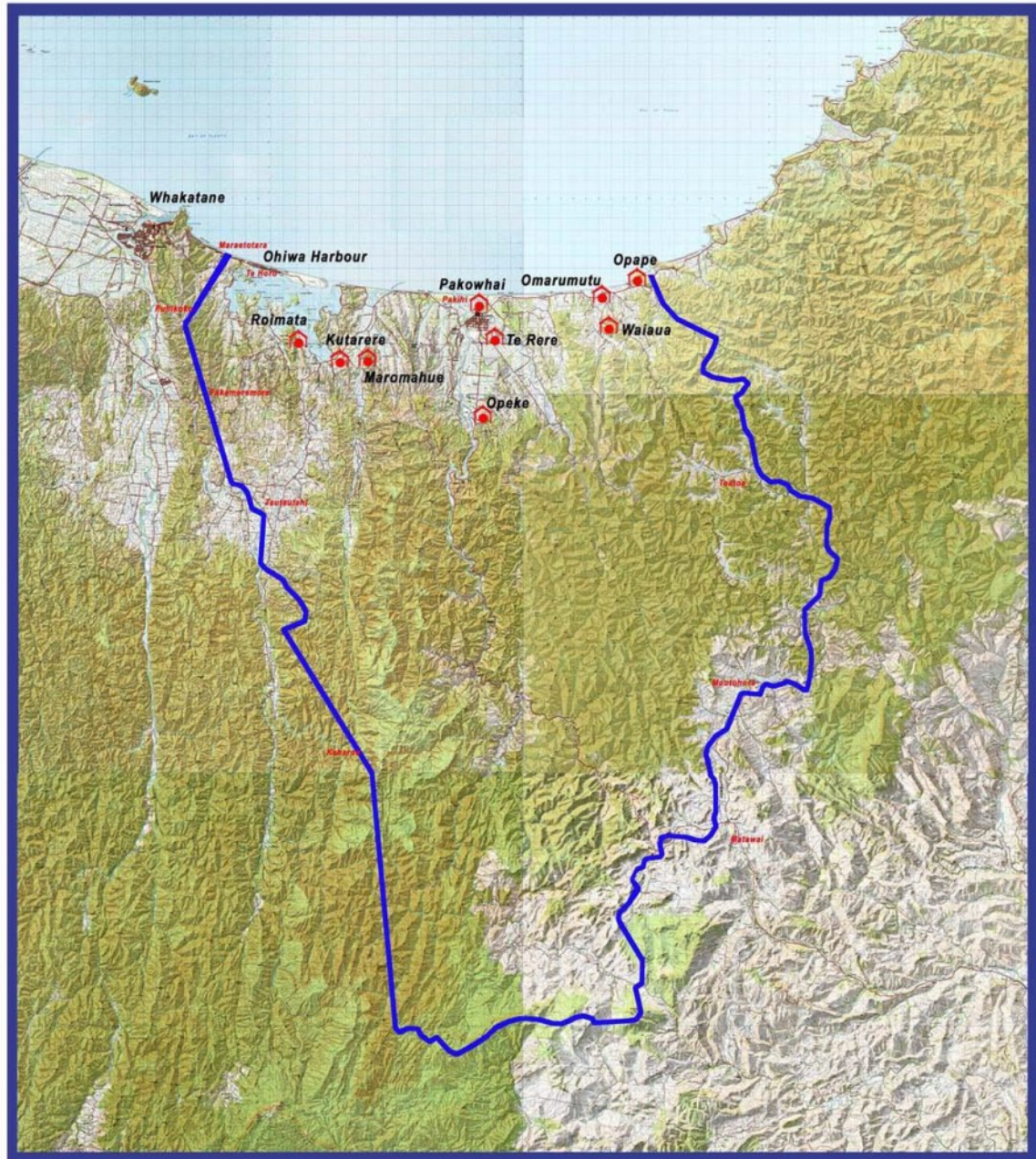


William David Hastie.
Father of
(William) Buster Hastie.
Courtesy of Buster Hastie.

Marguerite Ruby (Dot) McKenzie.
Aged 15 years.
Mother of (William) Buster Hastie,
the son in law of Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr.
Courtesy of Buster Hastie.



WHAKAPAPA
Maori Lineage
and
European Lineage
Respectfully complied by Dion Tilley



KEY



Whakatohea Marae

**BOFFA
MISKELL**
planning • design • ecology



Scale 1:150 000(A1)
1:300 000 (A3)

Whakatohea Rohe and Marae

Ancestors

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

Ancestors of Joseph Bond Kennedy - Maui
Ancestors of Matarena Waitangi - Paikea (part 1)
Ancestors of Matarena Waitangi - Paikea (part 2)
Ancestors of Apanui
Arthur Saunders Thomson
Hannah Bond Kennedy - Williams-Barrington (part 1)
Hannah Bond Kennedy - Williams-Barrington - Greig (part 12)
Choveaux (part 1)
Choveaux (part 2)
Choveaux (part 3)
Choveaux (part 4)
Esq John Smyth 1422 direct lineage to Annie Fry Smith 1856
Gundry and connections with Wirepa - Apanui - Hudson - Matchitt - Kennedy
John Kennedy from Kennedy's Bay Scottish ancestors
Litchfield - Maupunaru
John Walker - Captain Thomas Popplewell - Maupunaru
Kateruri Takoto - Gundry - Matchitt
King Hugues 'de France' Capet 9 - James Reed (Part 1)
King Hugues 'de France' Capet 9 - James Reed (Part 2)
King Hugues 'de France' Capet 9 - James Reed & Ekaumoenga (Part 3)
Matarena Waitangi - Kennedy - Choveaux - Tilley
Maori Lineage Of Matarena & Rangirauwaka
Maui Tiki Kupe to Toi
Ngāhiraka - Harriet - Alexander Teece Smith
Ngāhiraka - Harriet - (Eric) Trevor Smith
Ngāhiraka - Maupunaru - Kateruri - Kawaiho
Ngapuhi - Gundry
Ngati Porou - Whanau Apanui - Whakatohea - Kahungunu
Paikea - Huturangi - Rangitane Tribe
Starr Wood - Ngahiraka - Choveaux
Tainui waka
Taritoronga - Te Owai - Walker
Toi - Kennedy
Tuhoe and Upokorehe Whakapapa Toi
Tuhoe Toi Muriwai
William Wood - Ngahiraka

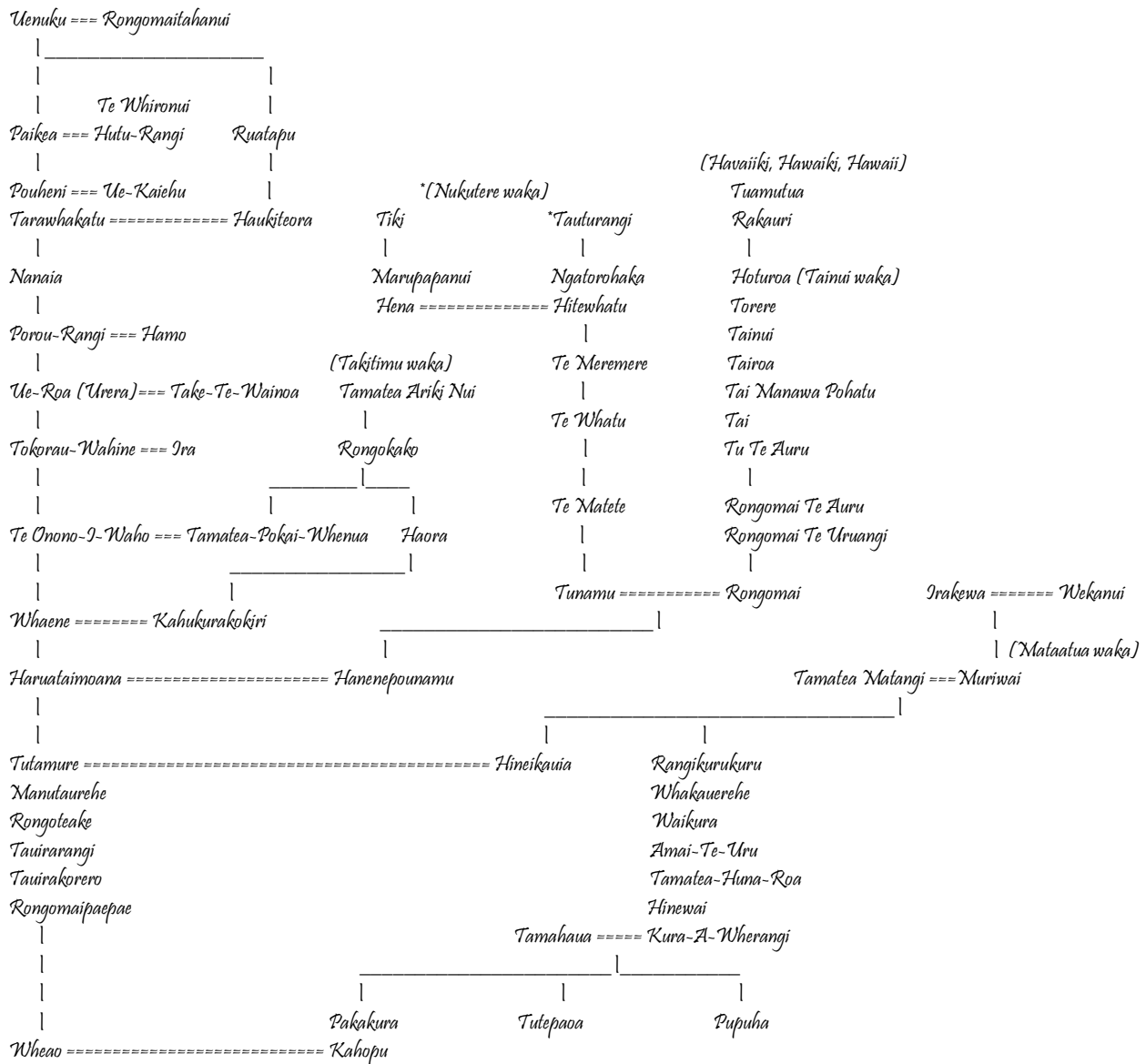
SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ancestors of John Bond Kennedy – Maui

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

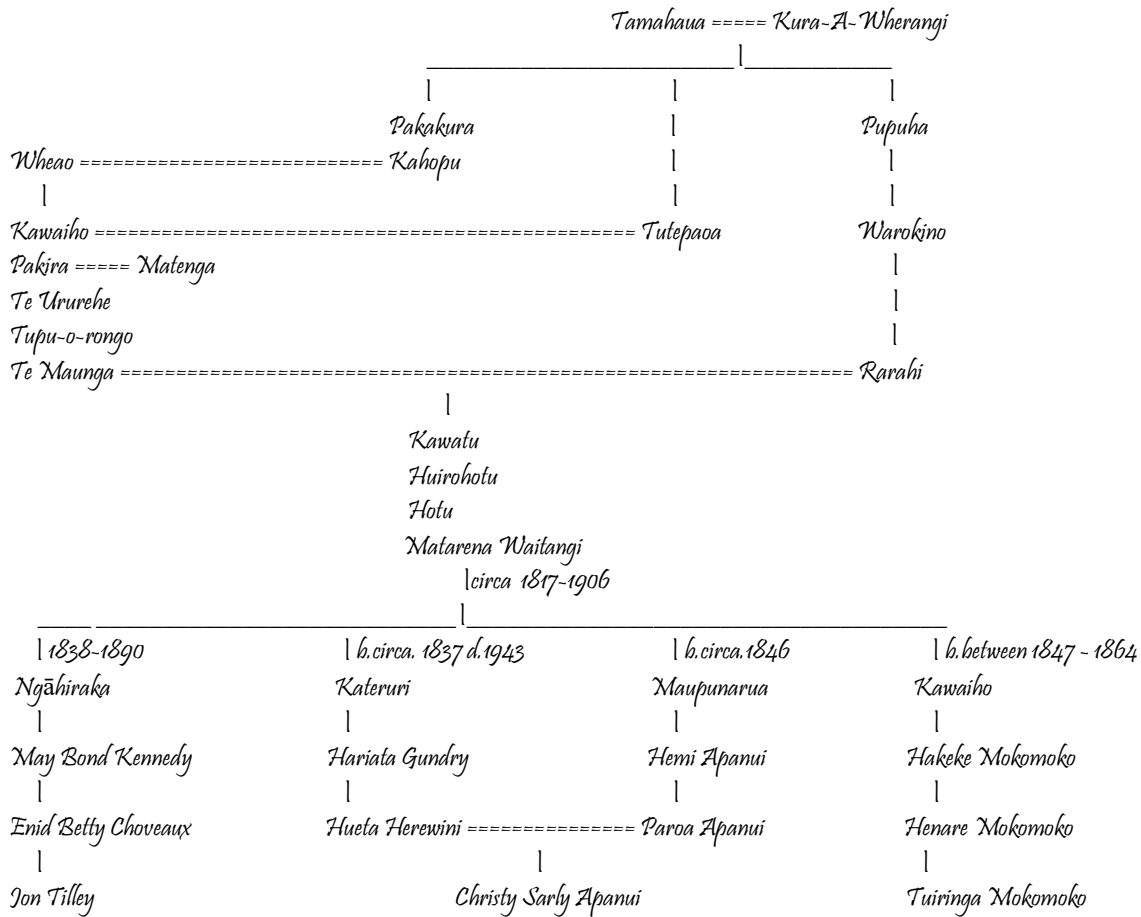
Maui-Tikitiki-O-Taranga (Maui-mua) (Havaiiki, later known as Hawaii)



*Ancestors of Matarena Waitangi – Paikea (part 1)**Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley*

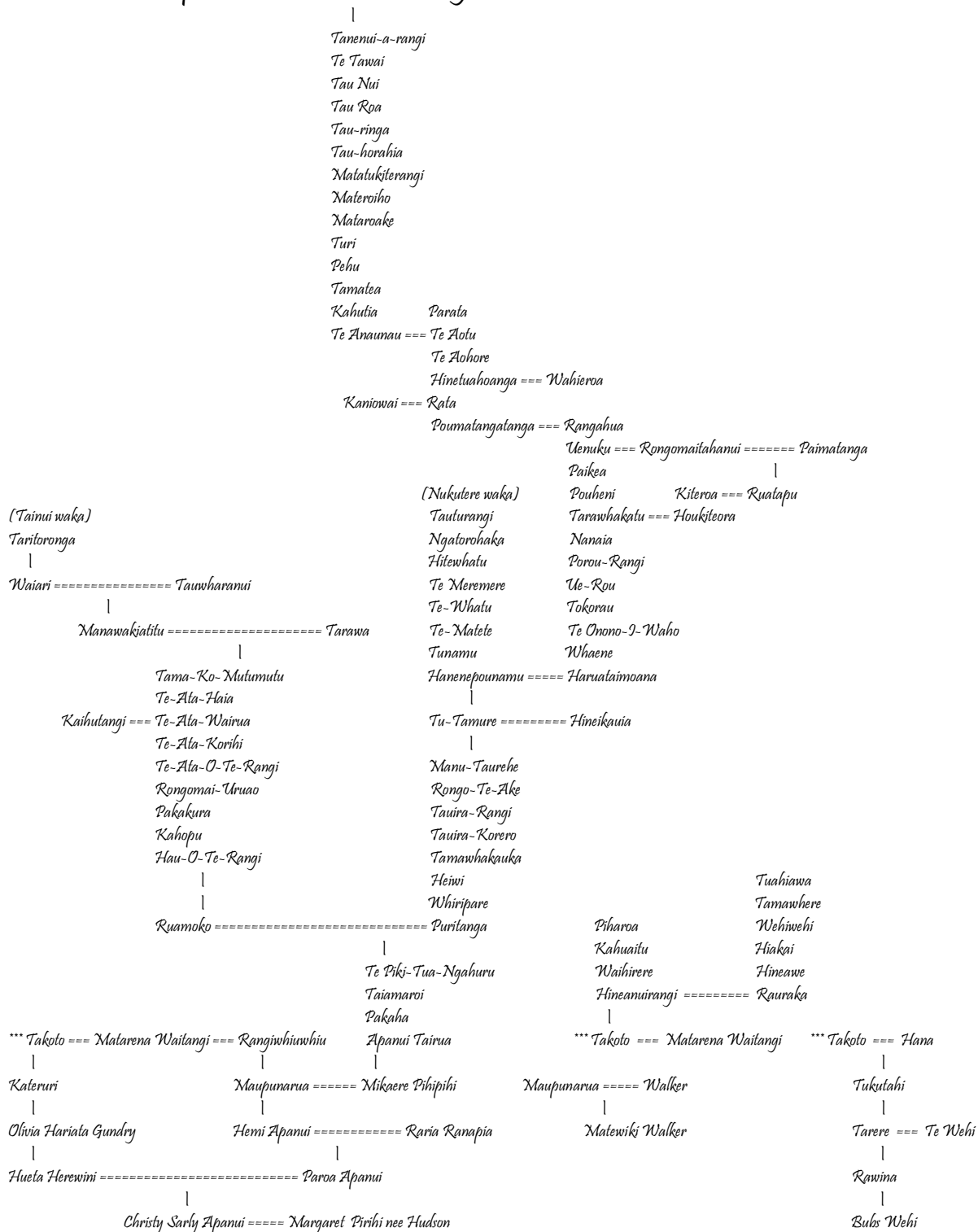
Ancestors of Matarena Waitangi - Paikea (part 2)

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Ancestors of Apanui
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

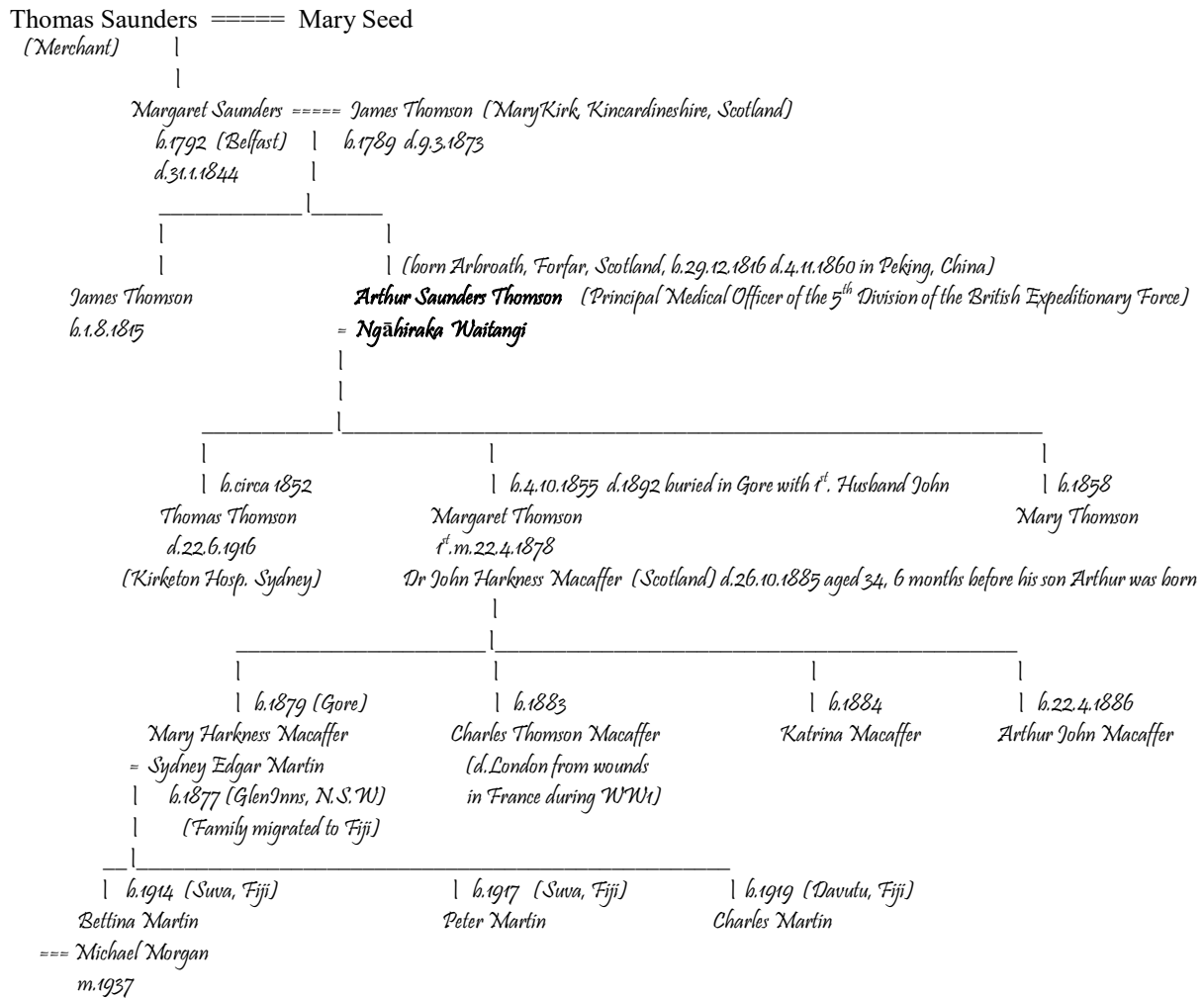
Papatuanuku ===== Ranginui-a-tamaka



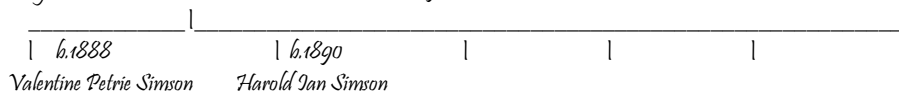
SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Arthur Saunders Thomson

Compiled by Dion Tilley from information supplied by Verity Baylis 2012



Margaret Thomson 2nd.m. Ian Simson Simson m.18.9.1886



Ian Simson Simson 2nd.m. Esther Parker m.1897



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Alfred Herbert Williams - (husband of Hannah Bond Kennedy). PART 1.

Compiled by Jill Kemp from information supplied by Samantha Barrington

Robert Jones == Sarah Baker

1771-1849 m. 1800 Halse Somerset 1771-1853
Merchant | 1841 Water Bridge Somerset 2 female servants

James Crook == Ann Tucker

|
John Crook == Mary Furnell

Ambrose Williams == Elizabeth (Betty) West
1754-1828 Lullington 1759-1835 1771-1845 m. 1797 Lullington 1766-1849
m. 27.12.1784 Frome 1841 Census at White Hart Inn (Stone Mason)

Isaac Williams == Mary Ann Crook
95-1849 b. 1799
m. Stone Mason. 1818 All Saints church Lullington Somerset

Daniel Cross == Sarah Jones (heiress)
795-1874 m. 1843 at Countess of Huntingtons Chapel Bath b. 1806 Halse, Somerset.
Publican Rummer Tavern Bath Publican
d. 1874 80 years Bathwick 1871 Census: Nurse and Porter

Joseph Ambrose Williams = Elizabeth Cross
1820-1859 Lullington Somerset m. 1844 Anglican b. 1818
Painter employing 3 men +1 apprentice Milliner & Dressmaker

Francis Marchant == Elizabeth Clark
b. 1801 m. 1824 Walcot, Bath b. 1798
Census. 1841 Game Keeper Monkton d. 2.1867
Lyncombe Widcombe St. James

John Bond Kennedy == Rangirauwaka / Kateraina Taurangi of the Upokorehe tribe

Joseph Bond Kennedy == Ngahiraka Wood / t. Dr. A.S. Thomson
b. 1842 (Kennedy's Bay).

Charles Ambrose Williams == Elizabeth Marchant
1845 Bath m. Frome 1867 b. 1839 Lower Monk St. Monkton Fairleigh Wiltshire
Farmer Westfield Farm, Bloomfield Rd, Lyncombe,
Donated Moses Pickwick's Clock to Dickens Museum before sons emigrated

Edward Bond b. 8.8.1868
Harriet Bond b. 1872 d. 1948
Margaret b. 1874 d. 22.2.1952
Kate 26.3.1876 d. 27th Dec. 1874 aged 2 mths.
May Bond (Maria) b. circa 1874 d. 1942 Wairoa N.Z. 1942

Hannah Bond == Alfred Herbert Williams
b. 1880 (m. 13.3.1910 b. 1873 (Westfield Farm, Bath, England)
d. 1957 d. 21.6.1937

Elizabeth Ada Bond Williams == Greig Barrington (Barry)
b. 2.7.1910 in Sydney m. 5.6.1939 b. 1913 Parramatta Sydney
d. 13.3.1976 welder & motor mechanic
d. 13.3.1972

Judith Bond Barrington == t. Gary Bartlett

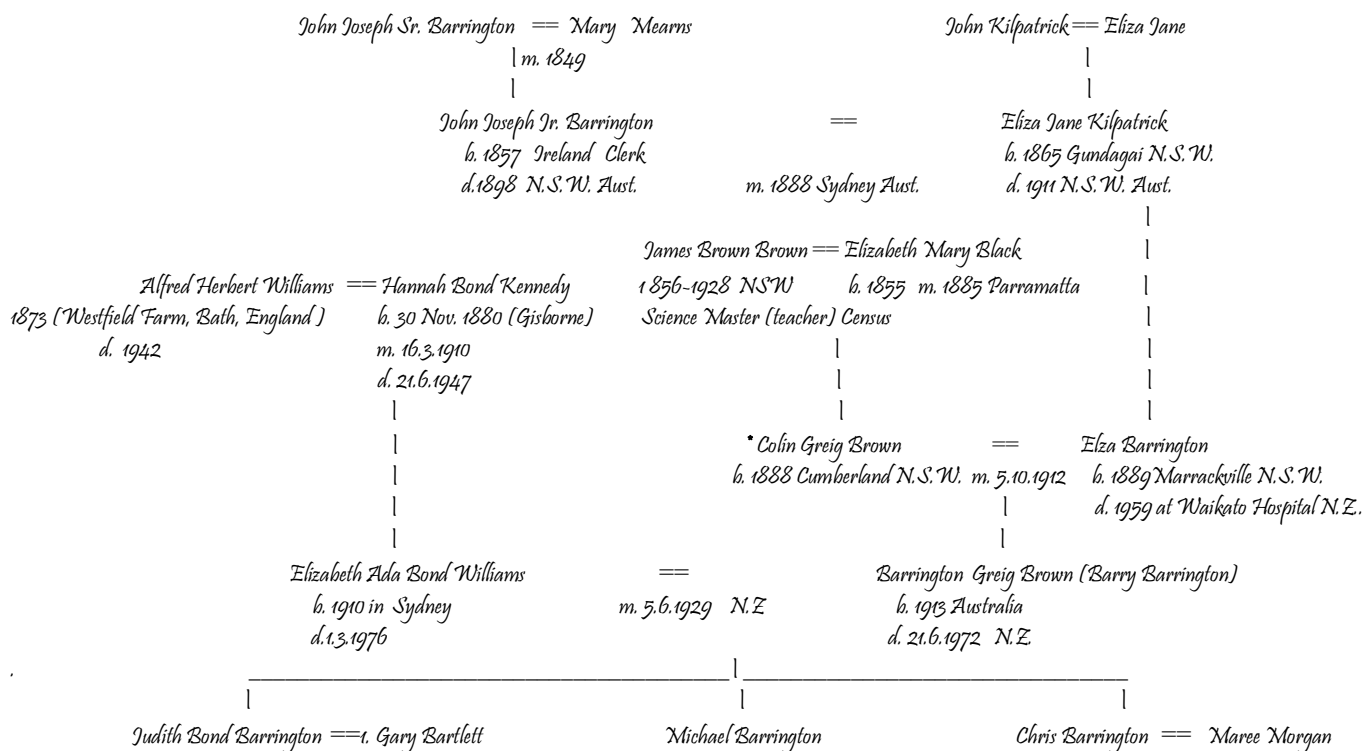
Michael Barrington

Chris Barrington == Maree Morgan

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Alfred Herbert Williams (husband of Hannah Bond Kennedy), Brown and Barrington - PART 2

Compiled by Jill Kemp from information supplied by Samantha Barrington.



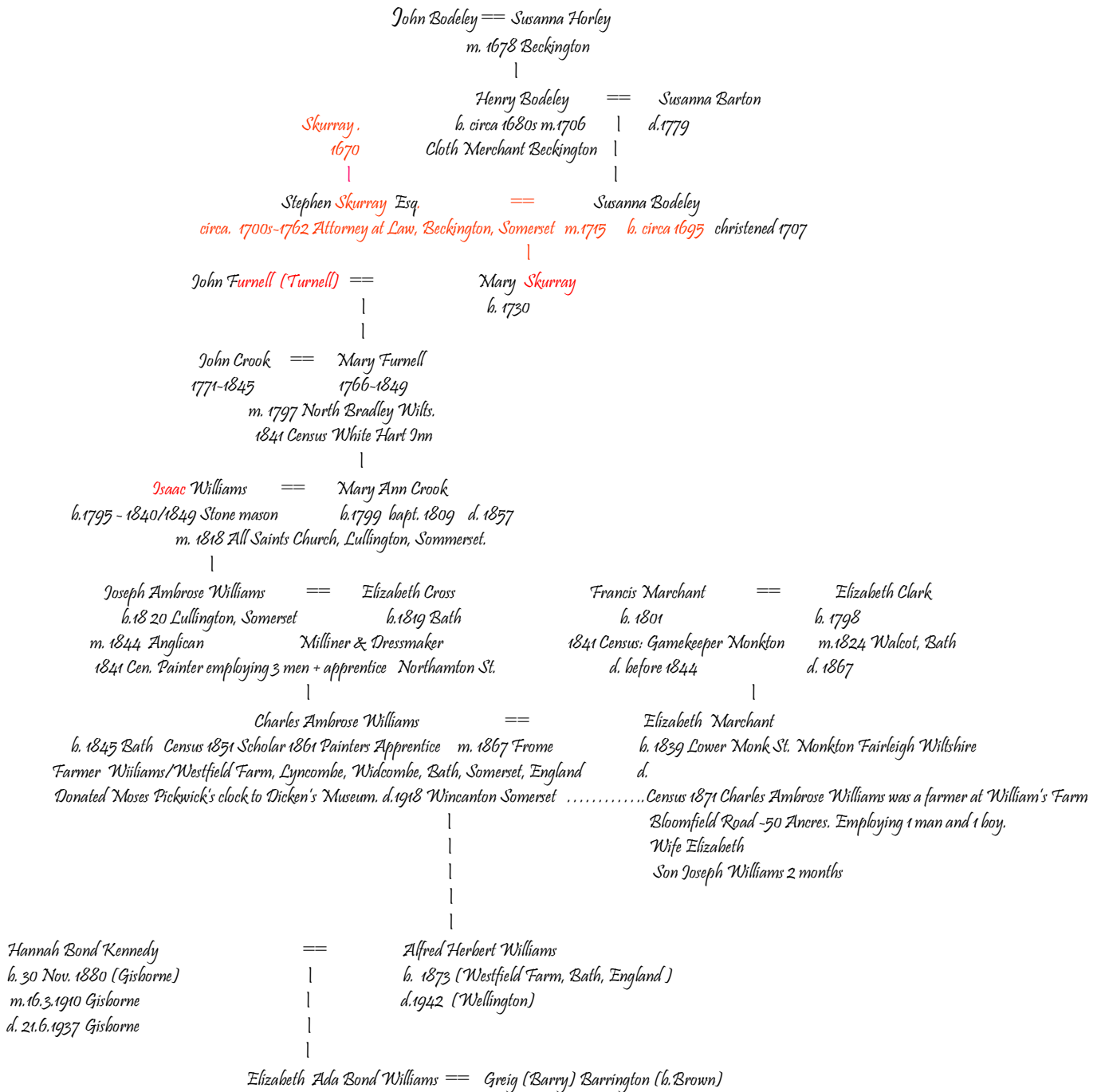
Colin Greig Brown 18.6.1916
W. W. i. Engineer in 7th A.L.H.
Address: College St. Stockton, New Castle N.S.W.
Embarked on "ASCAVIUS" 25.10.1916

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Alfred Herbert Williams (husband of Hannah Bond Kennedy) PART 3.

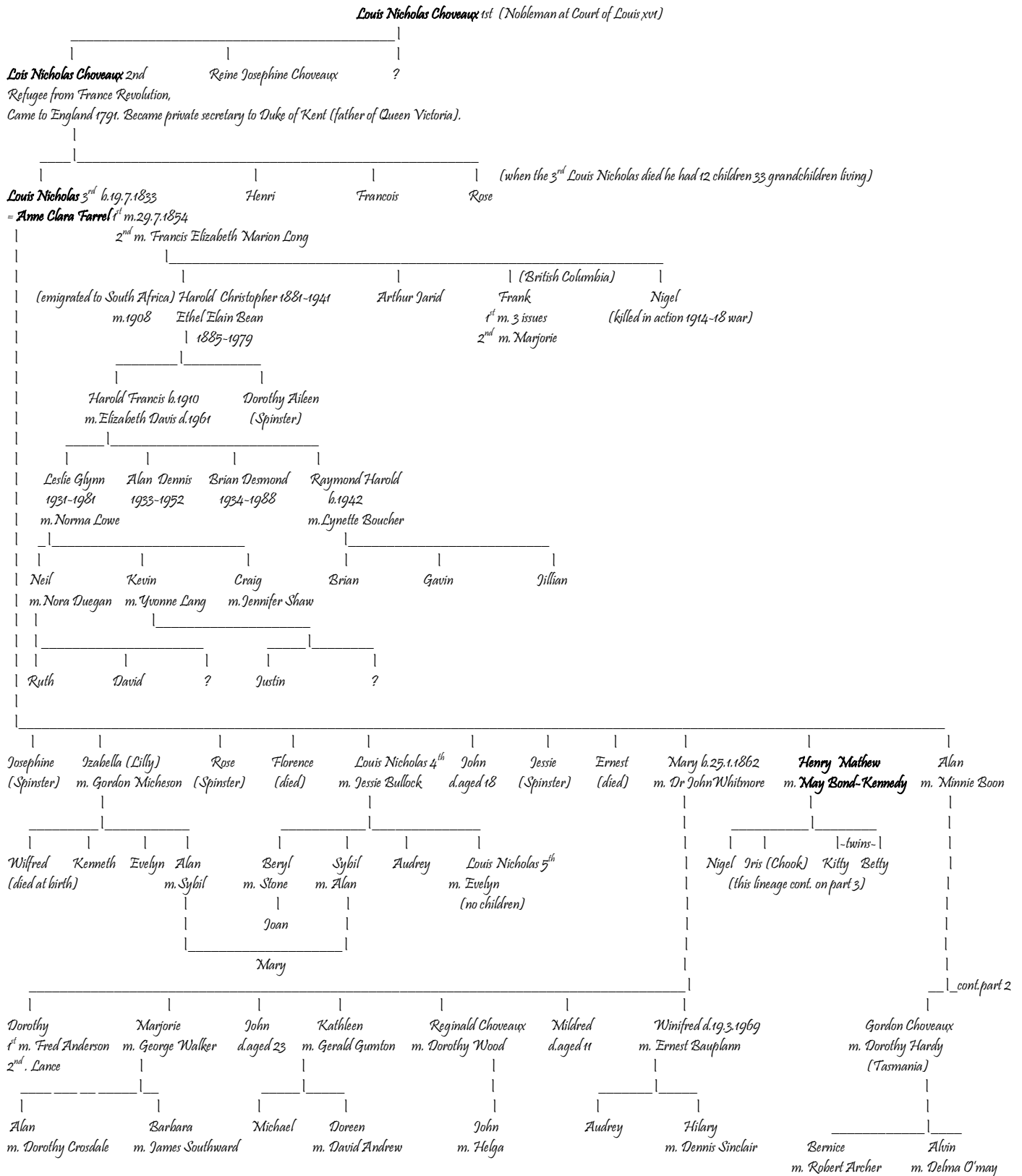
Skurray ancestors of Beckington, Somerset, England.

Compiled by Jill Kemp from information supplied by Samantha Barrington

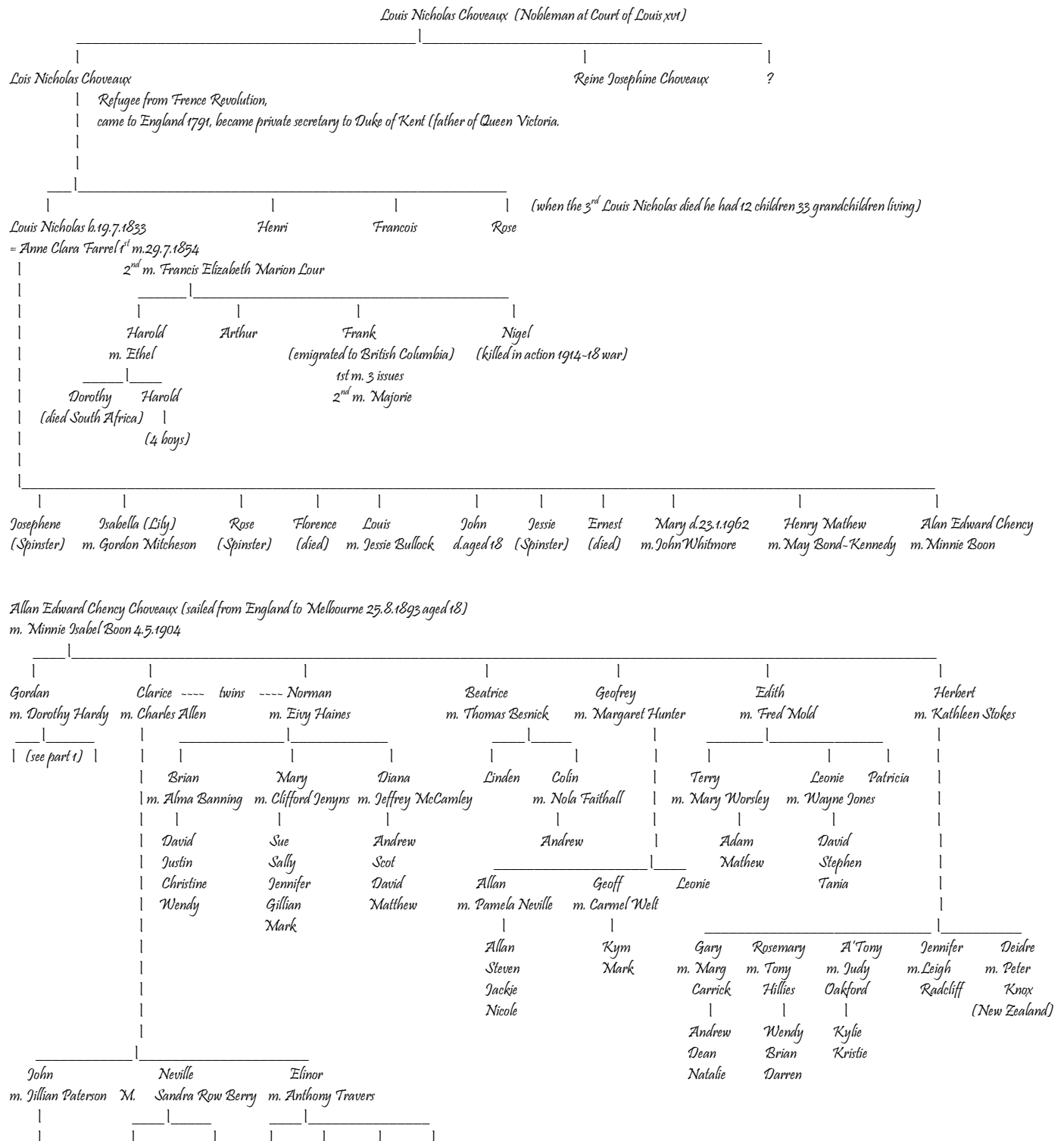


Names in red are from the tree compiled by John Rowland Ambrose Williams in 1948 and need more research as I have been unable to find relevant records. Jill Kemp 2019.

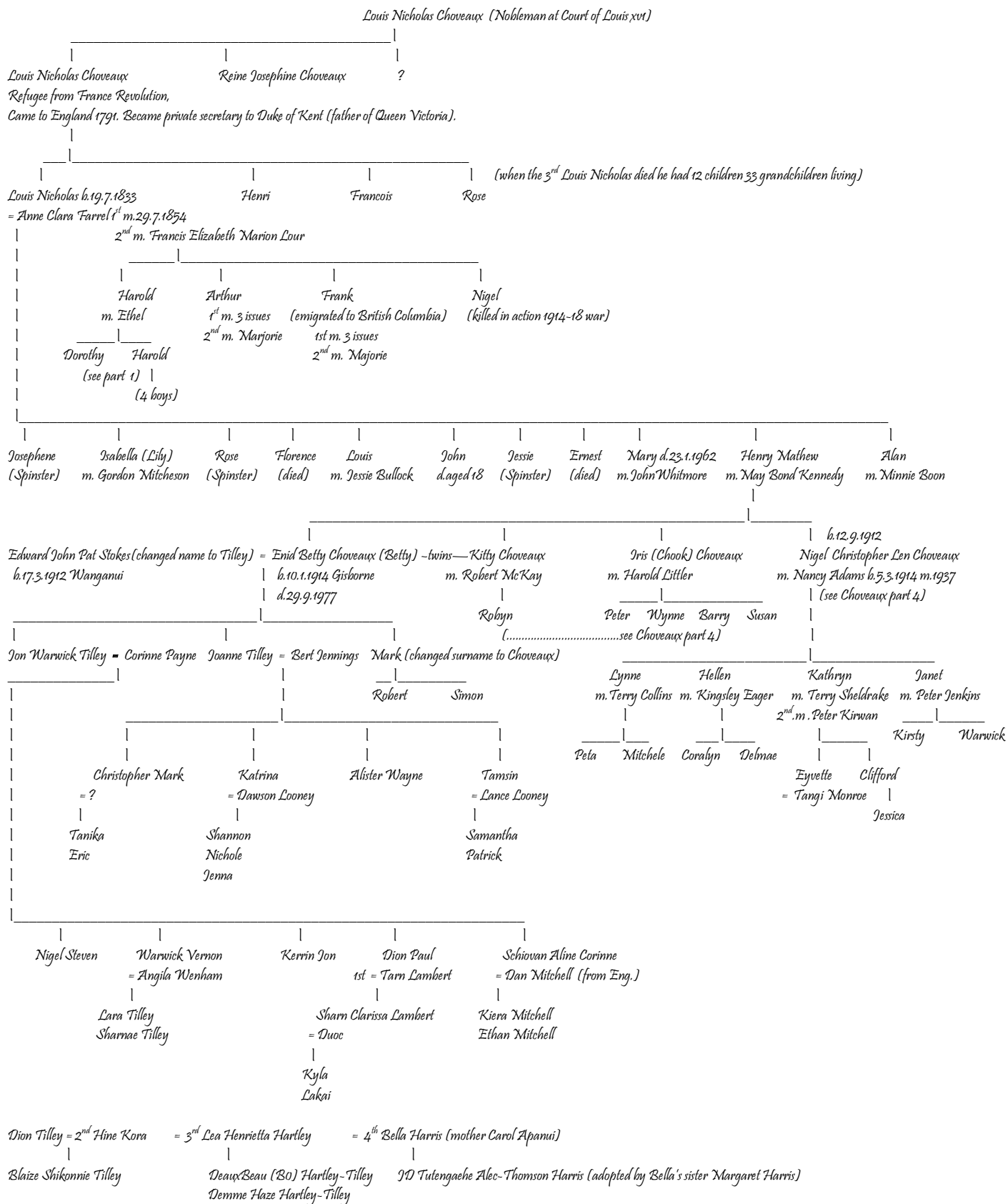
Choveaux part 1
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



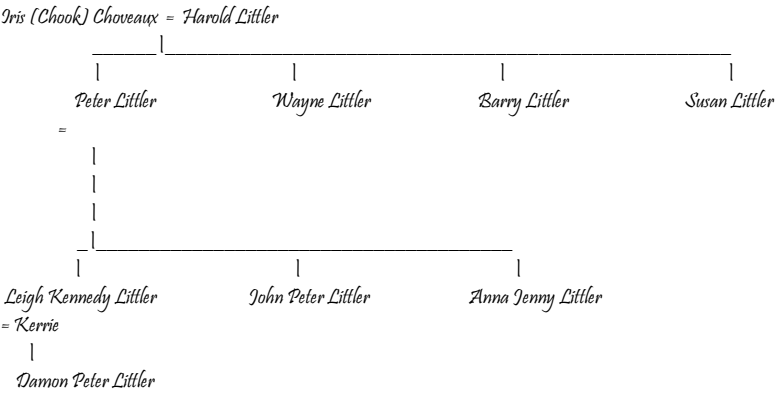
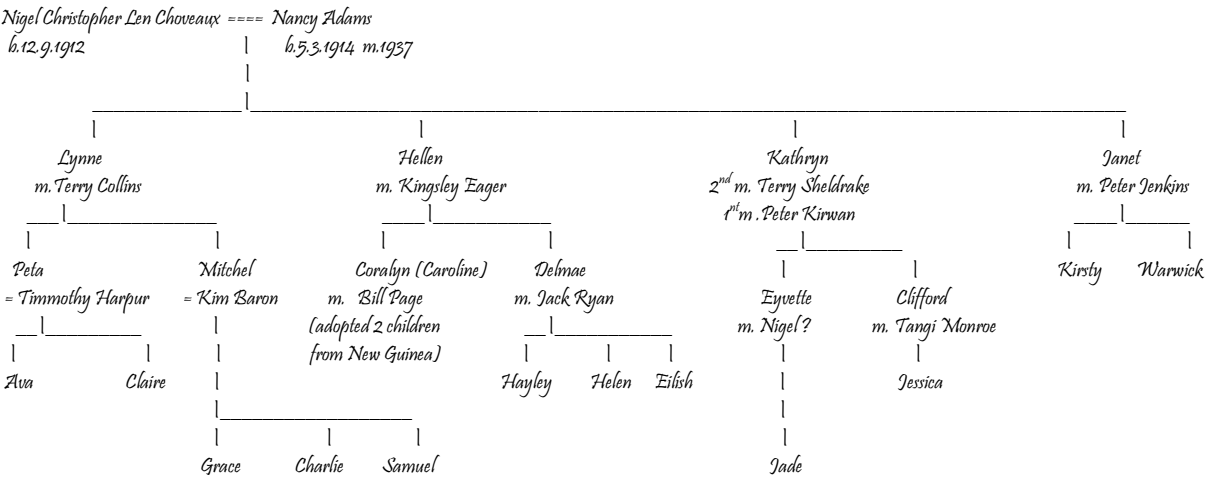
Choveaux part 2
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Choveaux part 3
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Choveaux part 4
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Gundry and connections with WiRepa Apanui Hudson Matchitt Kennedy

Humphrey Gundry of Rampisham, Wiltshire, England, buried 5.2.1596

John Gundry b.circa 1620 *Note, John Gundry as son of Humphrey, does not exist in some Gundry lineages.

James Gundry of Eversholt Carrier (5 other sons and 2 daughters), will dated 19.2.1644, will probated 17.5.1654

John Gundry ===== Mary

Clothier		d.8.3.1718
will dated 12.8.1689		will dated 4.2.1715
will probated 10.8.1690		will probated 22.11.1732
_____ (3 other sons and 3 daughters)		

William Gundry ===== Jane Harris (1 other son & 2 daughters)

(Grocer from Chard)		(from Goatacre, daughter of John & Jane)
Buried 24.11.1703		b.11.3.1671 d.8.10.1719

Mary Rose =====^{1st}m===== John Gundry =====^{2nd}m===== Joan Fry (5 sons 2 daughters)

(from Devizes)		(Woolstraper of Devizes)		(from Calstone, daughter of Henry & Hannah)
(daughter of Thomas & Mary)		b.1.3.1697		m.17.3.1727 d.29.9.1755
(m.25.12.1721, 1 son 2 daughters)		d.14.9.1761		

Te Rau Talara Mere ===== Tom Wilson

b.circa.1840		b.circa.1836
(Kawhia)		(Kawhia)

Peter Gundry ===== Sarah Seager

(of Quemerford)		(of Calne) b.4.3.1743
b.17.8.1743		m.24.11.1765
d.4.3.1808		d.30.9.1809
_____ (8 other sons & 5 daughters)		

Ellen Kawharu Wilson ===== William Wade

b.circa.1862 (Kawhia)	
d.5.11.1943 (Mangere, Ak)	

***Alice Wade

Peter Gundry ===== Mary Hickley (daughter of Richard & Mary)

(of Devizes)		(of Averbury, Wiltshire)
b.25.8.1780		m.13.5.1826
d.5.11.1844		d.14.5.1846
_____ (5 other sons & 2 daughters)		

Helen Waters =====^{1st}m===== William Richard Gundry =====^{2nd}m===== Makareta (Margaret) Raulangi b.circa.1821 (Hokianga)

m.25.10.1838		b.1.7.1814		m.13.5.1851 (Auckland) d.24.8.1860 (Rotorua)
d.17.5.1839		d.20.12.1855		

Cheif Takoto ==^{2nd}m== Matarena Waitangi =====^{1st}m===== Comm. James Wood

Ngahiraka ===== Capt. Joseph Bond **Kennedy**

Helen Mary Anne Gundry ===== Francis Young

b.17.4.1847 (Auckland)	
m.12.10.1864 (Auckland)	
d.18.7.1891	

Capt. William John **Gundry** =====^{1st}m===== Kateruri (Katerina) Takoto ==^{2nd}m===== George **Matchitt**

b.23.1.1842 d.16.3.1877		b.circa.1834 d.26.8.1940
m.11.2.1865		George Matchitt Inn.

Ernest Edward Young

== Louisa Nabbs

Kate Young

== Thomas Whitefield

Arthur Lakolo Gundry ===== ***Alice Wade (see above)

b.23.6.1884		b.1Jan.1883 m.5.6.1900
d.23.5.1968		d.22.11.1958

Hariata Gundry ===== Herewini

Mary Gundry ===== Romeo **WiRepa**

m.1923		b.1894
b.9.7.1904		d.1969
d.31.7.1971		

Huela Aneko (Kaioia) Herewini ===== Paroa **Apanui**

(4 others sons & 7

- Edward WiRepa
- Arthur WiRepa
- Rose Connell
- Kathleen
- Richard WiRepa
- Ivan WiRepa
- Marie
- Peter WiRepa
- Paul WiRepa
- Alice Higgins

Christy Sarly Apanui ===== Margaret Pirihī (nee. **Hudson**)

b.1928

Tommy Apanui

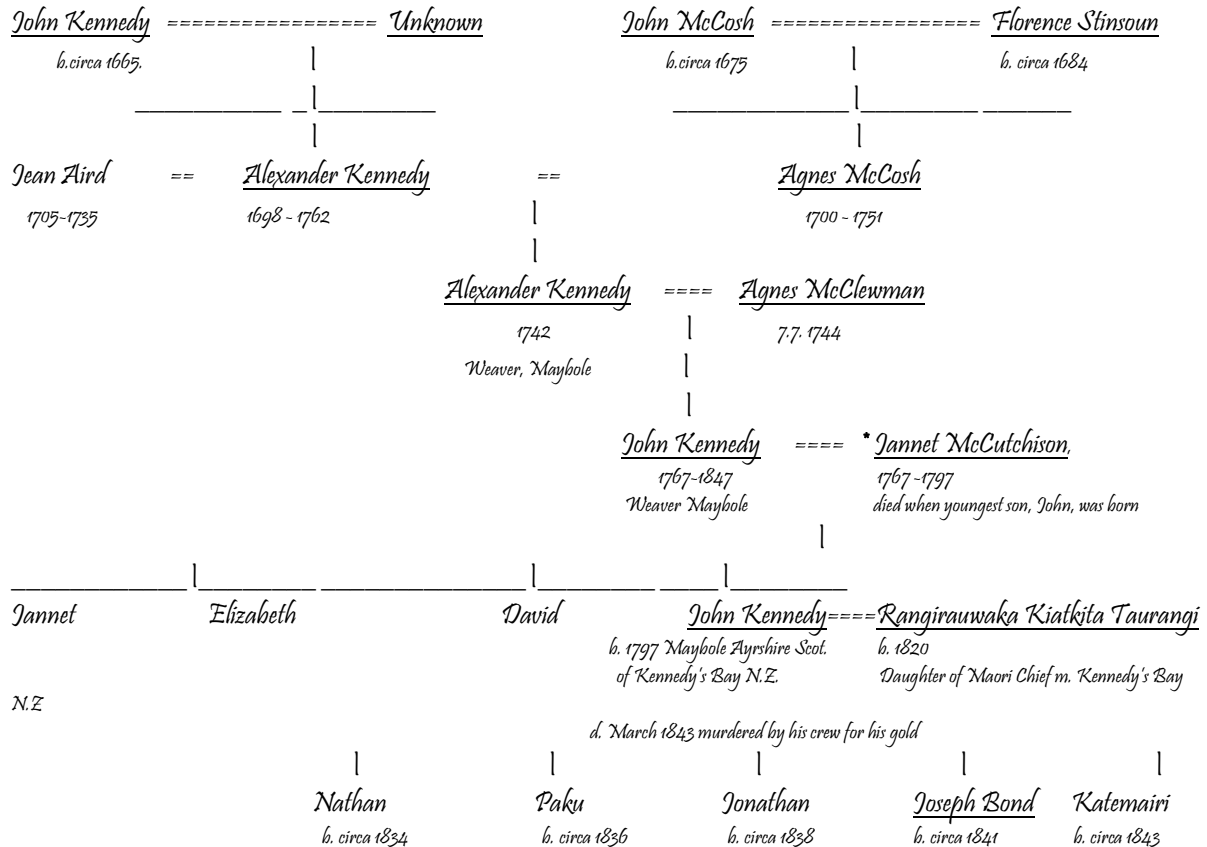
Carol Apanui ===== Michael Harris

Michael		Selena		Margaret (Mags)		Bella Harris == Dion Tilley
---------	--	--------	--	-----------------	--	-----------------------------

JD Harris (whanai by Auntie Mags)

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

*John Kennedy of Kennedy's Bay New Zealand Ancestry.
He was born in Maybole, Ayrshire, Scotland and his ancestors came from the surrounding villages.
He descends from the Kennedy Clan. His mother died when he was born.
Most of his immediate ancestors where Cotton Weavers.
Compiled by Jill Kemp with the assistance of Liz Koh.*



- Jannet McCutchison's half sister, Margaret McCutchison, married Rev David Kennedy of Kirkmichael, the parents of Alexander the bachelor Banker N.Z., with who Joseph Bond Kennedy lived, until he ran away to sea aged 9 years.
- NO BOND name in family. It may have been someone who looked after John Kennedy when he was orphaned at birth, or someone who mentored him and whom he was very fond of.
- John Kennedy may even have had a wife before coming to New Zealand, in 1833, aged about 36 years.

Litchfield - Maupunaru
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

John Litchfield ===== *Susannah Lymbery*

b.circa. 11.3.1789 (Radford, Nottingham) | *b.circa.1784 (Kill St, Nicholas, Waterford, Ireland)*
(Needle Maker) |

| | |
 3. *James Gregory Litchfield* 2. *Elizabeth Litchfield* ***1. *John Thomas Litchfield* ===1st.m=== *Elizabeth Dakeyne (Daykene)*
Bap.31.5.1818 (Radford) *d.4.3.1893 aged 76* *b.bef.11.4.1813 (Radford) d.12.3.1863* | *b.circa.24.12.1809 m.24.12.1834 (St Mary's Nottingham)*
 | *d.20.3.1837*
 |
John Dakeyne Litchfield *b.29.11.1835 (Glasshouse Street, Nottingham)*
d.1862

Rev. Samuel Hatch

****John Thomas Litchfield* ===2nd.m=== *Elizabeth Mayn Hatch*

b.bef.11.4.1813 | *b.circa.1817 (Banbury, Oxfordshire)*
d.12.3.1863 | *m.26.4.1838 (Emigrated to N.Z. in 1860's after John her husband died)*
 | *d.1893*

Matarena Waitangi ===== *Takoto Waimua*

| |
Emma Mayne Litchfield
b.circa.1839
d.25.5.1917 (Auckland)

| |
Jane Litchfield
b.24.5.1847
m.17.1.1870 (Auckland, N.Z.)
d.22.11.1885 (Fitzroy, New Plymouth, N.Z.)
 === *Edward Stanley Brooks (Jr)*

| |
Charles Daykin Litchfield ===== *Maupunaru*
b.21.11.1843 (Radford) |
 |
 |
 |
Charles Tangatahuia Litchfield
b.1868 d.1.2.1884

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

Ngahiraka Tame Tio Maria Rori Haimona Wairata Peata Tonia Kapara Mihikore Hawera Tairua Kapara

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

A horizontal timeline from 1700 to 1850. The timeline is marked with vertical lines at 10-year intervals. The names of the Gundry family members are placed below the timeline at specific years: William Gundry (1700), (Pani) Helena Gundry (1725), Hariata Gundry (1750), John Gundry (1775), and Arthur Gundry (1850).

Year	Family Member
1700	William Gundry
1725	(Pani) Helena Gundry
1750	Hariata Gundry
1775	John Gundry
1850	Arthur Gundry

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc}
 & & & & \text{Haara Roihana} === \text{Paora Kingi} & & \text{Tapeka Jones} === \text{Te Papuni} \\
 & & & & | & & | \\
 & & 2^{\text{nd}}.m & & \text{Rapata Kingi} ===== & & \text{Merekorara Papuni} \\
 & & | & & | & & \\
 \text{Kateruri Kaneri Takoto (Gundary)} === \text{George Phillips Matchitt} & & & & & & \\
 & & | & & & & \\
 \text{Hori (George) Matchitt (jnr)} ===== & & & & \text{Hera Kingi} & & \\
 & & & & | & & \\
 \text{Robert Hubert Matchitt} & & \text{Leona Teipo Selwyn} & & \text{George Phillip Matchitt} & & \text{Edward Matchitt}
 \end{array}$$

Pani (Helena) Gundry ===== *Christy Warren*

|

| | | | |

Arthur Warren *Rongo Warren* *Ameila Warren* *Peter Warren* *Tihi Harris (m) no issue*

Hariata Gundry ===== Herewini

|

|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|-----|

| | | | | | | |

Wiuremu Pura (Arapera Patrick) Hueta (Kaiaora) Mekameka Moana Tamihana Kioki Miriamama

Wiri Gundry ----- Kaneri

|

|-----|-----|-----|

Tupato Kaneri Jack Kaneri Henari Kaneri Rangivawai Kaneri

Arthur Gundry ===== Alice Wade
|

| |
Mary Wirepa Arthur Gundry

*KING HUGUES 'de France' CAPET 9**Part.1**King Hugues 'de France' Capet 9**m. 968 Adelheid de Poitou*

|

*Adele de France**m.1029 Renaud de Nevers*

|

*Alix ou Adelaide de Nevers**m. Geoffroi 99 de Semur*

|

*Geoffroi 999 de Semur**m.1072 Hermengarde de Semur*

|

*Raingarde de Semur-en-Auxois**m.1083 Pierre- Mauice 1er de Montboissier*

|

*Eustache 1er de Montboissier**m. Héraclee de Polignac*

|

*Héracle Maurice 1er de Montboissier**m. Marguerite d'Oliergues*

|

*Eustache 99 de Montboissier**m.1226 Marguerite de Meymont*

|

*Eustache 999 de Montboissier**m. 1304 Thiburge Adhémar-de-Monteil (m.before 13.5.1304)*

|

*Héraclius 99 de Montboissier**m.1307 Agnès de Chastel-Perron*

|

*Jean 1er de Montboissier**m.1340 Jeanne de Flotte*

|

*Louis 1er de Montboissier**m.22.10.1355 Marthe de La Roche de Tournoelle*

|

*Pierre 99 de Montboissier**m.1425 Jeanne de Châtillon-Sur-Marne*

|

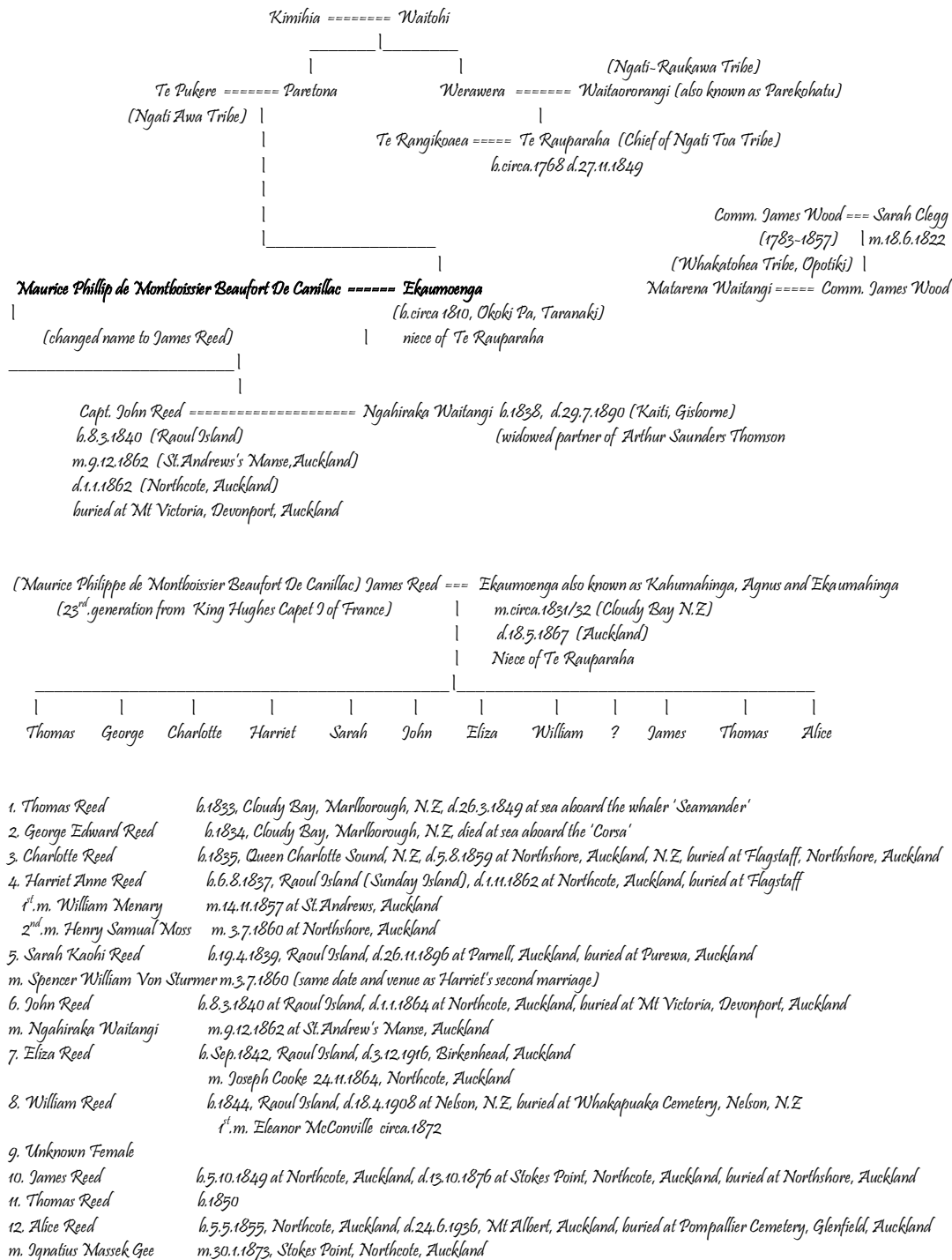
*Jean 999 de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac**m.4.7.1459 Isabeau Rogier de Beaufort-Canillac*

KING HUGUES 'de France' CAPET 9

Part.2

Jean III de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.4.7.1459 Isabeau Rogier de Beaufort-Canillac
 |
 Jean IV de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.18.8.1483 Marguerite de Vienne-Listenois
 |
 Jacques-Louis de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.17.11.1536 Gabrielle-Charlotte de Vienne
 |
 Jean V de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.5.7.1562 Jeanne de Maulmont
 |
 Jean Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.11.12.1592 Gabrielle de Dienne
 |
 Phillippe de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.1646 Marie d'Alegre de Beauvoir
 |
 Jean Gaspard de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m. Marie Claire d'Estaing
 |
 Phillippe Claude I de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m.8.6.1711 Marie Anne Genevieve de Maille Breze b.1674 d.1765
 |
 b.1712 Phillippe Claude II de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 d.21.3.1797 Buried at St. Prancas London
 2nd.m.26.2.1763 Francoise 'Alexandrine' Camille de Rochechouart
 b.23.1.1741 at Fort St. Pierre in Martinique and died in Paris 19.1.1829
 |
 b.1772 Maurice Phillippe de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 m. unknown
 |
 Maurice Phillippe de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac
 Changed name to James Reed
 m.circa.1831-32 Ekaumoenga (Maori chiefs daughter from Cloudy Bay N.Z.)
 (also known as Kahumahinga, Agnus & Ekaumahinga)
 | b.circa 1810 Okoki pa, Taranaki d.18.5.1867 Northcote
 |
 Capt. John Reed
 b.8.5.1840 (Sunday (Raoul) Island) d.1.1.1862 (Stokes Point)
 m.9.12.1862 Ngahiraka Waitangi d.29.7.1890 aged 48 Kaiti, Gisbourne
 (widowed partner of Arthur Saunders Thomson)

Maurice Philippe de Montboissier Beaufort de Canillac
(James Reed & Ekaumoenga)
 Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

(dau. of Hotu) Matarena Waitangi (Rangiwhiuwhiu) ==== Comm. James Wood (son of Capt. Starr Wood)

b. circa 1783

Ngahiraka (Ema) ===== Capt. Joseph Bond Kennedy (son of Capt. John Bond Kennedy)

b.1840 d.19.6.1913 aged 72

Maria May Bond Kennedy (May) === Henry Matthew Choveaux (son of Louis Nicholas Choveaux 3rd)

b. circa 1874-75, Croyden, Eng. d. 25.1.1951 aged 78 yrs Gisborne

aged 83 yrs.

Edward John Patrick Tilley (Pat) ==== Enid Betty Choveaux (Betty)

b.10.1.1914 d.29.9.1977

2nd.m

Corinne Eleanor Payne ==== Jon Warwick Tilley ==== 2nd.m Avery Chisholm (dau. of Raymond Bleasel)

6.8.4.1940 d.22.6.2012

Warwick Vernon Tilley

m. Angela Wenham

Kerrin Jon Tilley

Dion Paul Tilley

Schiovann Aline Corinne Tilley

m. Dan Mitchell

Sharnae Tilley

Keira Mitchell

Ethan Mitchell

Blaize Tilley

Deux-Beau Hartley-Tilley

Lamer Hartley-Tilley

Demme Hartley-Tilley

JD Harris

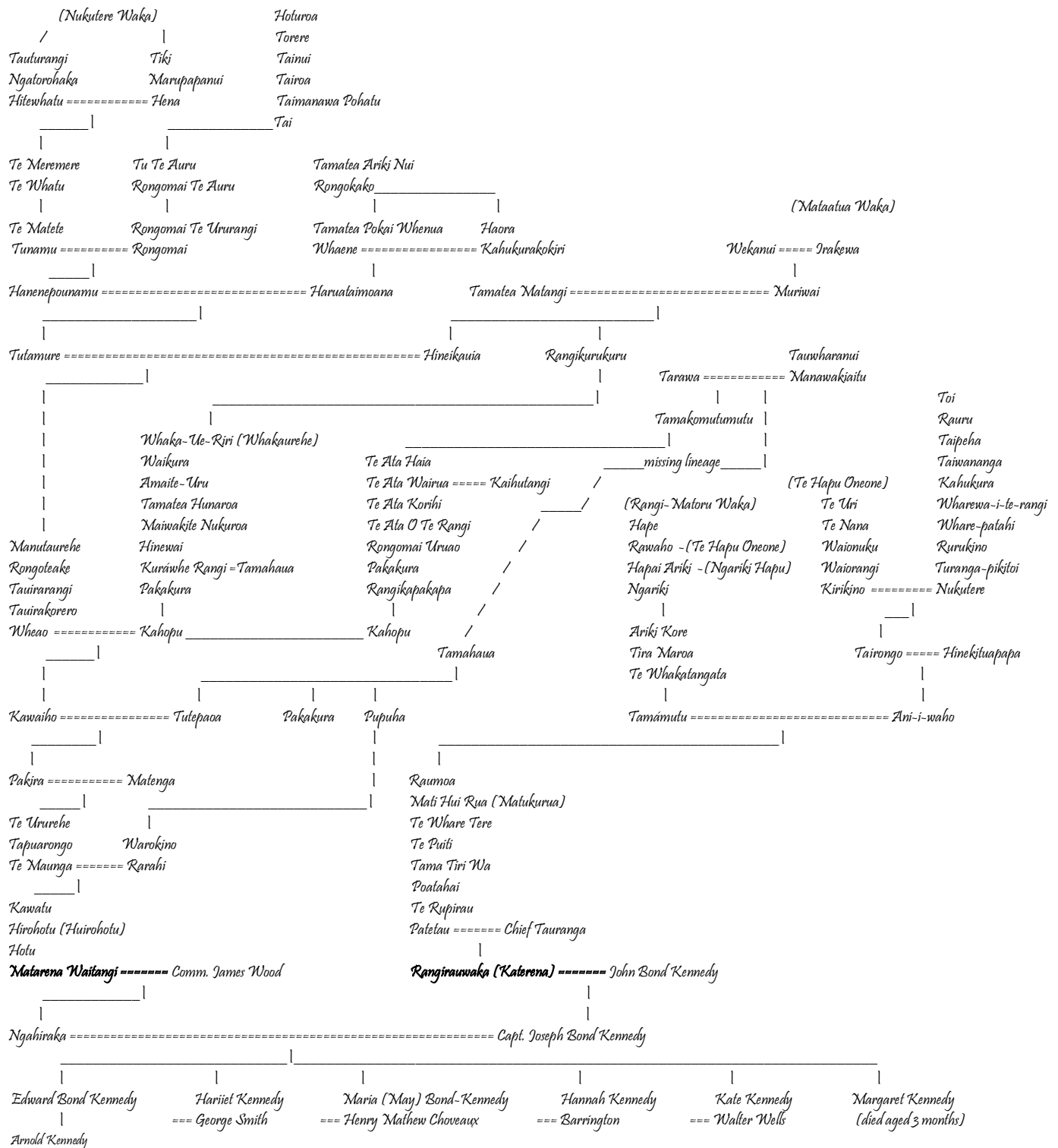
Sharn, dau. of Tania Lambert. Sharn has two children, Kyla and Lakai

Blaize, born Sydney, son of Hine Kora.

Deuxbeau (Bo), Lamer (died aged two months) and Demme's mother is Henrietta Leah Hartley.

ID, son of Bella Harris.

Maori Lineage Of Matarena & Rangirauwaka
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

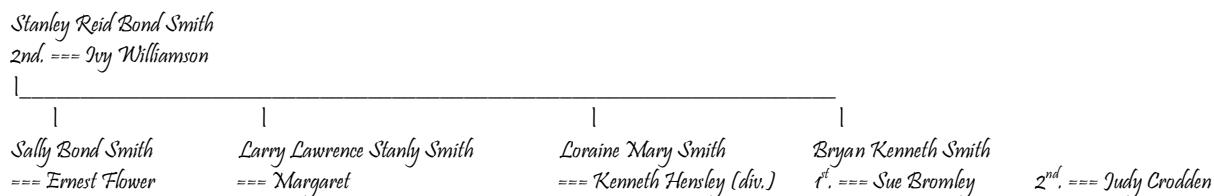
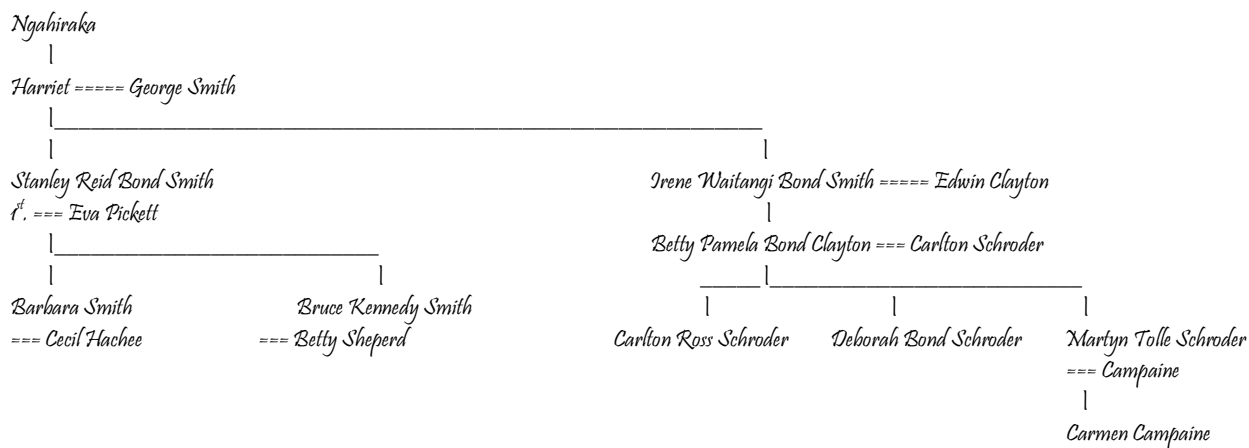
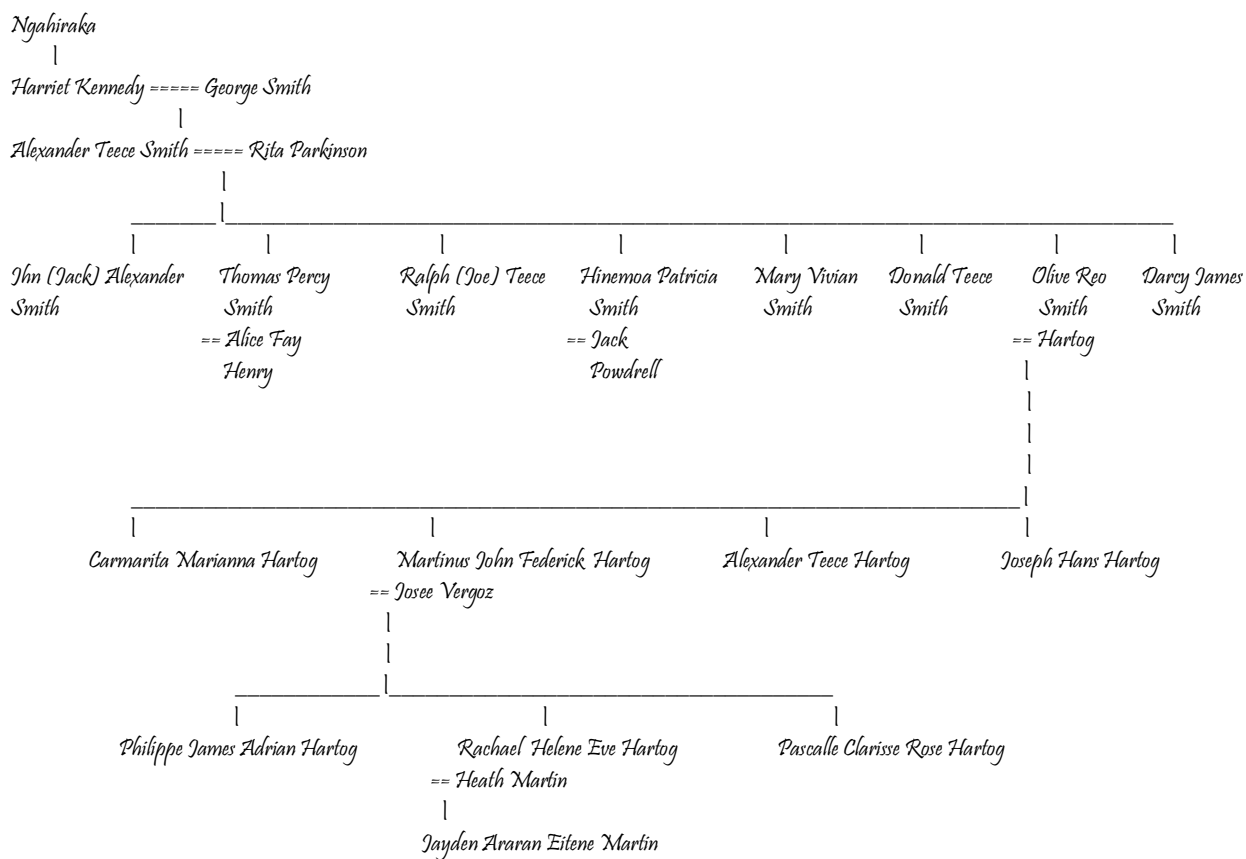
Maui Tiki Kupe to Toi *Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley*

	<i>Ngati Hau (Ancient History)</i> <i>(White, 1887)</i>	<i>Ngati Rangiwaiwhiu</i> <i>(G NZMMS, 1849)</i>	<i>Tuhoe, Ngai Tawhaki</i> <i>(Best MS, 1895)</i>	<i>(TNZ9, 1882)</i>
<i>Maui</i>	<i>Maui</i>	<i>Tiki</i>	<i>Tiki</i>	<i>Pui</i>
<i>Papa-tirau-maewa</i>	<i>Kaitangata</i>	<i>Wiroitetaupua</i>	<i>Tikuhua</i>	<i>Awe</i>
<i>Taranaki-ti-wakawaka</i>	<i>Hamo (Hema)</i>	<i>Wiroitetawhito</i>	<i>Tikiapoa</i>	<i>Tamore</i>
<i>Taranui</i>	<i>Tawhaki-piki-iterangi</i>	<i>Uru</i>	<i>Tikimatua</i>	<i>Taketake</i>
<i>Tararoa</i>	<i>Wewenuku</i>	<i>Ngangana</i>	<i>Wainui</i>	<i>Aka</i>
<i>Nainui</i>	<i>Uwewerangi</i>	<i>Waionuku</i>	<i>Wairoa</i>	<i>Titamarekitewaiaorakijteaomarama</i>
<i>Nairoa</i>	<i>Tapuwhakahihi</i>	<i>Wairangi</i>	<i>Tangaroa</i>	<i>Ngangahu</i>
<i>Nai-wharekaka</i>	<i>Tapu-whakamana</i>	<i>Waitaketake</i>	<i>Tutumaiao</i>	<i>Ngaenui</i>
<i>Nai-roki</i>	<i>Tutara</i>	<i>Waiitehumarie</i>	<i>Pumatawhao</i>	<i>Ngaeroa</i>
<i>Nai-taketake</i>	<i>Ngai-ariki</i>	<i>Waiiteatahua</i>	<i>Nainui</i>	<i>Ngaepiha</i>
<i>Nai-te-hurumanu</i>	<i>Ngai-tauira</i>	<i>Toi</i>	<i>Naipeha</i>	<i>Ngaetahurimai</i>
<i>Toikairakau</i>	<i>Toitehuatahi</i>	<i>Rauru</i>	<i>Nairoke</i>	<i>Ngaitahuriatu</i>
		<i>Watonga</i>	<i>Naitakitaki</i>	<i>Akaki</i>
			<i>Naitehurumaruru</i>	<i>Iaraia (ko a-te Manu waere ma)</i>
			<i>Toi</i>	<i>Toi</i>
			<i>Rauru</i>	<i>Hatoma</i>
<i>Nga Pahi</i>			<i>Tahauri</i>	
<i>(Taonui MS, 1849)</i>			<i>Ruatapu</i>	
<i>Kupe</i>			<i>Tamakitehau</i>	
<i>Matiu</i>			<i>Tamakitera</i>	
<i>Makoro</i>			<i>Tamakihiurangi</i>	
<i>Maea</i>			<i>Rakaiaora</i>	
<i>Maahu</i>				
<i>Nukutawhiti</i>				
<i>Papatahuriake</i>				
<i>Mouriuri</i>				
<i>Morekareka</i>				
<i>Morakitu</i>				
<i>Whiro</i>				
<i>Toi</i>				
<i>Apa</i>				
<i>Rauru</i>				
<i>Kauea</i>				
<i>Te Tokooterangi</i>				
<i>Te Rangitaumuhumu</i>				
<i>Te Rangitaunvanga</i>				
<i>Te Hekana</i>				
<i>Poupa</i>				
<i>Maroro</i>				
<i>Te Ikatauirangi</i>				
<i>Awa</i>				
<i>Awanui</i>				
<i>Rakei</i>				
<i>Tamakitera</i>				
<i>Puhimoanaariki</i>				
<i>Rahiri</i>				

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ngahiraka - Harriet - Alexander Teece Smith

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

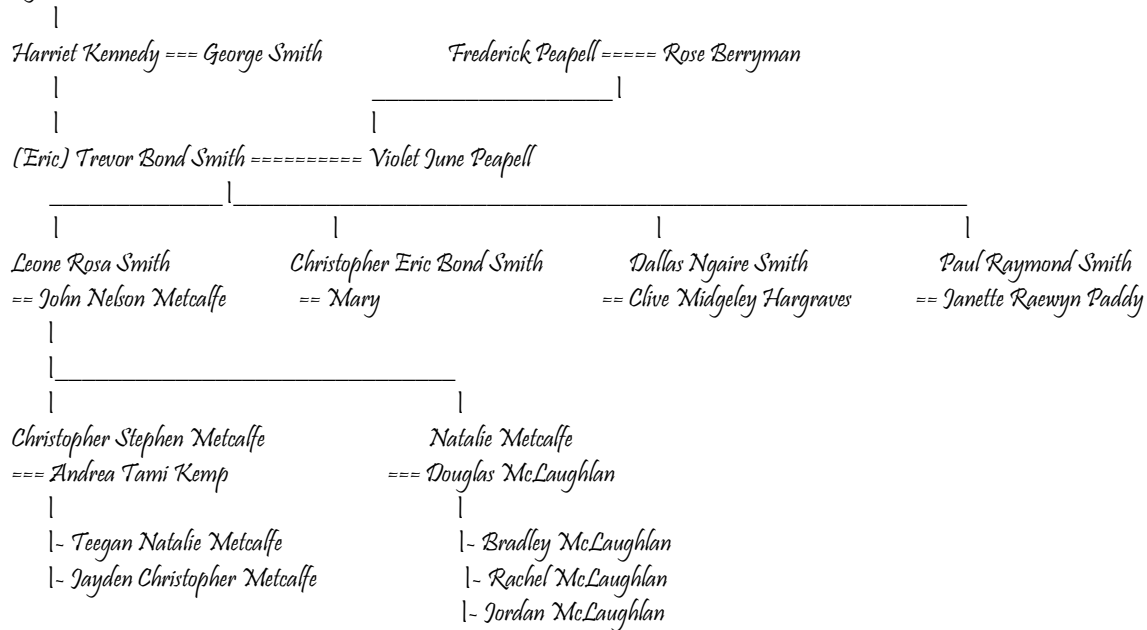


SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ngahiraka - Harriet - Alexander Teece Smith

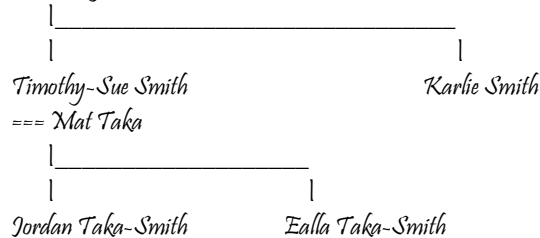
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

Ngahiraka



Christopher Eric Bond Smith

=== Mary

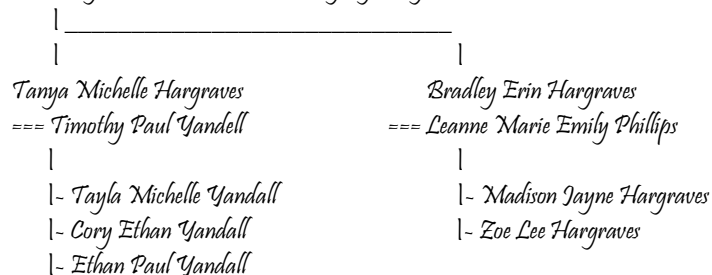


Paul Raymond Smith

=== Janette Raewyn Paddy



Dallas Ngaire Smith ===== Clive Midgeley Hargraves

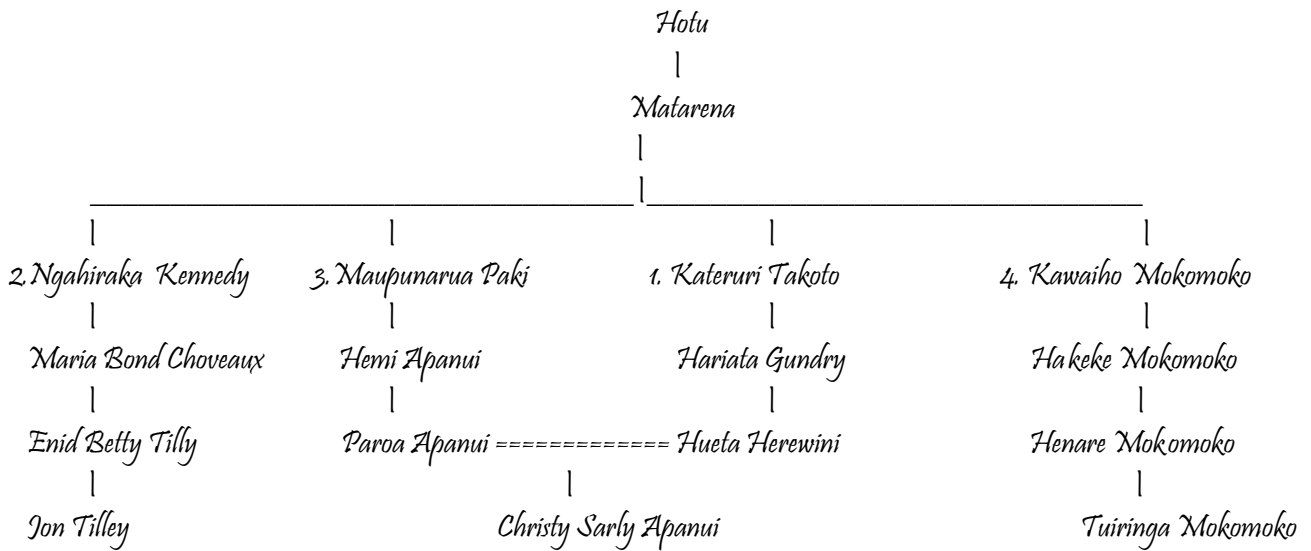


SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ngahiraka - Maupunarua - Kateruri - Kawaiho

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

* Note Matarena's daughters birth order numbers.



Ngahiraka

1st. === Dr. Arthur Thomson

| - Thomas Thomson

| - Margaret Thomson

| - Mary Thomson

Ngahiraka

2nd. === Capt. John Reed

| - Mary Reed

Ngahiraka

3rd. === Capt. Joseph Bond Kennedy

| - Edward Kennedy

| - Harriet Kennedy

| - Kate Kennedy

| - Maria (May) Bond Kennedy

| - Hannah Kennedy

| - Margaret Kennedy

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ngapuhi - Gundry
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

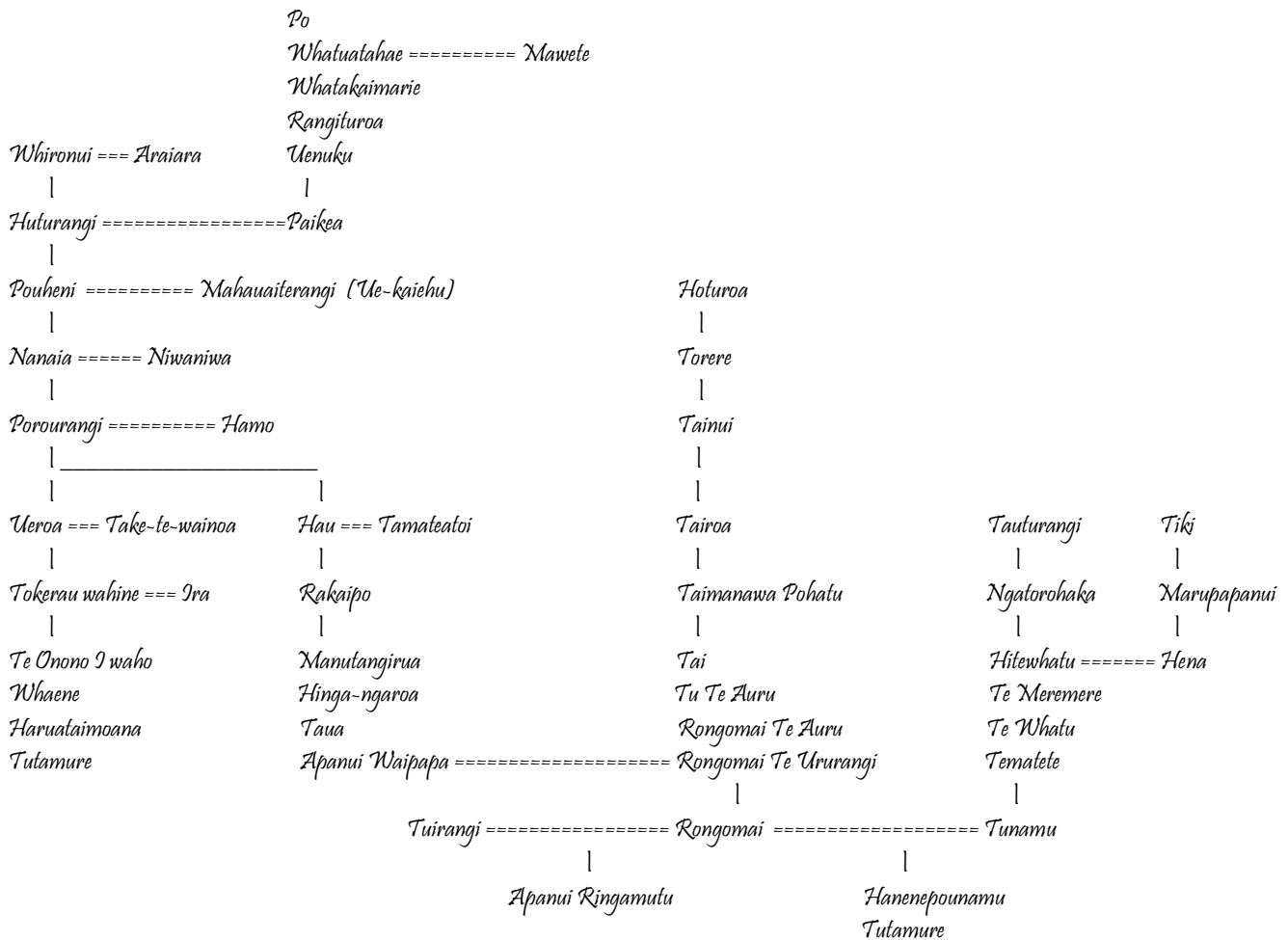
Rahiri ===== Whakaruru
|
Kaharau ===== Houtaringa
|
Taurapoho ===== Raukiwhiria
|
Tupoto ===== Kauae
|
Miruiti ===== Kaumoana
|
Tuatahi ===== Tekoki
|
Te Wehi ===== Rakei
|
Pakau
|
Haumia ===== Te Pari
|
Iwimahue ===== Moana
|
Wehi
|
Te Reti Whatiia ===== Te Raumahi
|
Thomas Wing ===== Makareta Rautangi ===== William Richardson Gundry
b.19.6.1810 d.1888 | b.1826 b.1.7.1814 m.13.5.1851
|
Fanny
d. March 1845 during fighting in Bay of Islands.

Note: Makareta is also sister to Tutu and Mange Pero
Makareta remarried to Matiu Nau m.17.2.1863

Makareta Rautangi ===== William Richardson Gundry
|
|
William John Gundry ===== Kateruri Takoto

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ngati Porou - Whanau Apanui - Whakatohea - Kahungunu
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



(J. White MS, 1861)



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Paikea - Huturangi - Rangitane Tribe

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

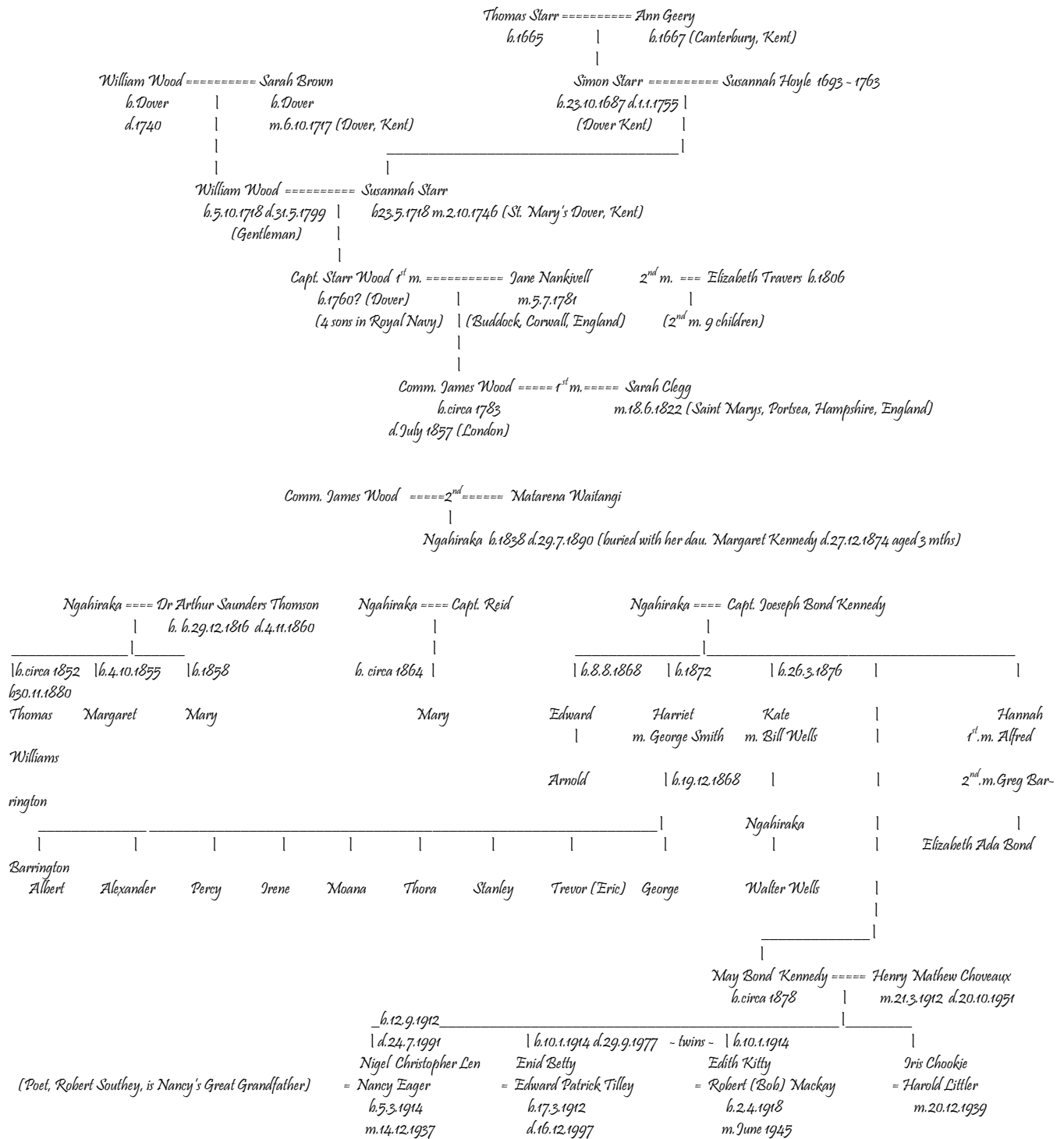
<i>Rongomaihaeata ===== Pakapiko</i>	<i>Whatanui ===== Ruapekapeka</i>	<i>Kohu Ariki ===== Tuahu</i>
<i>Whakarongotai ===== Pahau Ariki</i>	<i>Kiwa ===== Tahatiti</i>	<i>Hinekau Ariki ===== Pokaitara</i>
<i>Kawhataroa ===== Kohuwai</i>	<i>Te Moana ===== Whanaurangi</i>	<i>Ngei Ariki ===== Tapuhi</i>
<i>Whatanui ===== Ruapekapeka</i>	<i>Ruataratai ===== Ruamano</i>	<i>Hinekauataata ===== Kohaikura</i>
<i>Karotaha ===== Ruaroa</i>	<i>Te Tatooterangi ===== Rupe</i>	<i>Hineharorangi ===== Tatawharangi</i>
<i>Raurangi =====</i>	<i>Matangiorupe</i>	<i>Toitehuatahi ===== Te Huiarei</i>
	<i>Ruarangi =====</i>	<i>Rongoueroa</i>
		<i>Whatonga</i>
		<i>Apaka Whiu</i>
		<i>Rongo te Whaiao</i>
		<i>Rongo te Aomarama</i>
		<i>Tuhi a te Tai</i>
		<i>Te Whironui</i>
		<i>Huturangi ===== Paikea</i>

Ngati Porou - Whanau Apanui - Whakatohea - Kahungunu

	<i>Po</i>		
	<i>Whatuatahae ===== Mawete</i>		
	<i>Whatakaïmarie</i>		
	<i>Rangituroa</i>		
<i>Whironui === Araïara</i>	<i>Uenuku</i>		
<i>Huturangi ===== Païkea</i>			
<i>Pouheni ===== Mahauaiterangi (Ue-kaïehu)</i>		<i>Hoturoa</i>	
<i>Nanaïa ===== Niwaniwa</i>		<i>Torere</i>	
<i>Porourangi ===== Hamo</i>		<i>Tainui</i>	
<i>Ueroa === Take-te-wainoa</i>	<i>Hau === Tamateatoi</i>	<i>Tairoa</i>	<i>Tauturangi</i>
<i>Tokerau wahine === Ira</i>	<i>Rakaipo</i>	<i>Taimanawa Pohatu</i>	<i>Ngatorohaka</i>
<i>Tai</i>	<i>Hitewhatu ===== Hena</i>		<i>Te Onono I waho</i>
<i>Whaene</i>	<i>Hinga-ngaroa</i>	<i>Tu Te Auru</i>	<i>Te Meremere</i>
<i>Haruataimoana</i>	<i>Taua</i>	<i>Rongomai Te Auru</i>	<i>Te Whatu</i>
<i>Tutamure</i>	<i>Apanui Waipapa =====</i>	<i>Rongomai Te Ururangi</i>	<i>Tematele</i>
	<i>Tuirangi =====</i>	<i>Rongomai =====</i>	<i>Tunamu</i>
	<i>Apanui Ringamatu</i>	<i>Hanepounamu</i>	
		<i>Tutamure</i>	

Starr Wood - Ngahiraka - Choveaux

Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



- Nigel Choveaux and Nancy had three children, Hellen, Lyne and Kathryn; Hellen, b.1939, married Kingsley Eager, three children, Coralyn, Delmae and Janet married Peter Jenkins, two children, Kirsty and Warwick; Lyn married Terry Collins and they had two children, Peta and Mitchell; Kathryn married Peter Kirwan and they had two children, Eyvette and Clifford, Clifford married Tangi Monroe, one child, Jessica. Nancy Choveaux's mother is Annie Bradwell (Australia).

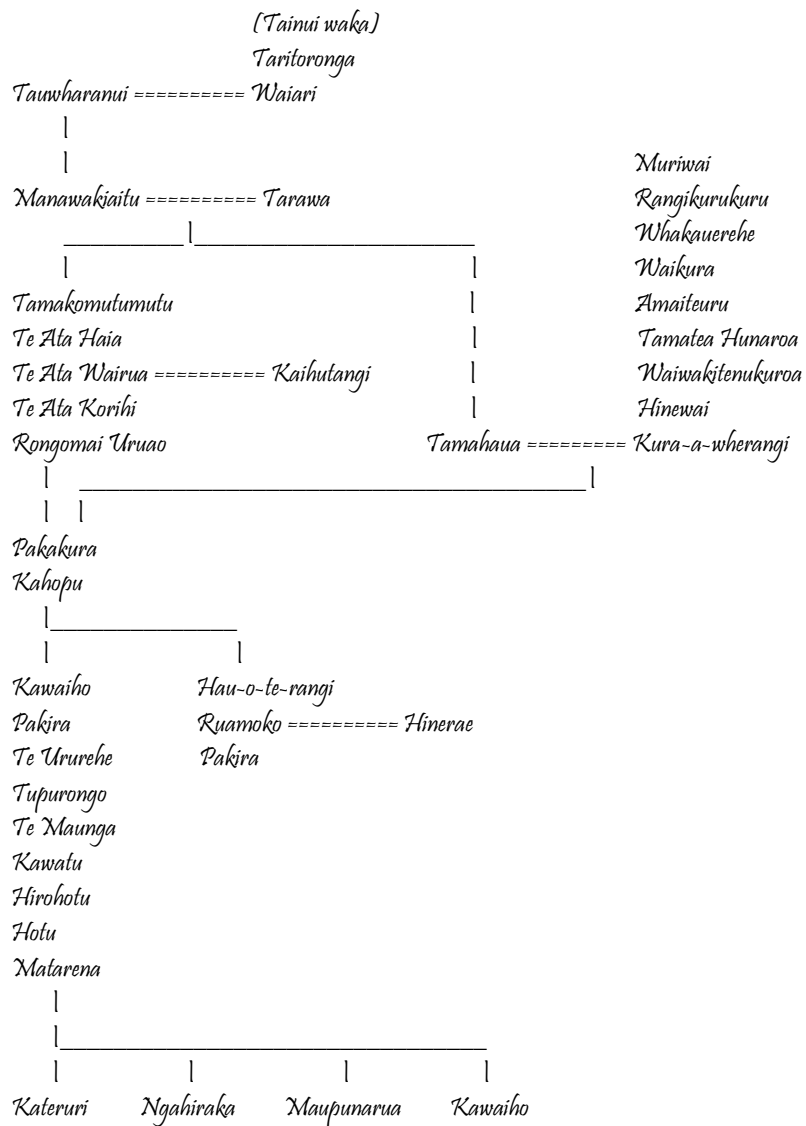
- Edna Edith Kitty Choveaux and Robert (Bob) William MacKay and they had one child, Robyn MacKay, whom married Peter Morris by, they had two children, Aaron and Kristian. Robert MacKay has two sisters, Flora and Margaret.

- Iris Chookie Choveaux married Harold Littler, four children, Wynne, Peter, Barry and Susan; Wynne came to my mother's funeral, she married Mr Lobby and had 4 daughters.

- Enid Betty Choveaux and Edward (Pat) John Patrick Tilley, was born Edward Stokes and changed his name to Tilley, three children, Joanne, Jon and Mark.

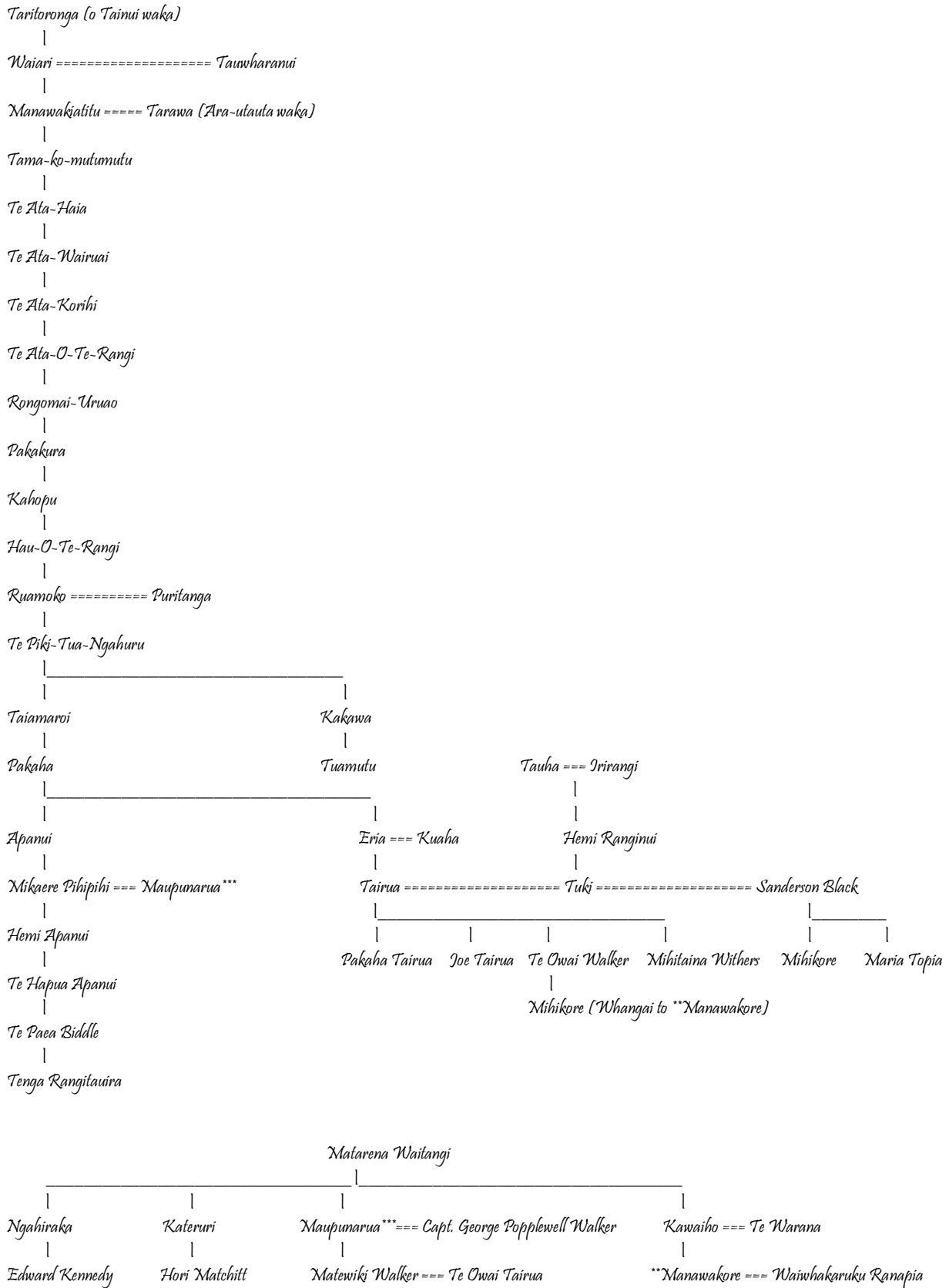
SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Tainui waka
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Taritoronga - Te Owai - Walker
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Toi - Kennedy
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

Toi

Rauru-Ki-Tahi

Taipeha

Taiwananga

(Te Aratawhao waka)

(Rangi-Matoru waka)

Kahukura

Te Hapu-Oneone

Hape

Marewa-I-Te-Rangi

Te Uri

Rawaho

Whare-Patahi

Te Nana

Hapai Ariki

Rurukino

Waionuku

Ngariki

Turanga-Pikitoi

Waiorangi

Ariki Kore

Nukutere ===== *Kirikino*

Tira Maroa

Tairongo ===== *Hinekitsuapapa*

Te Whakatangata

Ani-I-Waho ===== *Tamaamutu*

Raumoa

Mati Hui Rua (Matukurua)

Tu Whare Tere

Te Puiti

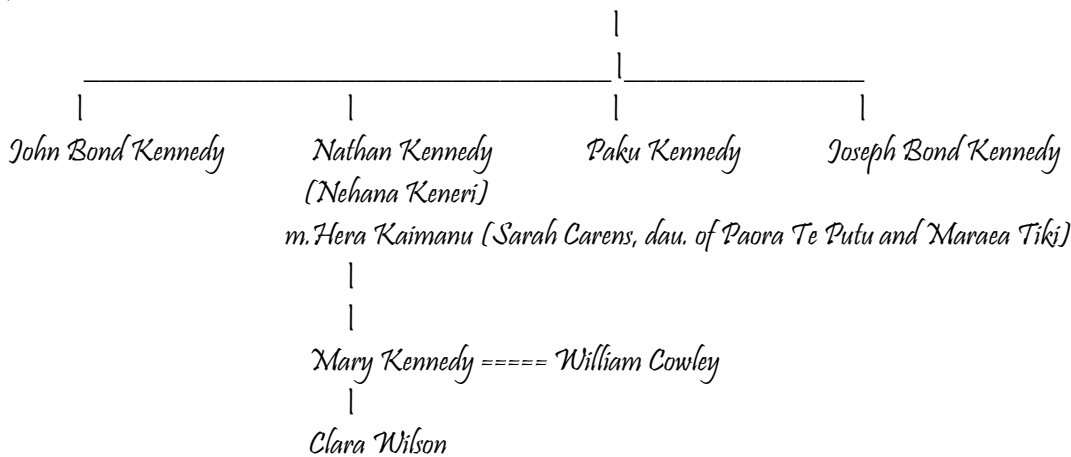
Tama Tiri Wa

Poatahai

Te Rupirau

Patetau

Rangirauwaka (Katerina Taurangi, Kitakita or Kate)===== John Bond Kennedy (arrived in N.Z 1834, HMS Buffalo)



*Tuhoe and Upokorehe Whakapapa Toi**Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley*

Tiki					
Tangaroa					
Naimui					
Naipeha	Hiwakiterau				
Nairoke	Iti-iti-terau				
Naitaketake	Whakawatai				
Naitehurumanu	Kura Ariki				
Hineikaputerangi === Toi ===	Te Kuraimoana	Toi	Toi		Kuraimoana
==== Toi					
Ue	Rauru Kitahi	Te Uri			
Rongomai	Taipeha	Hineraurangi	Hineraurangi === Te One	Te Oneone	Awanuiarangi
Tikitiki O Terangi	Taiwananga	Te Nana	Te Nana	Te Uri	Awamore-
hurehu					
Hape	Kahukura	Waionuku	Waionuku	Te Nana	Irakewa
Rawaho	Marewa Iterangi	Waiorangi	Waiorangi	Waionuku	_____ _____
			_____		_____
			_____		Toroa Muri-
wai					
Hapai Ariki	Whare Patahi	Poupa	Poupa Kinikino	Waiorangi	
Ngariki	Rurukino		Te Whakawairua	Kirikino	
Arikikore	Turanga Pikitoi		Te Whakatangata	Tairongo	
Tiramaroa	Nukutere =====	Kirikino	Tamutu	Ani-i-waho	
Te Whakatangata	Tairongo		Raumoa	Raumoa	
Tamaamutu =====	Ani-i-waho				
Raumoa					

Above; Upokorehe, showing Hape, chief of Ohiwa, Opotiki and capt. of Rangimatoru waka.

Below; Ngai-Tu-Whare-Toa, chief of Taupo, also showing Hape as his ancestor (chief and capt. of Rangimatoru waka). Also showing Tamatea Pokai Whenua, his 5th wife and their 2nd great grand-daughter's marriage to Tu Whare Toa. Tamatea Pokai Whenua, father of Whaene (1st. marriage) and Kahungunu (2nd. marriage). Whaene is grand-father to Tutamure whom is a famous ancestor of Whakatohea in Opotiki. Also, Porourangi (Ngati Porou) and his great-grand daughter Te Moana-i-kauia, third daughter of Tokerau-wahine, Note; Tamatea Pokai married all three daughters of Tokerau-wahine.

	Hape		
	Tamarau		
	Tama-mutu		
(Priest of Te Arawa)	Te Ika-o-te-rangi		
Ngatoro-i-rangi	Te Pipi	(Capt. Takitimu waka)	Porourangi
Tangihia	Te Koata	Tamatea-ariki-nui ===== Toto (Tato)	Ueroa
Tangimoana	Rangikai-tipuanuku	Rongokako	Tokerau-
wahine			
Kahukura	Te Kahotuanui	Tamatea-Pokai-Whenua =====	Te Moana-i-
kauia			
Tuhoto-ariki	Whetu-roa	Tamatea	
Te Rangitauira	Hine-te-ariki === Wai-taha	Tupe	
Tu-Maihi	Hahuru === Makawe-taupo	Rangi-toro	
Mawake =====	Tu Whare-Toa =====	Te Ao-whina	

Tuhoe - Toi - Muriwai
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

*Tuhoe**Rangi ===== Papatuanuku*

|

Tangotango ===== Wainui

|

Hinerauamoa ===== Tane

|

Ioiowhenua

|

Putehue ===== Tawhitimatea

|

Makara ===== Rotua

|

Hinenuitepo

|

Ititi ===== Tawhaki

|

Whakawatai ===== Turoua

|

Kura Ariki ===== Hineata

|

Te Kuraimonoa ===== Toi

|

Awanuiarangi ===== Papaturangi

|

Awamohurehu ===== Te Paerereiwaho

|

Irakewa

|

Muriwai

|

|

|

|

*Hineikaia ===== Tutamure**Manutaurehe**Toi Kairakau*

|

Rauru

|

Whatonga

|

Tahatiti

|

Rakiora

|

Tama-ki-te-hau

|

Tama-ki-te-ra

|

Tama-ki-te-matangi

|

Tama-ki-reireia-mai-Hawaiki

|

Te-Kahu-arero

|

Pito

|

Rere

|

Tangi

|

Maika

|

Toto === Tamatea Ariki (Mai-Tawhiti)

|

Rongokako === Muri-Whenua

|

Te Ono-ono-i-waho === Tamatea-Pokai-Whenua === Iwi-pupu

|

*Whaene**Kahungunu*

|

Haruataimoana

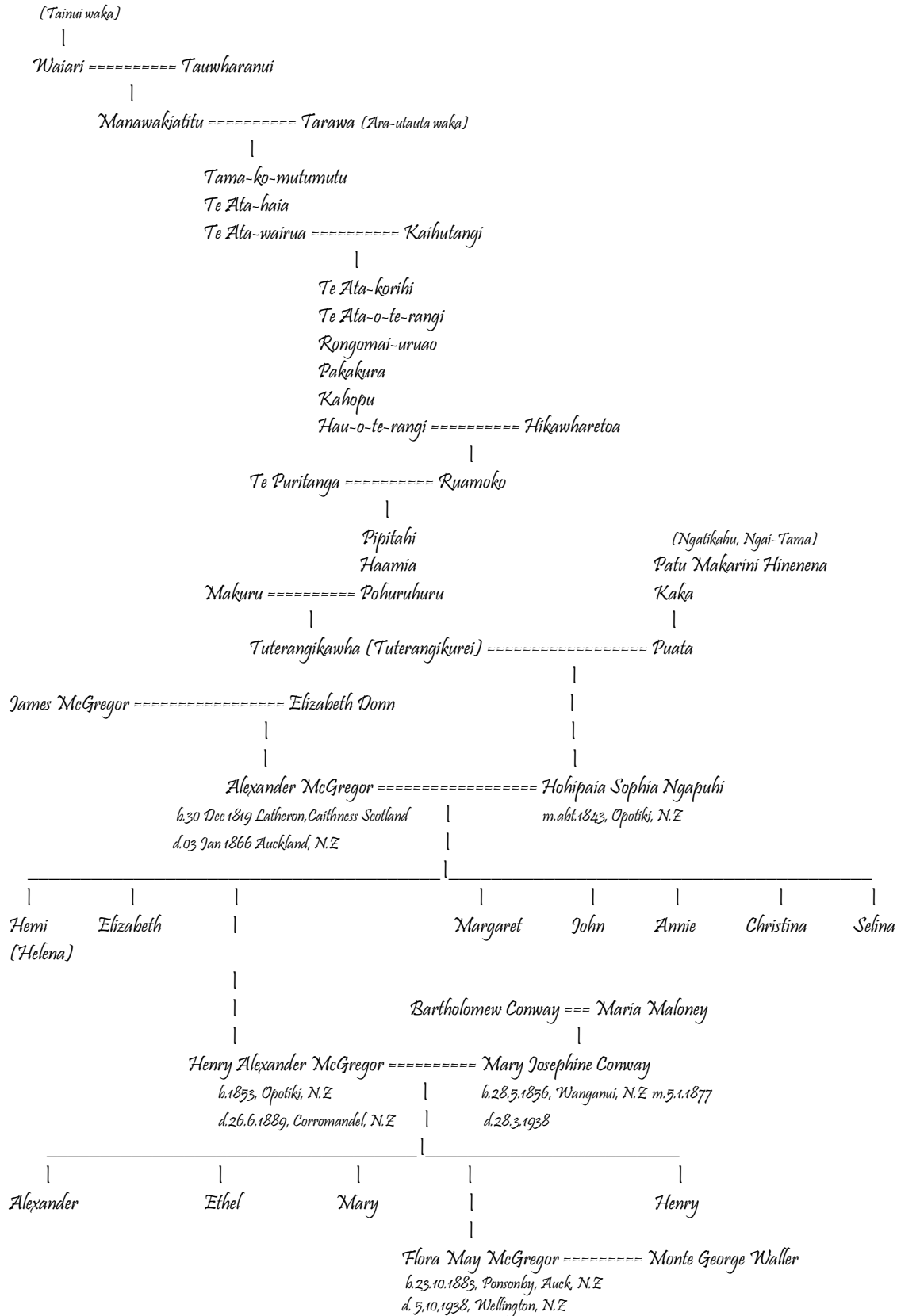
|

William Wood - Ngahiraka
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS WHAKAPAPA

Ken and Dawn Read Part 1
Hohipaia Sophia Ngapuhi - McGregor - Waller - Read
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley



Ken and Dawn Read Part 2
Hohipaia Sophia Ngapuhi - McGregor - Waller - Read
Respectfully recorded by Dion Tilley

356

ILLUSTRATIONS
Acknowledgements

Illustrations

Jill Kemp. Courtesy of the Kemp family.

Front Photograph: Ngāhiraka Kennedy - Courtesy Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne. Dudley Meadows.

Chapter 1

HITHER FROM THE REALM OF RIGEL

Maps shows the out-of-Africa migration of humans. [www.stuff.co.nz/science 100629585](http://www.stuff.co.nz/science/100629585)

Bailer and Anchor stone. Maori Myths and Legends by Margaret Orbell. Page 93

Farewell from Hawaiiki. Source unknown.

Fish hook. Maori Myths and Legends by Margaret Orbell. Page 41

Decorated Canoe Paddle. Source unknown.

Maori navigation. Vikings Of The Sunrise by Sir Peter Buck p 88.

The Astronomical Knowledge of the Maori. By Eldon Best p83.

Te Ana O Muriwai - Cave of Muriwai. Source unknown.

Kumara Cultivation. From Maori Paintings. By Gottfried Lindauer.

Tui and bird Snare. Maori Myths and Legends, by Margaret Orbell.

Maketu Pa. Unknown source.

Rakau Whakapapa. Carved Histories, by Roger Neich.

Kumete. Carved by Patoromu Tamatea. Carved Histories, by Roger Neich.

Korowai. From Carved Histories, by Roger Neich.

Chapter 2

KENNEDY CONNECTION

Kennedy Crest. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Clan_Kennedy.

Culzean Castle http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Culzean_Castle. (Col)

New Zealand Banking Company Auckland. Courtesy of B.N.Z Archives.

Alexander Kennedy's letter of acceptance. Courtesy of Bank of N.Z. Archives.

Three Kings Wesleyan Native Institute Principal's House. Courtesy of the Wesley Historical Society.

Chapter 3

KENNEDY'S BAY - JOHN KENNEDY

Paora Matutaera (Paul Marshall) Painted by Charles Heaphy. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

Ancient canoe landing bays. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Umbrella Rocks. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Ancient Pohutukawa. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Ahu Ahu the whaling station Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Map of Harataunga – Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of Ken and Dawn Read.

Volcanic rock Kennedy's Bay Pohutukawa. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

View from summit of Kohutara, Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Norfolk pines Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Kohutara the peak and Konaki peak Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

Entrance of Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Whaling Sketch. Source unknown.

Derelict remains of John Kennedy's original house. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Kennedy's Bay Mill boarding house. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

Nagel's Cove schooner, by Joseph Jenner Merrett. Courtesy of the Fletcher Trust Collection. (Col)

Nagel's Cove watercolour, by Joseph Jenner Merrett. Courtesy of the Fletcher Trust Collection. (Col)

Kennedy's Bay Estuary viewed from road bridge. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Nathan's Pohutukawa tree. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Ancient rock fishing traps. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Two views from Pa overlooking Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Map of Kennedy Claim. Courtesy of George Hovell.

Old photograph of the old mill site at Kennedy's Bay. Source unknown. Courtesy of George Hovell.

Mill site from hill. Drawing from Mr. E. Mervyn Taylor. Courtesy of George Hovell.

A small train track at John Kennedy's former property. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

Loading logs onto schooners at Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

Mill Mangers derelict house Kenney's Bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)

Hohi Ngapuhi. Courtesy of Ken and Dawn Read.

Maori "Flo," of N.Z. Courtesy of Ken and Dawn Read. (Col)

McGregor family Memorial. Courtesy of Ken and Dawn Read. (Col)

Reputed to possibly be Hohipaea Ngapuhi - with Huia feathers. of Daniel Mc Cort family.

Matehaere Teua Paora and John Tani Hone Te One McGregor. Courtesy of Dorothy Carrington.

Charles Woodward Hovell. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

Mere Te Aorere Hira Waara. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Last surviving Mill workers hut. Courtesy of George Hovell.
George Hovell's Mill hut 2006. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Marae at Harataunga (Kennedy's Bay). Courtesy of Bob Kemp. Used with permission. (Col)
Marae paintings, by Rollo John Richard Hovell. Photo by Bob Kemp. Used with permission. (Col)

Chapter 4

RANGIRAUWAKA / KATERENA TAURANGI

This family tree, compiled circa 1948, by Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr. Courtesy of Rosemary Orr.
John Kennedy's (Jonathan) Death Certificate. Courtesy of Jill Kemp
Kennedy's Bay property shoreline. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
View towards the whaling station and mouth of bay. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Stony shoreline towards John Kennedy's house. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
School on the Mill site, Kennedy's Bay. Courtesy of George Hovell. (Col)
Mary (nee Kennedy) Cowley. Courtesy of Colin Wilson. (Col)
Clara Wilson (nee Cowley) with grandson Colin Wilson. Courtesy of Colin Wilson. (Col)

Chapter 5

MATARENA RANGIWHIUWHIU WAITANGI

Panorama of Opape Foreshore. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Matarena Rangiwhiuu Waitangi's greenstone Heitiki. Courtesy of an anonymous descendant. (Col)
Matarena Rangiwhiuu Waitangi's greenstone Adze. Courtesy of an anonymous descendant. (Col)

Chapter 6

MAORI THE FIRST MISSIONARIES AT ŌPŌTIKI.

Hiona Willow Tree. From Maori Photographic And Social History. By Michael King. Page 67.
View Across the River at Ōpōtiki. Sketch by Samuel A. Levy. National Library.
Rev. Carl Volkner. From: A Pioneer Missionary Amongst The Maoris. By Rev. Samuel Grace.
Mrs. Emma Volkner. From: A Pioneer Missionary Amongst The Maoris. By Rev. Samuel Grace.
Peria the Volkner's house looking towards the bar. Opotiki The Women's stories page 71.
Martha Volkner's Letter to Matui Te Ranapai. Opotiki Museum. Hiona by Watson Rosevear.
Pencil drawing of The Rev. C. S. Volkner preaching to Maori 1855.NK 3833. National Library of Australia.
The Schooner Eclipse.1865. By Samuel A. Levy. Courtesy of A.T. L. E-372-f-007-2. A.T.L.
Engraving Vicarage etc from a pencil drawing by Samuel A. Levy in 1865. Ref: E-372-f-007-2. A.T.L.
Letter Tiwai to Tirohena. 11 November 1873. A.T. L. MS-Papers-0032-0697G-4
Supplement B.O.P. Times Volume V1, Issue 583, 20 April 1878. Tiwai and Katarina (sic) Takoto Land info.
Chief Mokomoko's Headstone. Courtesy of Bob Kemp (Col)
Tuiringa (Manny) Mokomoko. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
The Urupā (cemetery) at Waiaua. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Site of Matarena Rangiwhiuwhiu Waitangi's home at Waiaua. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Opape Native Reserve resettlement of Whakatohea x2. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Part of Map of the original Crown subdivision of Ōpōtiki. Courtesy of Ken Read. (Col)
Te Piahana Tiwai circa 1880. Reference number: PH-1969-33-13. Auckland Museum online collection.
*1889 - Wilson, J. A. Missionary Life and Work in New Zealand - PART IV: OPOTIKI, 1839-51
*Taumata-a-Kura, Piripi Ngati Porou evangelist - Te Ara. By Apirana T. Mahuika and Steven Olive
*Pita - Missionary Register. Vol. 8. 1829.
*A Centennial History of Tauranga by W.H. Gifford & H. B. Williams;
*Whakatohea of Ōpōtiki, A.C. Lyall;
*Rev. Christopher Pearson Davies of Ōpōtiki - Paperspast: Waipapu Church Gazette P 16. 1 Mahura 1926.

Chapter 7

COMMANDER JAMES WOOD - NGAHIRAKA'S FATHER

Commander Woods Ancestry. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Commander James Wood. R.N. Courtesy of the Sterndale-Bennett Family Library. (Col)
Commander James Wood's sword. Courtesy of Commander Phillip Hayde, Canada. (Col)
Commander James Wood's sword hilt. Courtesy of Commander Phillip Hayde, Canada. (Col)
Commander James Wood's Lapel pin. Courtesy of Commander Phillip Hayde, Canada. (Col)
Commander Wood's family grave is Plot 143. Courtesy of Barry Sterndale-Bennett. (Col)
Kensal Green Cemetery Map. Supplied by Guardian Angel's Touch.
South Coast of England. English Heritage guidebook by Jonathan Coad. (Col)
Dover Castle. From the English Heritage guidebook by Jonathan Coad. (Col)
King Henry II's Keep. From the English Heritage guidebook by Jonathan Coad. (Col)
Mary's Church, Dover, Kent. From the English Heritage guidebook by Jonathan Coad. (Col)
The Great Western At Weymouth - A Railway And Shipping History. By J.H. Lucking.
Stamp of Chesterfield Packet. Jersey Post Office Commemoration. (Col)
Commander James Wood's handwriting. Buffalo Logs. Courtesy of Mercury Bay Museum.
Captain Starr Wood's handwriting. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Nguru Flute. Courtesy of Webb's Auction house website. (Col)
Sir William Sterndale - Bennett. Courtesy of the Sterndale - Bennett Family library.
Mary Anne Wood. 1824 – 1862. Courtesy of the Sterndale - Bennett Family library. (Col)
Captain Joseph Bond Kennedy. Courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips. (Col)
Sarah Wood's handwriting. Courtesy of Verity Baylis.
The only known sketch of H.M.S. Buffalo. By Young Bingham Hutchinson.
Ngāhiraka's Whakapapa. By J. B. Kennedy. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.

Chapter 8 IN SEARCH OF SPAR

Original Compass from H.M.S. Buffalo. Courtesy of Mercury Bay Museum. (Col)
Leg irons off H.M.S. Buffalo. Courtesy of Mercury Bay Museum. (Col)
Crockery from Captain's table. H.M.S. Buffalo. Courtesy of Mercury Bay Museum. (Col)
Graphics by Shenagh Gleeson. HMS Buffalo drifting. Courtesy of Mercury Bay Museum. (Col)
View Of The Wreck Of H.M.S. Buffalo at Mercury Bay, N.Z. By Thomas Laslett.
Com. Brett Burlingham R.B.N. & Wiremu Davis of Ngati Hei. Courtesy of Stephen Brosnam.(Col)
H.M.S. Tortoise by maritime painter Roger Morris. Used by permission. (Col)
Historic site, Tairua. Sailors Grave. Courtesy of Don Armitage. (Col)
Loading H.M.S. Tortoise off Wakahau. Ass. Surg. HenrymJones Domville 1818 -1888. N.K. 1112. N. L. A.
Will and Death Certificate of Commander James Wood. Courtesy of Verity Baylis.

Chapter 9 MAUPUNARUA ERIHAPETI (Elizabeth) TAKOTO

Maupunaru Erihapeti Takoto's whakapapa. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. (Col)
National Archives N.Z. Maori Land Court Minute Book. Courtesy of Bradley Walker.
Paroa Apanui. Courtesy of the Apanui family.
Hueta Aneko/Aniko Herewini. Courtesy of the Apanui family. (Col)
Hueta Aneko/Aniko Herewini. Courtesy of the Apanui family.
Margaret Hudson. Courtesy of the Apanui family. (Col)
Margaret (nee Hudson) wife/partner of (Christy) Sarley Apanui. Courtesy of Bella Harris. (Col)
Saint Mary's Nottingham. Courtesy of the Parish website. (Col)
Sgt. Maj. Chas. Litchfield Ōpōtiki Volunteer Cavalry. Courtesy of the Litchfield family.
Mrs Maria Litchfield nee Johnston. Courtesy of the Litchfield family.
Litchfield Charles D. headstone. Courtesy of Ōpōtiki Cemetery Waitangi. (Col)
Masonic Hotel. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. W A Price Collection G-191½. (Col)
Litchfield's handwriting. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. (Col)
St. Michaels Church Ponta Delgada, Azores, Portugal. www.alamy.co. DRDW5M. (Col)
Breakwater at Ponta Delgada. From Azores. By *Walter Frederick Walker. (Col)
Captain George Popplewell Walker. 1st Waikato Regiment. Courtesy of Bradley Walker. (Col)
Matewiki Wiremu Paki Walker. Courtesy of Dr. Ranganui Walker. (Col)
Teowai Tairua Walker (Te Owai) wife of Matewiki Walker. Courtesy of Dr. Ranganui Walker. (Col)

Chapter 10

Captain John (Jock) McGregor. Courtesy of the Whanganui Museum.
Captain John (Jock) McGregor. Courtesy of the Whanganui Museum.
Jock McGregor aged 62 years. From 'Making Waves,' by Felicity Campbell.
The Late John McGregor. WANGANUI CHRONICLE. Volume XXIV, Issue 9662, 5 October 1882.
Portrait of A Maori girl called Eono. By Joseph Merritt. Courtesy of Damian McGregor.
Abraham Bennett's second wife, Mary Ira Johnson. Courtesy of Justine Neal.
Selina White and sister Mary White Richards. Richards' Family Tree.
Augustine Selina Te Rangatai White. Richardson Tree Ancestry.
Thomas Henry Mc Gregor circa 1920s. Courtesy of Damian McGregor.
Thomas Henry McGregor's last house 16 Kipling Ave Epsom Auckland. Google Maps.
Thomas Henry and Augustina McGregor's Nine living children. Circa 1920s. Courtesy of Liz Koh.
Marriage Certificate of Thomas Henru McGregor and Augustina Selina White. Courtesy of Liz Koh.

Chapter 11 KATERURI / KATERINA / KATARINA TAKOTO GUNDRY

Kateruri/Katerina Takoto circa 1858/59. Story Of New Zealand Vol 2. A.S. Thomson. (Col)
New Zealand Girl with Half Caste Niece. By Whymper. Story Of New Zealand. A.S. Thomson. (Col)
Kateruri/Katerina Takoto (Gundry) Matchitt. Courtesy of Kath (Warren) Riri. (Col)
Helena Gundry circa 1887-1890. Courtesy of Kath (Warren) Riri. (Col)
Kateruri/Katerina Takoto (Gundry) Matchitt with two daughters. Courtesy of Kath (Warren) Riri. (Col)
Gundry sisters Rehutai aged 90 years and Fay 88 years. Photographer: Dean Purcell. (Col)
Historic Gundry home, 66 Palmerston Road, Birkenhead. Photographer: Dean Purcell. (Col)

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Thomas Wing. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. Bryne Collection. Reference: PAColl-7246. (Col)
Makareta (Margaret) Rautangi. Painting by Joseph Jenner Merrett. Courtesy of Lois Hannah. (Col)
Marriage Certificate of William Richardson Gundry & Margaret Rautangi. Courtesy of Silvana WiRepa. (Col)
Makareta Rautangi Gundry and daughters. By Joseph Jenner Merrett. Courtesy of Lois Hannah. (Col)
Gundry's Chemist shop. Sir George Grey Special Collections, Auckland Libraries, 4-414. (Col)
Chelsea Sugar Refinery at Duck Creek. Takapuna Library New Zealand Collection Workroom. (Col)
Excerpts from the Will Of William R Gundry National Archives BBAE 1568 6 100. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
Accounts from Will of William Richardson Gundry. Courtesy of Bob Kemp. (Col)
Signature of William Richardson Gundry from above Will. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
Marriage Certificate William John Gundry to Eka Koroti. Courtesy of Jill Kemp.
William James (known as John) Gundry circa 1866. Source unknown. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
Will of William John Gundry. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
Kateruri/ Katerina Takoto Gundry. Courtesy of Jackie Biddle.
George Matchitt jr. Circa 1913. Ōpōtiki 100 Years. Page 35. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. (Col)
Alice (nee Wade) Gundry with her son Arthur and Mary. Courtesy of Esther Wilson. (Col)
Opotiki Patriotic Queen Carnival 1917. Courtesy of Silvana WiRepa. (Col)
Mary and Romeo Wirepa. Courtesy of Silvana WiRepa. (Col)
Mary and Romeo Wirepa's marriage certificate. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
Matarena Succession Application. Source unknown. (Col)
The meeting house, Muriwai, at Opape Marae. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog. (Col)

Chapter 12

NGĀHIRAKA & Dr. ARTHUR SAUNDERS THOMSON

The Moa Cave. By A.S. Thomson MD. Courtesy of The Auckland Institute Museum. CN 346 (Col)
Moa. From the Edinburgh Philosophical Journal April 1854. Edinburgh. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Arthur Saunders Thomson handwriting. McLean Letters. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library.
Plan of Doctor Thomson's property at Stokes Point Northcote. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Dr. A.S. Thomson's Memorial headstone. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Margaret Thomson. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Colonel Henry Colin Balneavis. Permission of Alexander Turnbull Library Ref. BK 34282
Dr. John Harkness Macaffer. Courtesy of Verity Baylis.
Doctor's Hill Mataura. Courtesy of Verity Baylis.
Mary Harkness Macaffer. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Charles Thomson Macaffer. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Ian Simson Simson widower. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Valentine Petrie Simson. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Harold Simson. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)
Macaffer headstone, Gore. Courtesy of Verity Baylis. (Col)

Chapter 13

NGĀHIRAKA & JOHN REED

John Reed's Ancestry. Courtesy of Ngaire Von Sturmer and Lyn Chappell.
James Reed descendant of the French King Hugues 'de France Capet 1. Courtesy of Lyn Chappell. (Col)
The French town of Pont-du-Chateaux. Courtesy of Lyn Chappell (Col)
Castle of Pont-du-Chateaux, of the Montboissiers-Beaufort-Canillac's. Courtesy of Lyn Chappell (Col)
Uniforms of the Musketeers. Wikipedia. (Col)
Flag of the 1st Company of the Musketeers of the Guard, 1715. Wikipedia. (Col)
Review of Black Musketeers in the plain of Sablons. By Robert Paul Ponce Antoine. (Col)
The Hardy Tree, in the old St. Pancras Churchyard. From St. Pancreas, Old Church. Wikipedia. (Col)
The frigate Triton. Painted by Nicholas Pocock in 1879. National Museum London. (Col)
Whakapapa-Ekaumeonga's Whakapapa. Auckland Museum Library reference MS120. (Col)
Te Awaiti Whaling station. By William Fox. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. B-113-015 (Col)
Te Rangihaeata. New Zealand Electronic Text Centre. (Col)
Te Rauparaha. New Zealand Electronic Text Centre. (Col)
Try pot used at Weller Bros. <http://www.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nzlscant/queries.htm>
Map of Sunday Island from Crusoe's of Sunday Island, by Elsie K. Morton. Courtesy of Don Armitage.
James Reeds marriage certificate. Courtesy of Lynn Chappell.
St. Paul's Church in Symonds Street. Courtesy of Lynn Chappell. (Col)
Sara Von Sturmer (nee Reed). Courtesy of Lynn Chappell. (Col)
Alice Gee (nee Reed). Courtesy of Lynn Chappell. (Col)
Eliza Cook (nee Reed) and child. Courtesy of Lynn Chappell. (Col)
Street plan of Stokes Point, Northcote. Courtesy of Lynn Chappell. (Col)
Plan of Stokes Point properties, Northcote. Northcote Golden Jubilee pg 5. Courtesy of Lynn Chappell. (Col)

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Marriage Certificate. Ngāhiraka and John Reed. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.
(Eliza) Mary Reed. Courtesy of Lyn Chappell. (Col)
(Eliza) Mary Reed 1896, at her sister Harriet's wedding. Courtesy Hazel McDonald. (Col)

Chapter 14

NGĀHIRAKA and Captain JOSEPH BOND KENNEDY

Ngāhiraka (nee Wood) Kennedy. Courtesy of Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne. (Col)
Joseph Bond Kennedy. Colourization courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips.
Close view of Ngāhiraka's moko. Courtesy of Tairāwhiti Museum Gisborne. (Col)Fort Steet Auckland K. Burcher (Artist), Charles Heaphy (Related Artist) Auckland Art Gallery. Gift of the Hon E Mitchelson, 1915
A very old, sacred and rare, bone tattooing tool. Courtesy of William Hastie. (Col)
Auckland, New Zealand. (From Smales Point). By Hogan, Patrick Joseph, 1852 IRN 180455 . C-010-015
Gisborne Wharf. Source unknown. (Col)
Joseph Kennedy's Pilot's Exemption Certificate. Courtesy of Sharman Orr.
Joseph Bond Kennedy. By the American Photo Company circa 1888. Source unknown. (Col)
Joseph Bond Kennedy at wedding. Source unknown.
Harriet Bond Kennedy. Circa 1888. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog. (Col)
Whare-runanga on Kati slopes. N.Z. Railway Magazine Vol 11, Issue 1. April 1936.
Ngāhiraka Kennedy's headstone. Courtesy of Patsy Orr. (Col)
Ngāhiraka's grave. Barry Kennedy Smith recites a Karakia (prayer). Courtesy of the Smith family.(Col)
Ngāhiraka Kennedy's Will. Courtesy of Paul and Jan Smith.
Ngāhiraka Waitangi Kennedy. Exquisite portrait by Warwick Tilley, 2014. Commissioned by Dion Tilley.

Chapter 15

NGĀHIRAKA & JOSEPH KENNEDY'S CHILDREN

Kate Kennedy with her father Joseph Bond Kennedy. Courtesy of Jon Tilley (Col)
The Choveaux family crest: GARDEZ BIEN - Guard Well. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Henry Matthew Choveaux. Courtesy of Sue Brownlie. (Col)
(Enid) Betty, Nigel and (Edna) Kitty Choveaux. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. Col
Three daughters of May Bond Kennedy and Henry Choveaux. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. (Col)
(Iris) Chookie, (Edna) Kit, (Enid) Betty, and Nigel Choveaux. Courtesy of Sue Brownlie. (Col)
Nigel Choveaux at Kaiti circa 1915. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. (Col)
Jon Tilley with his mother (Enid) Betty. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. (Col)
Marriage Certificate. (Iris) Chookie Choveaux and Harold Littler. Courtesy of Sue Brownlie. (Col)
May Bond (Kennedy) Choveaux. Courtesy of Sue Brownlie. (Col)
Edna Kitty and Enid Betty Choveaux. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Henry and May Choveaux centre and Irene Smith. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
London Music shop, Gladstone Road, Gisborne. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Gramophone record - H.M. Choveaux, London Music Shop label. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Nancy Choveaux 1931. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Wedding of Nigel and Nancy Choveaux. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Jon, (Enid) Betty (nee Choveaux) Tilley, Nigel and Helen Choveaux. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Henry Matthew and May Bond Choveaux. Taraheru Cemetary, Gisborne. Courtesy of Sue Brownlie. (Col)
Ngāhiraka Kennedy. Copied from a photo locket. Courtesy of Betty Schroder. (Col)
Jon and Corinne Aline Tilley (nee Payne) married Ōpōtiki. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
Mark Tilley Choveaux. Courtesy of Joanne Jennings. (Col)
A production in the Ōpōtiki theatre in 1915. Courtesy of Dion Tilley. (Col)
Corrine Tilley's (nee Payne) extended family. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
The Payne Homestead 7 St. John Street Ōpōtiki. Courtesy of Dion Tilley 2015. (Col)
Gramophone record - H.M. Choveaux, London Music Shop label. Courtesy of Jon Tilley. (Col)
King Charles I and Queen Henrietta Maria. Circa 1632. By Anthony van Dyke. Public Domain.
Annie Fry Wood (nee Smith) and Eleanor Dorothy 1892. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
(Eleanor) Dorothy (nee Wood) Du Pontet. Ōpōtiki The Women's Stories, by Kath Connor. Pg 24. (Col)
Jon Warwick Tilley receiving Bronze Medal Bravery Award, 23 June 1985. Courtesy of the Dion Tilley. (Col)
Jon Tilley's Queen Victoria Service medal To Humanity. Courtesy of the Dion Tilley. (Col)
Jon Tilley's St. Johns 25 Years Service medal. Courtesy of the Dion Tilley. (Col)
Jon Tilley's St. Johns, medal. Courtesy of the Dion Tilley. (Col)
Choveaux and Tilley Family Tree. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
Hannah Bond (Kennedy) Williams. Courtesy of Mike Barrington.
Charles Gwen and John Williams - children of Joseph Charles Williams. Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.
{Elizabeth} Betty Williams dancing. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Beautiful (Elizabeth) Betty Williams going to tennis. January 1932. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Elizabeth, Alfred and Hannah Williams. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Nurse Eliza (seated) Barrington. Courtesy of the Barrington family.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Ruth Brown and her mother Elza (Kilpatrick m Brown) Barrington. Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.
Marriage Certificate Colin Greig Brown and Elza Barrington. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Barry Barrington's Apprenticeship Contract. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Eliza (Kilpatrick m. Brown) Barrington circa 1929. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Elizabeth (Betty) Williams January 1952. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Betty Williams and golfing party at Gisborne 1939. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
(Elizabeth) Betty Williams 1939 at the beach. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Barry Barrington, summer 1939. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Ruth Brown, Judith, Betty and Barry 1940. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Barry Barrington at work bench Cook Islands. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Barry's Haven. Cook Islands. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
First plane to land in Aitutaki, Cook Islands. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Airfield Construction team. Aitutaki, Cook Islands. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Aitutaki Steam Rollers runway construction. Aitutaki, Cook Islands. <http://www.aitutakiww2.com/amuri-field>
First plane landing at new runway. <http://www.aitutakiww2.com/amuri-field>
H.S. Motors Ltd. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Judy and Michael Barrington Pipipaua. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Judy 8 Michael 4. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Aunt Kate Wells with Judith and Betty Barrington (right), 1942. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Ministry of Works Camp in winter, Kaitawa. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
(Greig) Barry Barrington with his children. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Portrait of Ngāhiraka drawn by Samantha Barrington 2019. Courtesy of Samantha Barrington.
Barry Barrington off to the races. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Elizabeth (Betty) Barrington in San Francisco. 1966. Courtesy of the Barrington family. (Col)
Alfred Herbert Williams circa 1937. Courtesy of the Barrington family.
Ilford Manor. Wiltshire Manor. Rowley Manor. Westwood Manor. Wikipedia.
Hinton Charter House Somerset. Wikipedia.
St Georges Church, Beckington, Somerset. Wikipedia.
Mrs. Francis Hales. By Thomas Worlidge 1700-1766. Victoria Art Gallery.
Francis Hales Mayor of Bath. By Thomas Worlidge 1700-1766. Victoria Art Gallery.
5 Brunswick Square Brighton. Google Maps.
Parsonage at Horningsham. By John Sergeant. In Storage at the Victorian and Albert Museum.
All Saints Church Lullington, Somerset. Wikipedia.
Rood Ashton Manor. Wikipedia
St Mary's Church Hemmington. North aspect. By Robin Downes
Moses Pickwick Clock. dickensmuseum.com
John Bunyan Replica Chair. Modes.org.uk
Countess of Huntington's private chapel. By Rodger Bannister.
The Rummer Tavern. By awashwithale.co.uk
Example of a Rummer (glass.) unknown.

Chapter 16

IRISH ANCESTORS BEGORRAH– SMITH

Counties of Ireland Map. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
Alexander Smith's Discharge papers. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
Assisted Emigration Canterbury, New Zealand Registration. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
The Protestant Parish Church of Knocknamuckley. Courtesy of Derek Porter.
Otago Daily Times 21st January 1864. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
'Chelsea Pensioners Sons Of The Brave. Courtesy of Bob Stevenson. (Col)
Alexander Smith Land allocation. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
Alexander Smith's Chelsea Pensioner Certificate. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Alexander Smith. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
The 4th Waikato Militia Hamilton. Courtesy of Lyn Stevenson.
4th Waikato Militia Hamilton. Queen Victoria's Jubilee 1887. Courtesy of the Hamilton Library.
Alexander Smith's Watch. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
(Caroline) Mary Jane Smith. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Headstone of Mary Jane Smith. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Family at graveside of Mary Jane Smith. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Hamilton Pioneers 1904. From Waikato Times 27th Feb, 1976. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
William and Carolyn Hayes homestead and stables. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
The marriage of Amy Hayes to Harold Stone 25.8.1909. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
William and Caroline Jane (Smith) Hayes family, circa 1911. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Letitia (Lovie Smith) Good. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Annie (Smith) Taylor. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Annie (Smith) Taylors letter. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Alexander Smith's Death Certificate. Courtesy of Allan Prestidge.
Alexander Smith's grave. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.

Chapter 17

GEORGE AND HARRIET (KENNEDY) SMITH

The Smith brothers. Circa 1895. Courtesy Hazel McDonald. (Col)
George Smith's Hairdressers shop. Courtesy Tairawhiti Museum Gisborne. (Col)
The Smith brothers, outside the shop. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald. (Col)
George and Harriet Smith's wedding in 1896. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald. (Col)
Harriet and George Smith. Circa 1896. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald. (Col)
George and Harriet Smith's house. Peel Street, Gisborne. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald. (Col)
Harriet (Kennedy) Smith. Courtesy Of Mark Alexander Phillips.
Percy Bond Smith, Alexander Teece Smith and Stanley Reid Bond Smith. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog
Marriage Certificate of Stanley Reid Bond Smith.to Evelyn May Picket. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.
SS. Waimana at Dunedin 1922. Otago Harbour Board collection, S04-167a
20 Chatterton Road, Finsbury Park Islington, Middlesex London. Google earth.
Percy Bond Smith, Alexander Teece Smith and Stanley Reid Bond Smith. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.
Alexander Teece Smith. Courtesy of Carmarita Hartog.
Mt. Albert Methodist Church. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
Colleen and Stanley dancing. Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.
Bryce and Gayleen Guy's wedding cake. Courtesy of Gaylene Guy.
Ivy and Stanley's Four children. Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.
Larry, Brian, Colleen, Ivy and Lorraine Smith. Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.
Ivy and Stanley Smith's four children. Courtesy of Lorraine Guy.
Ivy, Colleen and Stanley Smith. Courtesy of Gayleen Guy.
Alexander Teece Smith and his wife Rita (Parkinson). Courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips. (Col)
Percy Smith and Jean Skeates? Courtesy of the Smith family.
Moana Smith. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Thora May Smith and Alex Sutton and family. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Tikitapu or Blue Lake. 24th August 1915. Marsh Photographers. Courtesy of Hazel McDonald.
Trevor plays tennis. Courtesy of the Smith family
The Kaikohe Hotel Building Site. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Builders on the Kaikohe Hotel. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
June Peapell with Trevor Smith. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
June Peapell. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Trevor Smith and June Peapell 9th June 1937. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Mr and Mrs Trevor Smith. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.

Chapter 18

TREVOR SMITH AND JUNE PEAPELL

Raupo whare. Source unknown.
Thomas Peapell married Sarah Ann Bourne circa 1890. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Rose Berryman. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Fred Peapell. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
George & Geanie (Gargie) Berryman and family. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Geanie Berryman with her children. 1913. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
George Berryman fencing. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Geanie Berryman. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Rose (Berryman) Peapell. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Rose (Berryman) Peapell with baby (Violet) June. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Fred Peapell - France, World War 1. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Baby (Violet) June Peapell was Christened 12 December 1920. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Violet June Peapell's Christening Certificate. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Waipukarau Sanatorium. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Fred's hut. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Run rabbit run. Source unknown.
Wheel barrow ride. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Hunting Bunnies. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
June Peapell with duckling. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
One Little Indian girl - June. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Jim and Clive Peapell. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Jim Peapell (left) lost at boxing that day. Clive right. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Milking the cow. Source unknown.
Certificate of Proficiency. Courtesy of the Smith family.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

June Peapell at Takanini School 1935. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Trevor, Clive and young Jimmy. Courtesy of Clive Peapell.
Trevor's borrowed car. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Trevor once owned a Baby Austin. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
June and baby daughter Leone. Circa 1939. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Leone, baby Dallas and Chris Smith. Circa 1944. Courtesy of the Leone Metcalfe.
Trevor, June and extended families. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Paul Smith. Aged two. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Jim with Mum (Rose) wearing Clive's uniform. Courtesy of Jim Peapell.
Leone Smith, aged 2, with Rose Peapell. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Leone - flower girl at Daphne & Clive Peapell's wedding. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Stamped envelope. Courtesy of the Leone Metcalfe.
Rose's letters. Courtesy of the Leone Metcalfe.
Rose Peapell's doodle. Courtesy of the Leone Metcalfe.
Jam for sale. Source unknown.
Worm on a hook. Source unknown.
Rose Elizabeth (Berryman) Peapell 1897 – 1955. Courtesy of the Peapell and Smith families.
Trevor and June Smith's family home. Courtesy of the Smith family.
New Zealand Waterside Works Lock Out certificate. Courtesy of the Smith family.
June and Trevor Smith dancing. Courtesy of the Smith family.
June and Trevor Smith. Courtesy of the Smith family.
Trevor Smith. Courtesy of the Smith family.
June's prayer from her Bible. Courtesy of the Smith family.

Chapter 19

METCALFE'S FROM YORKSHIRE

METCALFE - GIBSON - RICH - TURNER

Great Britain Coat Of Arms During The Reign Of Queen Victoria. Wikipedia Commons.
Map of the Counties of England. Wikipedia.
All Saints, Church East Riding, Yorkshire. Photographer Bernard Betts 2017.
Church of St Mary's - Bolton on Swale. Photo by Edward Nicholl.
The High Flyer 1812. By J. Emery.
A Blacksmith's workshop. <http://www.lisahydephotography.com/Architecture/Old-Structures-1/i-vmNBdKK/>
Owners and Licensees of Blacksmiths Arms, Black Horse Lane. Courtesy of Geoff Morgan.
Blacksmith Arms Inn, 2 Black Horse Lane, Northallerton, Yorkshire. Courtesy of Geoff & Catherine Morgan.
The original bread oven. Courtesy of Geoff and Catherine Morgan.
The original oak beams of the old inn. Courtesy of Geoff and Catherine Morgan.
St. Wilfred's Anglican Church, Northallerton. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Sheffield Cathedral. Courtesy of Ann Halford.
John Metcalfe circa 1860. Courtesy of Chris Metcalfe.
Ann Turner 1860. Courtesy of Natalie Metcalfe.
Walter aged 13 (born blind) Edgar aged three and Arthur aged 10. Courtesy of John Metcalfe.
S.S. Cuzco. C.F. Gould. Postcard photographer.
Edgar Metcalfe Ponsonby in the Brass Band. Circa 1910. Photographer: Archer Price.
Florence Lilian (Oram) Metcalfe. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Edgar Metcalfe enlarged from Ponsonby Brass Band photo. Alexander Turnbull Library. Ref: 1/2-00183-G
6 Anglesea Street, Ponsonby, Auckland, New Zealand. Google Maps.
All Saints Church Ponsonby. <http://www.allsaintsponsonby.org.nz/>
Walter Metcalfe and daughter Nell. 1949. Courtesy of Metcalfe family.
Edgar Metcalfe's older brother, Walter and his wife. 1949. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Keren Oram with precious surviving granddaughter, Joyce Metcalfe.
John Nelson Metcalfe. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Christmas card 1927. Church Cradle Roll. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
John Metcalfe and sister Joyce. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Aunt Alice (Oram) Earl with and John and Leone's dog, Hans of Copperfield. Courtesy of John Metcalfe.
John and Leone's Metcalfe's wedding. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Leone and John Metcalfe. 14th September 2001.
John Metcalfe Rororua Marathon. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Leone and John Metcalfe 2016. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.

Chapter 20

ORAMS FROM WILTSHIRE - RICH and BEAVERSTOCK

Keren Oram photographs. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
The Oram family. Circa 1911. Courtesy of John Metcalfe.
Keren (Rich) Oram. Circa 1913. Courtesy of Chris Metcalfe.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS ILLUSTRATIONS

Diocese of Salisbury School attendance medal. Courtesy of Chris Metcalfe.
Portable Antiquities Scheme (PAS) in Wiltshire. <http://bournemouth.academia.edu/RichardHenry>
Washing was hard work in those days. WordPress.com
Innox Mills Trowbridge. Courtesy of Innox Mills Ltd.
Keren (Rich) Oram. Courtesy of Chris Metcalfe.
Oram sisters and families enjoying a picnic. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Florence (Oram) and Edgar Metcalfe's surviving children. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Aunt Alice (nee Oram) with Hans of Copperfield. Courtesy of John Metcalfe.
Florence Lilian (Oram) Metcalfe Death notice. Courtesy of the Metcalfe family.
Lance Corporal Nelson Oram, Reg No 43534, of the New Zealand Field Artillery. (Photographer: Herman Schmidt, 1917). Sir George Grey Special Collections, Auckland Libraries, 31-O2919.
HMNZT 84 - The Klink. Auckland War Memorial Museum.

...

Chapter 21

Joseph Bond Kennedy's 2nd wife ALICE MARY PALMER
Joseph Bond Kennedy and Alice Mary Palmer 1892. Courtesy of the Orr family.
A pair of beautiful vases belonged to Alice Kennedy. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Plan of Title of Transfer 1906 -Thomas Baird to Joseph Kennedy. Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.
Kennedy's restored home at 252 Ormond Road, Mangapapa, Gisborne. Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth 2020.
The ceiling in the lounge, Ormond Road, Mangapapa, Gisborne. Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth 2020.
Fireplaces in 252 Ormond Road. Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.
Joseph Bond Kennedy Jr. Courtesy of Jean Reeves.
Eva Bond Kennedy as a beautiful young woman. Photo Courtesy of the Orr family.
Grace Kennedy. Courtesy of the Orr family.
Alice Mary Kennedy. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Example of an Argyll car. Wikipedia.
Photograph of the home, showing the original chimneys. Courtesy of Kevin Learmonth.
Glenmore, Captain Joseph and Alice Kennedy's home. From 'Old Mt. Albert,' by Dick Scott.
Purewa Cemetery, Auckland. Block E, Row 48, Plot 94 & 95. Courtesy of Chris and Tami Metcalfe.
Bruce, Grace, grandmother Alice, and Donny (Donald). Courtesy of Rosemary Orr.
Bruce, Grace & Donny (Donald). Courtesy Buster Hastie.
Ella (nee Robinson) Kennedy. 1962. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Grace, Donald, John and Bruce, Josephine and Jean. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Grace, Josephine and Jean. Courtesy of Jo Claude
Ella (nee Robinson) Kennedy, Sheree Claude, Karen Claude and Donna Claude. 1962. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Lieutenant Bruce Bond Kennedy. Courtesy of Jo Claude.
Bruce Bond Kennedy. Courtesy of Rosemary Orr.
Walking stick carved by William (Buster) Hastie.
The four daughters of Joseph and Alice Kennedy and their husbands. Circa 1949. Courtesy of the Orr family.
Maori figures carved by Buster Hastie. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
Wakahuia. Carved by W. Hastie. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
Taiaha, carved from Manuka, by W. Hastie. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
William David Hastie. Father of (William) Buster Hastie. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.
Marguerite Ruby (Dot) McKenzie. Aged 15 years. Courtesy of Bob Kemp.

BIBLIOGRAPHY

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS BIBLIOGRAPHY

BIBLIOGRAPHY.

- * Tuwharwetoa. By Sir John Te Herekikie Grace.
- * Moko. By Michael King.
- * The Colonial N.Z. Wars. By Tim Ryan & Bill Parham.
- * Polynesian Explorers. By Kathryn Rountree.
- * Astronomical Knowledge of the Maori. By Elsdon Best.
- * Tai Tokerau. By Florence Keene.
- * Maori Myths and Legends. By Margaret Orbell.
- * Fishing For Islands. By John Nicholson.
- * Campers Discover Coromandel. By Eugene Grayland & A.W. Reed.
- * Vikings of the Sunrise. By Sir Peter Buck.
- * Pakiwaitara. By Don Stafford.
- * Painted Histories. By Roger Neich.
- * Carved Histories. By Roger Neich.
- * H.M.S. Buffalo. By Robert Thomas Sexton.
- * Ōpōtiki; The Women's Stories. By Kath Connor.
- * Maori Paintings. By Gottfried Lindauer.
- * Te Whare Runanga. By D.R.Simmons.
- * Picture Book Of Old Waikato. By Paul & Gabriella Day.
- * Domesday Book. Then & Now. By Thomas Hinde.
- * The Story Of New Zealand: Past And Present Savage and Civilized by Arthur Saunders Thomson 2volumes.
- * Wright-St Clair, R. E. 'Arthur S. Thomson, army medical officer, statistician and epidemiologist New Zealand Health Review 4, No 2 (1984): 17--18. Wright-St Clair, R. E. 'Surgeon Thomson of the 58th Foot'. New Zealand Medical Journal 84 (1976): 153--156.
- * Thomson Arthur Sunders - Online review Michael Belgrave.
- * Thomson descendants information by Stue Wylds.
- * The Incoming Tide. 1951 Waterfront Dispute. By Sir W. Sullivan.
- * Info about St. Stephen's Church, Ōpōtiki, courtesy of St Johns Kinder Library.
- * Maori Land Records and documents collated by Carmarita Hartog.
- * Maori information, memories of Harriet Kennedy by Olive Hartog.
- * Information regarding the Smith family collated Hazel McDonald.
- * Smith family information by Lynn Stevenson.
- * Son's Of The Brave. Lithograph by Robert Stevenson.
- * Irish Bread Song. By Wendy Webster.
- * Berryman and Peapell family. By Clive, Daphne & Jim Peapell.
- * Joseph Bond Kennedy's photograph. Encyclopaedia of New Zealand.
- * Peapell. By Hec Peapell.
- * Ngahiraka's photo from locket from Betty Schroder.
- * Harriet Kennedy's photo from Olive & Camarita Hartog.
- * Kinder Library St Stephen's Church Ōpōtiki.
- * Ngahiraka and Joseph Kennedy photos - Courtesy Tairawhiti Museum Gisborne.
- * In Old Mt Albert – By Dick Scott.
- * Mt Roskill – By Jade Reidy.
- * Compensation MLC Minutes - Opotki Sitting 7 March – 8 April 1867. C. Hartog.
- * Mr Chegwyn's Observations on H.M.Store Ship Buffalo.
- * New Zealand Banker's Hundred. Courtesy of Bank of New Zealand Archives.
- * A History of the Bank of New Zealand 1861 - 1961 by N M Chappell. Courtesy of Bank of New Zealand Archives.
- * New Zealand. By Alexander Kennedy 1873. Bought for this project by Colin Wilson.
- * H.M.S. Tortoise by Leonie Leete Smith.
- * Southern Cross Newspaper. A.C.L.
- * New Zealand Encyclopedia.
- * Alistair Isdale's, Random History.
- * Notes from Dieffenbach.
- * Kennedy's Bay - Lynda Hale.
- * New Zealand History on line.
- * Carol Storey - Mokomoko.
- * Letter To Harriet, by Dr Ranganui Walker.
- * May (Kennedy) Choveaux's family records from Sue Brownlie.
- * Extracts Thomas Laslett's Journal. From Ben Grubb. Courtesy of Coromandel Life Winter Issue, 2015.
- * Mere Kaimanu . Courtesy of nominister.blogspot.com/2008/11 and Dianne Bogus (Hally).
- * The Journal of Ensign Best"1837-1848 edited by Nancy M Taylor. 1966. ATL.
- * Notes On Early Settlers,' by J. A. Mackay

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS BIBLIOGRAPHY

- * Ōpōtiki history information - Ōpōtiki Museum.
- * Three Kings Wesleyan Native Institute. The Wesley Historical Society.
- * Family letters, photos - John & Leone Metcalfe, Dallas & Clive Hargreaves, Paul & Jan Smith and Chris and Tami Metcalfe.
- * Colin Wilson – information about Nathan Kennedy and descendants.
- * Josephine Claude - information about Joseph Bond Kennedy (Jr.) and family.
- * Grandma Eva's memories and photos - Sharman and Patsy Orr.
- * Hannah Williams family and Opape land information. Courtesy of Mike Barrington.
- * H.M.S. Buffalo Log 51/3066 Volume 1933 - transcribed by Jill Kemp. Courtesy of Mercury Bay Museum.
- * Maori carvings and family photos - courtesy of Buster Hastie.
- * Photographs and family history - courtesy of Chris and Tami Metcalfe.
- * The New Zealand Encyclopaedia 4th Edition - Batemen.
- * Kennedy's Bay by E. Schwimmer.
- * Niupepa Maori Newspaper 1862. Vol. No2. 18620101 page 20. Chief Pāora Te Putu.
- * Fabrications Of Traditional Maori Exposed. By John Aramete Wairehu Steedman.
- * Homiora Pio. By Best.
- * Ahuahu. Great Mercury Island. By Pat Mizen.
- * The Great New Zealand Myth. By D.R. Simmons.
- * Thomas Cheeseman Logs and Journal Archives references [fMS-041-045] Alexander Turnbull Library.
- * Thomas Laslett Journals [archives reference:MS-group-1408] Alexander Turnbull Library.
- * Logs of H.M.S. Buffalo 1833-1840 (Admin 51/3066). 1840 – 41. Transcribed by Jill Kemp.
- * Medical Journal of convict ship Buffalo 1833 permission courtesy of The National Archives of U.K.
- * Wade Doak - Thwaites and Ngunguru information.
- * History and photographs of Kennedy's Bay - courtesy of George Hovell
- * A tour of the Kennedy's Bay Property and insights into Nathan Kennedy by Rev. Rollo John Richard Hovell.
- * From Tasman To Marsden. By Robert Mc Nab 1642 - 1818.
- * Harriet Smith (elderly) and coloured photos of Ngahiraka and Joseph - courtesy of Mark Alexander Phillips.
- * The Oxford Companion To Ships And The Sea. By Peter Kemp.
- * Ngahiraka's grave restoration - courtesy of Barry Kennedy Smith, Susan Smith and Debra Smith.
- * Whakatohea, Opape and Waiau history - Tuiringa Mokomoko.
- * Sims Commission of Inquiry for Whakatohea Confiscated lands 1920 -Courtesy of Tuiringa Mokomoko.
- * Wiremu Maihi te Rangikaheke -Excerpts from online Dictionary Of New Zealand Biography.
- * A review of Arthur Thomson's two volumes, by Michael Belgrave.
- * Dr Thomson and Ngahiraka's descendants family records - courtesy of Stue Wylds.
- * Dr Arthur Saunders Thomson's Letters to Donald McLean - courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library.
- * Dr Thomson's Will - courtesy of Verity Baylis.
- * Dr John Harkness Macaffer - courtesy of Verity Baylis.
- * Kateruri/Katerina Takoto - Gundry - Matchitt Courtesy of Silvana Wirepa.
- * Kateruru Gundry- Matchitt - courtesy of Kath (Warren) Riri, Ōpōtiki.
- * Dover Castle, the English Heritage guidebook by Jonathan Coad.
- * Choveaux family history - courtesy of Dion Tilley.
- * Wood family ancestry - courtesy of Verity Baylis.
- * M.L.C. Records. Coromandel - courtesy of Colin Wilson.
- * Logs H.M.S. Tortoise and HMS Buffalo research - courtesy of Don Armitage.
- * Rev. Christopher Pearson Davies of Ōpōtiki - Paperspast: Waipapu Church Gazette P 16. 1 Mahura 1926.
- * Thomson's article about Moa Caves. From The Edinburgh Philosophical Journal for April 1854. Edinburgh.
- * Three Bees Schooner estimated measurements - courtesy Don Armitage and Ian Church.
- * Macaffer, Balneavis, Bree, Simson families - Paperspast Southland
- * The H.M.S. Rattlesnake - by Jordan Goodman
- * Map of Dr Thomson's property, Stokes Point - Courtesy of Auckland Public Library.
- * Philippe Claude de Montboissier-Beaufort-Canillac. LONDON, PAST AND PRESENT, By Henry Wheatly.
- * Flagstaff Burial Ground burial registrations Courtesy Anglican Church Office Archives, Parnell.
- * Monteboissier Castle — Wikipedia.
- * Extract from the 'Whaling Journal of Capt. W J Rhodes 1836-1837'.
- * Suwarro Gold. By James Cowan. Pages 173– 174. Whakatane Museum Library.
- * Montboissier history www.ghcaraibe.org/bul/ghc226/p5925.rtf
- * Reed's Slaves - By J.C. Paperspast Auckland Star May 14 1927
- * The Old Whaling Days - By Robert McNab.
- * Whaling Days In early New Zealand - by Anthony G. Flude
- * The Reed and Montboissier family histories. Courtesy of Lyn Chappell.
- * Letter by Spencer Von Sturmer to Stephenson Percy Smith. A.M.L. MS281 S.PERCY SMITH, Folder 11
- * Captain Dacre, Ranulph biography. <http://www.teara.govt.nz/en/biographies>
- * Try pot from Caroline Bay Otago. <http://www.rootsweb.ancestry.com/~nzlscant/queries.htm>
- * Te Awaiti Whaling station. By William Fox. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. B-113-015
- * Blood Brothers by Jeff Hopkins-Weise page 317.

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS BIBLIOGRAPHY

- *The Frigate Triton. By Nicholas Pocock in 1879, National Museum London.
- *Te Awaiti Whaling station. By William Fox. Courtesy of Alexander Turnbull Library. B-113-015
- * The 'Hardy Tree,' in the old St Pancras Churchyard. From St Pancreas. Old Church. Wikipedia.
- * Images of Te Rauparaha and Te Rangihaeata from New Zealand Electronic Text Centre.
- * Review of Black Musketeers in the plain of Sablons. By Robert Paul Ponce Antoine. Wikipedia.
- *A Centennial History of Tauranga. By W.H. Gifford & H.B. Williams
- *Ōpōtiki Town Centre Historic Heritage Study Part One. By Matthews & Matthews Architects Ltd.
- * East Indiaman -http://www.gac.culture.gov.uk/search/Object.asp?object_key=12632
- * Maori Race In New Zealand, by Augustus Hamilton. 1896. Cornell University Library.
- *Whanganui Historical Notes, by Percy Smith
- *Gleanings from Early New Zealand History, by J. P. Kalauger, 1950 p.69.
- * Patuone. www.patuone.com and Dr Benjamin Pittman.
- *Te Nupepa O Te Tairāwhiti. Friday July 6 2007.
- *Taumata-a-Kura, Piripi Ngati Porou evangelist - Te Ara. By Apirana T. Mahuika and Steven Olive.
- *Pita - Missionary Register. Vol. 8. 1829.
- *Gundry Samuel. Family Register (unpublished mss 1849)
- *Maori Deeds of Old Private Land Purchases in N.Z. 1815-1840 Pre-emptive And Other Claims Otarihu Block, River Mangamuku, Hokianga District.
- * New Zealand Gazette, 1875 p.85. Part-IV-Pioneer-Land-Surveyors-of-New-Zealand
- * Northcote History Courtesy of Northshore City Council.
- *Thematic Review Report Northshore City Council
- * Thomas Wing. <http://www.teara.govt.nz/en/biographies/1w33/1>
- *Fanny Wing -Wikipedia
- *Reminiscences of an Old Settler in Australia and New Zealand by John Webster J.P.
- * From Wiltshire To The Waitamata by Linda Cox and Silvana WiRepa
- * Makareta (Margaret) Rautangi Family Search records www.familysearch.org
- * Rawene - <http://www.teara.govt.nz/en/northland-places/>
- * Letter from Pero, Makareta Rautangi's brother, was published in the Cornwall Chronicle.
- *Wing Of The Manukau, Capt. Thomas Wing; His Life and Harbour, 1810-1888. T. B. Byrne.
- *The Great Western Weymouth: Railway & shipping history. By J.H. Lucking. Chesterfield Packet.
- *Early postal service to the Channel Islands By John Alexander. www.theislandwiki.com
- * Early Brethren Fellowship Hamilton. Courtesy of Allan Prestidge.
- *Auckland Journals Of Vicesimus edited by Alison Drummond
- *4th Waikato Militia Courtesy of Hamilton Library.
- *The Royal Inniskilling Fusiliers– history of the Regiment 1688– 1914 -Naval & Military Press
- *Whakatohea Of Ōpōtiki by A.C. Lyall
- *The Mataatua Question by A. C. Lyall
- *Ngāti Kahu <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ng%C4%81ti>
- *Edward Bond Kennedy and Captain Joseph Kennedy research courtesy of Nelda Elder.
- *Ngai-riki tribe the principal indigenous tribe in the Mangatu area of Te Tairāwhiti/Gisborne District of Aotearoa New Zealand. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ng%C4%81riki_Kaiputahi
- *Heteraka Biddle, Whakatohea. Matarena's children and oral history.
- *The New Zealand Wars and pioneering period, by James Cowan Volume 11, page 347
- * Ōpōtiki History. <http://www.opotikin.z.com/visit-opotiki/what-do/historic-heart/opotiki-history>
- * An Illustrated Encyclopaedia of Maori Life by A.W. Reed.
- *Wesleyan Church School Paperspast. Auckland Star Volume LXX Issue 88 15 April 1939. Page 8.
- * Barrington family - Chris and Maree Barrington.
- *Notes On Early Settlers, by J. A. Mackay
- *Kennedy's Bay Notes by Alistair M Isadale
- *Article about Kateruri freeing prisoners brought to my attention, courtesy of Chippy Apanui.
- *Carl Volkner. Adapted by Steve Watters from the DNZB biography by Evelyn Stoke.
- *Maori A Photographic Social History by Michael King
- *Tatiu Tahu, tohunga o Ngai Te Rangi. Gate Pa Exhibition 2014- 12015 Courtesy James Muir.
- * Ashton Court. http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ashton_Court
- * Martha Emma Volkner - Woman Of Ōpōtiki by Kath Connor page 71.
- * Papers Past courtesy of the National Library of New Zealand
- *The Martyr's Crown: Being the life of Carl S. Volkner by Alison Tagg
- *The Diary of Mr. S.A. Levy Papers Past
- *Tiwai, from Opotiki-Mai-Tawhiti: Capital of Whakatohea by Ranganui Walker

SOUTH TO THE LEFT OF VENUS BIBLIOGRAPHY

- * Adapted by Steve Watters from the DNZB biography by Evelyn Stoke.
- * Volkner <http://www.nzhistory.net.nz/people/carl-volkner>:
- * A Pioneer Missionary Amongst The Maoris. By Rev. Samuel Grace. Pages 136 & 142.
- * Blood Brothers. By Jeff Hopkins.
- * Ranapia. Gudgeon: op. cit., Ch. VIII, p. 45
- * Litchfield family. By Darrin Lythgoe and <http://freepages.genealogy.rootsweb.com/~lymbery/>
- * The Great Western At Weymouth - A Railway And Shipping History, by J.H. Lucking,
- * Ōpōtiki One Hundred Years 1877-1977. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
- * Historical Review. Whakatane and District Historical Society. Courtesy of Dion Tilley.
- * Making Waves. By Felicity Campbell.
- * Story of New Zealand's French Pass and d'Urville Island. By Olive Baldwin.
- * Auckland War Memorial Museum.
- * Ancestry